CrossMark

Stable Shock Formation for Nearly Simple Outgoing Plane Symmetric Waves

Jared Speck[1] · **Gustav Holzegel**[2] ·
Jonathan Luk[3] · **Willie Wong**[4,5]

Abstract In an influential 1964 article, P. Lax studied 2×2 genuinely nonlinear strictly hyperbolic PDE systems (in one spatial dimension). Using the method of Riemann invariants, he showed that a large set of smooth initial data lead to bounded solutions whose first spatial derivatives blow up in finite time, a phenomenon known as wave breaking. In the present article, we study the Cauchy problem for two classes of quasilinear wave equations in two spatial dimensions that are closely related to the systems studied by Lax. When the data have one-dimensional symmetry, Lax's methods can be applied to the wave equations to show that a large set of smooth initial data lead to wave breaking. Here we study solutions with initial data that are close, as measured by an appropriate Sobolev norm, to data belonging to a distinguished subset of Lax's data: the data corresponding to simple plane waves. Our main result is that under suitable relative smallness assumptions, the Lax-type wave breaking for simple plane waves is stable. The key point is that we allow the data perturbations to break the

✉ Jared Speck
jspeck@math.mit.edu

Gustav Holzegel
g.holzegel@imperial.ac.uk

Jonathan Luk
jluk@dpmms.cam.ac.uk

Willie Wong
wongwwy@member.ams.org

[1] Massachusetts Institute of Technology, Cambridge, MA, USA

[2] Imperial College, London, UK

[3] Cambridge University, Cambridge, UK

[4] École Polytechnique Fédérale de Lausanne, Lausanne, CH, Switzerland

[5] Present Address: Michigan State University, East Lansing, MI, USA

⌂ Springer

symmetry. Moreover, we give a detailed, constructive description of the asymptotic behavior of the solution all the way up to the first singularity, which is a shock driven by the intersection of null (characteristic) hyperplanes. We also outline how to extend our results to the compressible irrotational Euler equations. To derive our results, we use Christodoulou's framework for studying shock formation to treat a new solution regime in which wave dispersion is not present.

Keywords Characteristics · Eikonal equation · Eikonal function · Genuinely nonlinear strictly hyperbolic systems · Null hypersurface · Singularity formation · Vectorfield method · Wave breaking

Mathematics Subject Classification Primary: 35L67 · Secondary: 35L05, 35L10, 35L72, 35Q31, 76N10

Contents

1 Introduction

In his influential article [42], Lax showed that 2×2 genuinely nonlinear strictly hyperbolic PDE systems[1] exhibit finite-time blowup for a large set of smooth initial data. His approach was based on the method of Riemann invariants, which was developed by Riemann himself in his study [54] of singularity formation in compressible fluid mechanics in one spatial dimension. The blowup is of wave breaking type, that is, the solution remains bounded but its first derivatives blow up. Lax's results are by now considered classic and have been extended in many directions (see the references in Subsect. 1.5). In particular, an easy modification of his approach could be used to prove finite-time blowup for solutions to various quasilinear wave equations in one spatial dimension: under suitable assumptions on the nonlinearities, one could prove blowup by first writing the wave equation as a first-order system in the two characteristic derivatives of the solution and then applying Lax's methods. In the present article, we study the Cauchy problem for two classes of such wave equations in two spatial dimensions, specifically equations (1.1a) and (1.3a) below. These equations admit plane symmetric, simple wave solutions that blow up in finite time (see Subsect. 1.3

---

[1] Such systems involve two unknowns in one time and one spatial dimension.

for a quick proof). Lax's methods can be used to show that such solutions and their blowup are stable under small perturbations that preserve the one-dimensional plane symmetry. Our main result is that, under a suitable hierarchy of smallness-largeness assumptions, these blowup-solutions are also stable under data perturbations that *break the symmetry*. To close our proof, we must derive a sharp description of the blowup that, even for data with one-dimensional symmetry, provides more information than does Lax's approach. In Subsect. 1.2, we explain the set of data covered by our main results in more detail. See Subsect. 1.1 for a summary of the results and Theorem 15.1 for the full statement.

For some evolution equations in *more* than one spatial dimension that enjoy special algebraic structure, short proofs of blowup by contradiction are known; see Subsect. 1.5 for some examples. In contrast, the typical wave equation that we study does not have any obvious features which suggest a short path to proving blowup. In particular, the equations do not generally derive from a Lagrangian, admit coercive conserved quantities, or have signed nonlinearities. They do, however, enjoy a key property: they have *special null structures* (which are distinct from the well-known *null condition* of S. Klainerman). These null structures manifest in several ways, including the absence of certain terms in the equations (as we explain in more detail in the discussion surrounding equation (1.10)) as well as the preservation of certain good product structures under suitable commutations and differentiations of the equations (as we explain in Subsubsect. 1.5.4). The null structures are *not visible relative to the standard coordinates*. Thus, to expose them, we construct a dynamic "geometric coordinate system" and a corresponding vectorfield frame[2] that are adapted to the characteristics corresponding to the nonlinear flow; see Subsect. 1.2 for an overview. We are then able to exploit the null structures to give a detailed, constructive description of the singularity, which is a shock[3] in the regime under study. A key feature of the proof is that *the solution remains regular relative to the geometric coordinates at the low derivative levels*. The blowup occurs in the partial derivatives of the solution relative to the standard rectangular coordinates and is tied to the degeneration of the change of variables map between geometric and rectangular coordinates; see Subsect. 1.2 for an extended overview of these issues.

Our approach to proving shock formation is based on an extension of the remarkable framework of Christodoulou, who proved [15] detailed shock formation results for solutions to the relativistic Euler equations in irrotational regions of $\mathbb{R}^{1+3}$ (that is, regions with vanishing vorticity) in a very different solution regime: the small-data dispersive regime. In that regime, relative to a geometric coordinate system analogous

---

[2] Our frame (1.7) is closely related to a null frame, which is the reason that we use the phrase "special null structures." To obtain what is usually called a null frame, we could replace the vectorfield $\breve{X}$ in (1.7) with the null vectorfield $\mu L + 2\breve{X}$. All of our results could be derived by using the null frame in place of (1.7).

[3] By a "shock" in a solution to equation (1.1a), we mean that the singularity is of wave-breaking type; that is, the solution remains bounded but one of its first rectangular coordinate partial derivatives blows up. By a "shock" in a solution to equation (1.3a), we mean that the solution and its first rectangular coordinate partial derivatives remain bounded but one of its second rectangular coordinate partial derivatives blows up. Note that in both cases, the metric g remains bounded but one of its first rectangular coordinate partial derivatives blows up.

to the one mentioned in the previous paragraph, the solution enjoys time decay[4] at the low derivative levels corresponding to the dispersive nature of waves (see Sub-subsect. 1.5.4 for more details). The decay plays an important role in controlling various error terms and showing that they do not interfere with the shock formation mechanisms. In contrast, in the regime under study here, the solutions do not decay. This basic feature is tied to the fact that in one spatial dimension, wave equations are essentially transport equations.[5] For this reason, we must develop a new approach to controlling error terms and to showing that the solution exists long enough for the shock to form; see Subsubsect. 1.5.4 for an overview of some of the new ideas. As we explain below in more detail, a key ingredient in our analysis is the propagation of a two-size-parameter $\mathring{\epsilon} - \mathring{\delta}$ hierarchy all the way up to the shock. Here and throughout, $\mathring{\delta} > 0$ is a *not necessarily small* parameter that corresponds to the size of derivatives in a direction that is transversal to the characteristics and $\mathring{\epsilon} \geq 0$ is a *small* parameter that corresponds to the size of derivatives in directions tangent to the characteristics. The fact that we are able to propagate the hierarchy is deeply tied to the special null structures mentioned in the previous paragraph.

We can describe the solutions that we study as "nearly simple outgoing plane symmetric solutions." By a "plane symmetric solution," we mean one that depends only on a time coordinate $t \in \mathbb{R}$ and a single rectangular spatial coordinate $x^1 \in \mathbb{R}$.

To study nearly plane symmetric solutions, we consider wave equations on space-times with topology $\mathbb{R} \times \Sigma$, where $t \in \mathbb{R}$ corresponds to time, $(x^1, x^2) \in \Sigma := \mathbb{R} \times \mathbb{T}$ corresponds to space, and the torus $\mathbb{T} := [0, 1)$ (with the endpoints identified and equipped with the usual smooth orientation and with a corresponding local rectangular coordinate function x^2) corresponds to the direction that is suppressed in plane symmetry. We have made the assumption $\Sigma = \mathbb{R} \times \mathbb{T}$ mainly for technical convenience; we expect that suitable wave equations on other manifolds could be treated using techniques similar to the ones we use in the present article. By a "simple outgoing plane symmetric solution", we mean a special class of plane symmetric solution with only the outgoing (moving to the right) component. Recalling the $\mathring{\epsilon} - \mathring{\delta}$ hierarchy that we discussed earlier, in the limit $\mathring{\epsilon} \to 0$, the solutions that we study reduce to simple outgoing plane symmetric solutions.[6]

The first class of problems that we study is the Cauchy problem for covariant wave equations:[7]

$$\Box_{g(\Psi)} \Psi = 0, \tag{1.1a}$$

$$(\Psi|_{\Sigma_0}, \partial_t \Psi|_{\Sigma_0}) = (\mathring{\Psi}, \mathring{\Psi}_0), \tag{1.1b}$$

---

[4] As in our work here, the blowup in the small-data dispersive regime occurs in the rectangular coordinate partial derivatives of the solution.

[5] This is also true for many hyperbolic systems in one spatial dimension.

[6] Note that in the analysis of this paper, the solution completely vanishes when $\mathring{\epsilon} = 0$. However, this additional restriction is not necessary (see Remark 1.9).

[7] Relative to arbitrary coordinates, (1.1a) is equivalent to $\partial_\alpha \left(\sqrt{\det g} (g^{-1})^{\alpha\beta} \partial_\beta \Psi \right) = 0$.

where $\Box_{g(\Psi)}$ denotes the covariant wave operator of the Lorentzian metric $g(\Psi)$ and $(\mathring{\Psi}, \mathring{\Psi}_0) \in H_e^{19}(\Sigma_0) \times H_e^{18}(\Sigma_0)$ (see Remarks 1.1 and 1.2 just below) are data with support contained in the compact subset $[0, 1] \times \mathbb{T}$ of the initial Cauchy hypersurface $\Sigma_0 := \{t = 0\} \simeq \mathbb{R} \times \mathbb{T}$. Here and throughout,[8] $\Box_{g(\Psi)} \Psi := (g^{-1})^{\alpha\beta}(\Psi) \mathscr{D}_\alpha \mathscr{D}_\beta \Psi$, where[9] $\mathscr{D}$ is the Levi-Civita connection of $g(\Psi)$. We assume that relative to the rectangular coordinates $\{x^\alpha\}_{\alpha=0,1,2}$ (which we explain in more detail in Subsect. 2.2), we have $g_{\alpha\beta}(\Psi) = m_{\alpha\beta} + \mathcal{O}(\Psi)$, where $m_{\alpha\beta} = \mathrm{diag}(-1, 1, 1)$ is the standard Minkowski metric and $\mathcal{O}(\Psi)$ is an error term, smooth in Ψ and $\lesssim |\Psi|$ in magnitude when $|\Psi|$ is small. Above and throughout, ∂_0, ∂_1, and ∂_2 denote the corresponding rectangular coordinate partial derivatives, x^0 is alternate notation for the time coordinate t, and similarly[10] $\partial_t := \partial_0$. We make further mild assumptions on the nonlinearities ensuring that relative to rectangular coordinates, the nonlinear terms are effectively quadratic and *fail to satisfy Klainerman's null condition* [40]; see Subsect. 2.2 for the details.

Remark 1.1 (**Our analysis refers to more than one kind of Sobolev space**). Above and throughout, $H_e^N(\Sigma_0)$ denotes the standard N^{th} order Sobolev space with the corresponding norm $\|f\|_{H_e^N(\Sigma_0)} := \left\{ \sum_{|\vec{I}| \leq N} \int_{\Sigma_0} (\partial_{\vec{I}} f)^2 \, d^2x \right\}^{1/2}$, where $\partial_{\vec{I}}$ is a multi-indexed differential operator denoting repeated differentiation with respect to the rectangular spatial coordinate partial derivative vectorfields and d^2x is the area form of the standard Euclidean metric e on Σ_0, which has the form $e := \mathrm{diag}(1, 1)$ relative to the rectangular coordinates. It is important to distinguish these L^2-type norms from the more geometric ones that we introduce in Subsect. 7.1; the two kinds of norms drastically differ near the shock.

Remark 1.2 (**On the number of derivatives**). Although our analysis is not optimal regarding the number of derivatives, we believe that any implementation of our approach requires significantly more derivatives than does a typical proof of existence of solutions to a quasilinear wave equation based on energy methods. It is not clear to us whether this is a limitation of our approach or rather a more fundamental aspect of shock-forming solutions. Our derivative count is driven by our energy estimate hierarchy, which is based on a descent scheme in which the high-order energy estimates are very degenerate, with slight improvements in the degeneracy at each level in the descent. For our proof to work, we must obtain at least several orders of non-degenerate energy estimates, which requires many derivatives. See Subsubsect. 1.4.2 for more details.

For convenience, instead of studying the solution in the entire spacetime $\mathbb{R} \times \Sigma$, we study only the non-trivial future portion of the solution that is completely determined by the portion of the data lying to the right of the straight line $\{x^1 = 1 - U_0\} \cap \Sigma_0$, where

---

[8] See Subsect. 2.1 regarding our conventions for indices, and in particular for the different roles played by Greek and Latin indices.

[9] Throughout we use Einstein's summation convention.

[10] Note that ∂_t is *not* the same as the geometric coordinate partial derivative $\frac{\partial}{\partial t}$ appearing in equation (2.22) and elsewhere throughout the article.
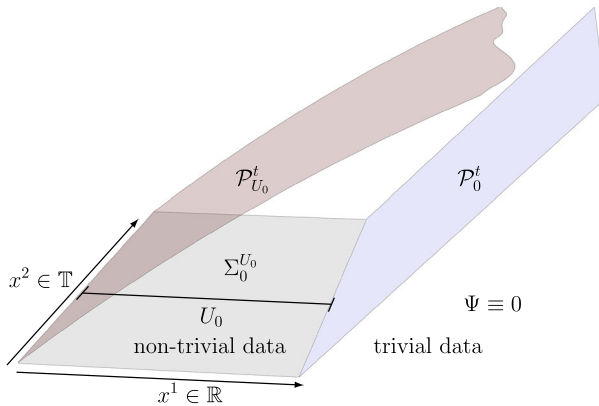
Fig. 1 The spacetime region under study

$$0 < U_0 \leq 1 \tag{1.2}$$

is a parameter, fixed until Theorem 15.1 (our main theorem), and the data are non-trivial in the region $\{1 - U_0 \leq x^1 \leq 1\} \cap \Sigma_0 := \Sigma_0^{U_0}$ of thickness U_0. See Figure 1 for a picture of the setup, where the curved null hyperplane portion $\mathcal{P}_{U_0}^t$ and the flat null hyperplane portion $\mathcal{P}_0^t$ in the picture are described in detail in Subsect. 1.2.

The second class of problems that we study is the Cauchy problem for non-covariant wave equations:

$$(g^{-1})^{\alpha\beta}(\partial\Phi)\partial_\alpha\partial_\beta\Phi = 0, \tag{1.3a}$$

$$(\Phi|_{\Sigma_0}, \partial_t\Phi|_{\Sigma_0}) = (\mathring{\Phi}, \mathring{\Phi}_0), \tag{1.3b}$$

where $g(\partial\Phi)$ is a Lorentzian metric with $g_{\alpha\beta}(\partial\Phi) = m_{\alpha\beta} + \mathcal{O}(\partial\Phi)$. We assume that the data (1.3b) are compactly supported as before, but we also assume one extra degree of differentiability: $(\mathring{\Phi}, \mathring{\Phi}_0) \in H_e^{20}(\Sigma_0) \times H_e^{19}(\Sigma_0)$. As we outline in Appendix A, the second class can essentially be treated in the same way as the first class and thus for the remainder of the article, we analyze only the first class in detail.

Remark 1.3 (**Special null structure**). As we explain in Appendix A, equation (1.3a) *always exhibits* the special null structures mentioned earlier; see Lemmas A.1 and A.3. However, if the null structures are "too good," then shocks may no longer form; see Footnote 14.

1.1 Summary of the Main Results

We now summarize our results. See Theorem 15.1 for the precise statement. We also provide some extended remarks and preliminary comparisons to previous work; see Subsect. 1.5 for a more detailed discussion of some related work.

Rough statement of the main results. Under mild assumptions on the nonlinearities described in Subsect. 2.2, there exists an open set[11] (without symmetry assumptions) of compactly supported data $(\mathring{\Psi}, \mathring{\Psi}_0) \in H_e^{19}(\Sigma_0) \times H_e^{18}(\Sigma_0)$ for equation (1.1a) whose corresponding solutions blow up in finite time due to the formation of a shock. The set contains both large and small data, but each pair $(\mathring{\Psi}, \mathring{\Psi}_0)$ belonging to the set is close to the data corresponding to a plane symmetric simple wave solution;[12] see Subsects. 7.3 and 7.7 for a precise description of our size assumptions on the data. Finally, we provide a sharp description of the singularity and the blowup-mechanism. Similar results hold for equation (1.3a) for an open set of data contained in $H_e^{20}(\Sigma_0) \times H_e^{19}(\Sigma_0)$.

Remark 1.4 (**Extending the results to higher spatial dimensions**). Our results can be generalized to higher spatial dimensions (specifically, to the case of $\Sigma := \mathbb{R} \times \mathbb{T}^n$ for $n \geq 1$) by making mostly straightforward modifications. The only notable difference in higher dimensions is that one must complement the energy estimates with elliptic estimates in order to control some terms that completely vanish in two spatial dimensions; see Remark 1.11.

Remark 1.5 (**Maximal development**). We follow the solution only to the constant-time hypersurface of first blowup. However, with modest additional effort, our results could be extended to give a detailed description of a portion of the maximal development[13] of the data corresponding to times up to approximately twice the time of first blowup (see the discussion below (1.9)), including the shape of the boundary and the behavior of the solution along it. More precisely, the estimates that we prove are sufficient for invoking arguments along the lines of those given in [15, Ch. 15], in which Christodoulou provided a description of the maximal development (without any restriction on time) in the context of small-data solutions to the equations of irrotational relativistic fluid mechanics in Minkowski spacetime.

Remark 1.6 (**The role of** U_0). We have introduced the parameter U_0 because one would need to vary it in order to extract the information concerning the maximal development mentioned in Remark 1.5.

Remark 1.7 (**Extending the results to the irrotational Euler equations**). Our work can easily be extended to yield a class of stable shock-forming solutions to the irrotational Euler equations (special relativistic or non-relativistic) under almost any[14]

---

[11] See Remark 7.6 on pg. 86 for a proof sketch of the existence of data to which our results apply.

[12] By this, we mean solutions that are independent of x^2 and that are constant along a family of null hyperplanes.

[13] Roughly, the maximal development is the largest possible solution that is uniquely determined by the data; see, for example, [56,64] for further discussion.

[14] There is precisely one exceptional equation of state for the irrotational relativistic Euler equations to which our results do not apply. The exceptional equation of state corresponds to the Lagrangian $\mathscr{L} = 1 - \sqrt{1 + (m^{-1})^{\alpha\beta} \partial_\alpha \Phi \partial_\beta \Phi}$, where m is the Minkowski metric. It is exceptional because it is the only Lagrangian for relativistic fluid mechanics such that Klainerman's null condition is satisfied for perturbations near the constant states with non-zero density. A similar statement holds for the non-relativistic Euler equations; see [13, Subsect. 2.2] for more information. We note that in [45], Lindblad showed that in *one or more*

physical equation of state. Extending the sharp shock formation results to solutions to the compressible Euler equations in regions with non-zero vorticity remains an outstanding open problem. The irrotational Euler equations essentially fall under the scope of equation (1.3a), but a few minor changes are needed; we outline them in Appendix B. The main difference is that for the wave equations of fluid mechanics, we do not attempt to treat data that have a fluid-vacuum boundary, along which the hyperbolicity of the equations degenerates. Instead, we prove shock formation for perturbations (verifying certain size assumptions) of the constant states with *non-zero* density. In terms of a fluid potential Φ, the constant solutions correspond to global solutions of the form $\Phi = kt$ with $k > 0$ a constant. In Subsect. B.2, we show that there exist data for the irrotational relativistic Euler equations verifying the appropriate size assumptions needed to close the proof.

Remark 1.8 (**Additional nonlinearities that we could allow**). With modest additional effort, our results could also be extended to allow for $g = g(\Phi, \partial\Phi)$ in equation (1.3a) where g is at least linear in Φ. That is, we could allow for quasilinear terms such as $\Phi \cdot \partial^2\Phi$. Moreover, we could also allow for the presence of semilinear terms verifying the *strong null condition* (see [60] for the definition) on RHS (1.1a) or (1.3a). In the regime close to a plane symmetric simple wave, these terms would make only a negligible contribution to the dynamics and in particular, they would not interfere with the shock formation processes. In contrast, we cannot allow for arbitrary quadratic, cubic, or even higher-order semilinear terms, which might highly distort the dynamics in regions where the solution's derivatives becomes large.

Remark 1.9 (**Possibly allowing Ψ itself to be larger**). For convenience, we assume in our proof that Ψ (undifferentiated) is initially small (see Subsects. 7.3 and 7.7), and we show that the smallness is propagated all the way up to the shock. However, we expect that with effort, one could relax this assumption by introducing a new parameter corresponding to the L^∞ norm of Ψ itself, which would not have to be "very small." One would of course still have to assume that the metric $g(\Psi)$ is initially Lorentzian, which for some nonlinearities would restrict the allowable size of the new parameter. One would also have to make the other size assumptions on the data stated in Subsects. 7.3 and 7.7 and, in order to ensure that a shock forms, that the nonlinearities cause the factor $G_{LL}(\Psi)$ on RHS (2.62) to be non-vanishing. Moreover, one would have to more carefully track the size of Ψ throughout the evolution, especially the influence of the new size parameter on the evolution of other quantities. This would introduce new technical complications into the proof, which we prefer to avoid.

Previous work [1,2,15,60] in more than one spatial dimension, which is summarized in the survey article [23], has shown shock formation in solutions to various quasilinear wave equations in a different regime: that of solutions generated by small data supported in a compact subset of $\mathbb{R}^2$ or $\mathbb{R}^3$. Recently, Miao and Yu proved a related

---

Footnote 14 continued

spatial dimensions, the wave equation corresponding to the Lagrangian $\mathscr{L} = 1 - \sqrt{1 + (m^{-1})^{\alpha\beta}\partial_\alpha\Phi\partial_\beta\Phi}$ admits global solutions whenever the data are small, smooth, and compactly supported. In particular, our approach to proving shock formation certainly does not apply to this equation.

large-data shock formation result [52] for a wave equation with cubic nonlinearities in three spatial dimensions. In Subsect. 1.5, we describe these results and others in more detail and compare/contrast them to our work here. We first provide an overview of our analysis; we provide detailed proofs starting in Sect. 2.

At the close of this subsection, we would like to highlight some philosophical parallels between our work here on stable singularity formation and certain global existence results for the Navier-Stokes equations [6–9] and the Einstein-Vlasov system with a positive cosmological constant [4]. In those works, the authors showed that a class[15] of global smooth solutions with symmetry can be perturbed in the class of non-symmetric solutions to produce global[16] solutions that are approximately symmetric.[17] The interesting feature of these results is that the symmetric "background" solutions are allowed to be large.

Similarly, our results provide a large class of plane symmetric shock-forming solutions that are orbitally stable in the class of non-symmetric solutions.

1.2 Overview of the Analysis

We prove finite-time shock formation for solutions to (1.1a) for data such that initially, $\partial_1 \Psi$ is allowed to be of any non-zero size while,[18] roughly speaking, $L_{(Flat)}\Psi$ and $\partial_2 \Psi$ are relatively small. Here and throughout, $L_{(Flat)} := \partial_t + \partial_1$ is a vectorfield that is null as measured by the Minkowski metric: $m_{\alpha\beta} L_{(Flat)}^{\alpha} L_{(Flat)}^{\beta} = 0$. We make similar size assumptions on the higher derivatives at time 0; see Subsects. 7.3 and 7.7 for the details.

Our assumptions on the nonlinearities lead to Riccati-type terms $\sim (\partial_1 \Psi)^2$ in the wave equation (1.1a), which seem to want to drive $\partial_1 \Psi$ to blow up along the integral curves of $L_{(Flat)}$. A caricature of this structure is: $L_{(Flat)} \partial_1 \Psi = (\partial_1 \Psi)^2 + \text{Error}$. However, our proof does not directly rely on writing the wave equation in this form or by proving blowup via a Riccati-type argument; in order to make that kind of argument rigorous, one would have to propagate the smallness of the other directional derivatives of Ψ (found in the term "Error") all the way up to the singularity. However, the rectangular coordinate partial derivatives are inadequate for propagating the smallness near the singularity in more than one spatial dimension. In fact, in the regime that we treat here, our arguments will suggest that generally, $\partial_t \Psi$, $\partial_1 \Psi$, and $\partial_2 \Psi$, all blow up simultaneously since the rectangular partial derivatives are generally transversal to the characteristic surfaces, whose intersection is tied to the blowup. These difficulties

---

[15] In [6–9], the symmetric solutions are precisely the solutions to the $2D$ Navier-Stokes equations, which were shown by Leray [44] to be globally regular for data belonging to L^2. In [4], the symmetric solutions included all $\mathbb{T}^3$-Gowdy solutions and a subset of the $\mathbb{T}^2$-symmetric solutions (all of which are known to be future-global by [59]).

[16] More precisely, the solutions in [4] are only shown to be future-global.

[17] In [6], the perturbed solutions are allowed to be far-from-$2D$ in a certain sense, though the proof relies on an analyticity assumption on the data.

[18] Throughout, if V is a vectorfield and f is a scalar function, then $Vf := V^{\alpha}\partial_{\alpha}f$ denotes the derivative of f in the direction V. If W is another vectorfield, then $VWf := V^{\alpha}\partial_{\alpha}(W^{\beta}\partial_{\beta}f)$, and similarly for higher-order differentiations.

are not present in simple model problems in one spatial dimension such as Burgers' equation $\partial_t \Psi + \Psi \partial_x \Psi = 0$; for Burgers' equation, the blowup of $\partial_x \Psi$ is easy to derive by commuting the equation with the coordinate derivative ∂_x to obtain a Riccati ODE in $\partial_x \Psi$ along characteristics.

The above discussion has alluded to a defining feature of our proof: we avoid working with rectangular derivatives and instead propagate the smallness of *dynamic directional derivatives* of the solution, tangent to the characteristics, all the way up to the singularity. This allows us to show that the solution's tangential derivatives do not significantly affect the shock formation mechanisms, which are driven by a derivative transversal to the characteristics. Consequently, in the solution regime under study, the shock formation mechanisms are essentially the same as in the case of exact plane symmetry. In particular, there is partial decoupling of the solution's derivatives in directions tangent to the characteristics from its transversal derivatives. We stress that *this effect is not easy to see*. To uncover it, we develop an extension of Christodoulou's aforementioned framework [15] for proving shock formation; see Subsubsect. 1.5.4 for a discussion of some of the new ideas that are needed. The key ingredient in the framework of [15] is an *eikonal function u*, which is a solution to the *eikonal equation*. The eikonal equation is a hyperbolic PDE that depends on the spacetime metric $g = g(\Psi)$ and thus on the wave variable. Specifically, in our study of equation (1.1a), u solves the eikonal equation initial value problem

$$(g^{-1})^{\alpha\beta}(\Psi)\partial_\alpha u \partial_\beta u = 0, \qquad \partial_t u > 0, \tag{1.4}$$

$$u|_{\Sigma_0} = 1 - x^1, \tag{1.5}$$

where (x^1, x^2) are the rectangular coordinates[19] on $\Sigma_0 \simeq \mathbb{R} \times \mathbb{T}$. The level sets of u are null (characteristic) hyperplanes for $g(\Psi)$, denoted by $\mathcal{P}_u$ or by $\mathcal{P}_u^t$ when they are truncated at time t. We refer to the open-at-the-top region trapped in between Σ_0, Σ_t, $\mathcal{P}_0^t$, and $\mathcal{P}_u^t$ as $\mathcal{M}_{t,u}$, where Σ_t denotes the standard flat hypersurface of constant Minkowski time. We refer to the portion of Σ_t trapped in between $\mathcal{P}_0^t$ and $\mathcal{P}_u^t$ as Σ_t^u. The condition (1.5) implies that the trace of the level sets of u along Σ_0 are straight lines, which we denote by $\ell_{0,u}$. For $t > 0$, the trace of the level sets of u along Σ_t are (typically) curves[20] $\ell_{t,u}$. See Figure 2 for a picture illustrating these sets and Def. 2.1 for rigorous definitions.

Eikonal functions u can be viewed as coordinates dynamically adapted to the solution via a nonlinear flow. Their use in the context of proving global results for nonlinear hyperbolic equations in more than one spatial dimension was pioneered by Christodoulou and Klainerman in their celebrated work [11] on the stability of Minkowski spacetime. Eikonal functions have also been used as central ingredients in proofs of low-regularity well-posedness for quasilinear wave equations; see, for example, [35,36,58,63].

---

[19] x^2 is only locally defined, but this is a minor detail that we typically downplay. We note, however, the following fact that we use throughout our analysis: the corresponding rectangular partial derivative vectorfield ∂_2 can be globally defined so as to be non-vanishing and smooth relative to the rectangular coordinates.

[20] More precisely, the $\ell_{t,u}$ are diffeomorphic to the torus $\mathbb{T}$.
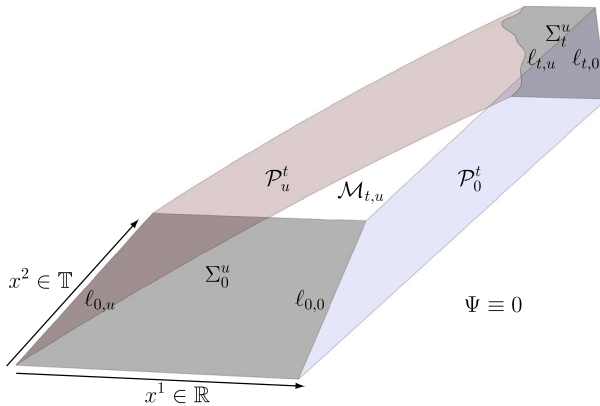
Fig. 2 The spacetime region and various subsets
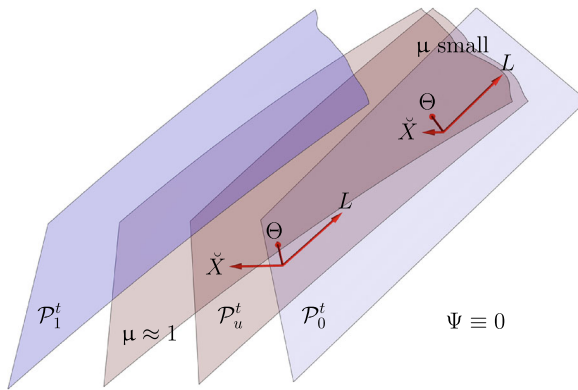
Fig. 3 The dynamic vectorfield frame at two distinct points in $\mathcal{P}_u^t$, where $0 < u < 1$

From u, we are able to construct an assortment of geometric quantities that can be used to derive sharp information about the solution. The most important of these in the context of shock formation is the *inverse foliation density*

$$\mu := \frac{-1}{(g^{-1})^{\alpha\beta}(\Psi)\partial_\alpha t \partial_\beta u} > 0, \tag{1.6}$$

where t is the rectangular time coordinate. The quantity $1/\mu$ measures the density of the level sets of u relative to the constant-time hypersurfaces Σ_t. In our work here, μ is initially close to 1 and when it vanishes, the density becomes infinite and the level sets of u (the characteristics) intersect; see Figure 3 below, in which we illustrate a scenario where μ has become small and a shock is about to form. In the solution regime under study, we prove that the rectangular components $g_{\alpha\beta}$ remain near those of the Minkowski metric $m_{\alpha\beta} = \text{diag}(-1, 1, 1)$ all the way up to the shock. Thus, from (1.6), we infer that the vanishing of μ implies that some rectangular derivative

of u blows up. From experience with model equations in one spatial dimension such as Burgers' equation, one might expect that the intersection of the characteristics is tied to the formation of a singularity in Ψ. Though it is not obvious, our proof in fact reveals that in the regime under study, $\mu = 0$ corresponds to the blowup of the first[21] rectangular derivatives of Ψ. In particular, on sufficiently large time intervals, our work affords *a sharp description of singularity formation characterized precisely by the vanishing of* μ.

Our analysis relies on the *geometric coordinates* (t, u, ϑ), where $t = x^0$ and u are as above and ϑ solves the evolution equation $-(g^{-1})^{\alpha\beta}(\Psi)\partial_\alpha u \partial_\beta \vartheta = 0$ with $\vartheta|_{\Sigma_0} = x^2$, where x^2 is the local rectangular coordinate on $\mathbb{T}$. The most important feature of the geometric coordinates is that relative to them, the shock singularity is *renormalizable*, with the possible exception of the high derivatives.[22] More precisely, we show that the solution and its up-to-mid-order geometric derivatives (that is, the geometric partial derivatives $\frac{\partial}{\partial t}$, $\frac{\partial}{\partial u}$, and $\frac{\partial}{\partial \vartheta}$) remain bounded in L^∞ all the way up to the shock. In particular, *the solution's first derivatives relative to the geometric coordinates do not blow up*! The blowup of the solution's first *rectangular* partial derivatives is a "low-level" effect that could be obtained[23] by transforming back to the rectangular coordinates and showing that $\mu = 0$ causes a degeneracy in the change of variables (see Lemma 2.7).

As we alluded to in Remark 1.2, the new feature that makes the proof of shock formation more difficult than typical global results for wave equations is: at the very high orders, our energies are allowed to blow up like $(\min_{\Sigma_t^u} \mu)^{-p}$ as $\mu \to 0$, where p is a constant depending on the order of the energy; see Subsubsect. 1.4.2 for an overview. An important aspect of our proof is that *the blowup-exponents p are controlled* by certain universal[24] structural constants appearing in the equations. The main contribution of Christodoulou in [15] was showing how to derive the degenerate high-order energy estimates and, crucially, *proving that the degeneracy does not propagate down to the low orders.* These steps consume the majority of our effort here.

To derive estimates, rather than working with the geometric coordinate partial derivative frame, we instead replace $\frac{\partial}{\partial u}$ with a similar vectorfield $\breve{X}$ that has slightly better geometric properties, which we describe below; see Def. 2.6 for the details of the construction. That is, we rely on the following dynamic vectorfield frame, which is depicted at two distinct points along a fixed null hyperplane portion $\mathcal{P}_u^t$ in Figure 3:

$$\left\{ L, \breve{X}, \Theta \right\}. \tag{1.7}$$

---

[21] For equation (1.3a), the blowup occurs in the second rectangular derivatives of Φ.

[22] The possibility that the high derivatives might behave worse is a fundamental difficulty that permeates our analysis.

[23] We use a slightly different, more direct argument to prove the blowup; see Subsubsect. 1.4.1 for an overview.

[24] These constants are the same for all of the wave equations that we study in this article.

The vectorfield $L = \frac{\partial}{\partial t}$ is a null (that is, $g(L, L) = 0$) generator of $\mathcal{P}_u$ (in particular, L is $\mathcal{P}_u$-tangent) and $\Theta := \frac{\partial}{\partial \vartheta}$ is $\ell_{t,u}$-tangent with $g(L, \Theta) = g(\check{X}, \Theta) = 0$. Relative to the rectangular coordinates, we have

$$L^\alpha = -\mu(g^{-1})^{\alpha\beta}\partial_\beta u. \tag{1.8}$$

Our proof shows that all the way up to the shock, L and Θ remain close to their flat analogs, which are respectively $L_{(Flat)} := \partial_t + \partial_1$ and ∂_2. The vectorfield $\check{X}$ is transversal to $\mathcal{P}_u$, Σ_t-tangent, g-orthogonal to $\ell_{t,u}$, and, most importantly, normalized by $g(\check{X}, \check{X}) = \mu^2$. In particular, the rectangular components $\check{X}^\alpha$ vanish precisely at the points where μ vanishes (that is, at the shock points). Our proof shows that $\check{X}$ remains near $-\mu\partial_1$ all the way up to the shock. This is depicted in Figure 3, in which the vectorfield $\check{X}$ is small in the region up top where μ is small.

Throughout the paper, we often depict $\mathcal{P}_u$-tangent derivative operators such as L and Θ with the symbol P. The main idea of our paper is to treat a regime in which the initial data have pure transversal derivatives such as $\check{X}\check{X}\Psi$ and $\check{X}\Psi$ that are of size $\approx \mathring{\delta} > 0$, while all other derivatives such as $P\check{X}\Psi$, $P\Psi$, and Ψ itself are of *small* size $\mathring{\epsilon}$. The quantity $\mathring{\delta}$ can be either small or large, but our required smallness of $\mathring{\epsilon}$ depends on $\mathring{\delta}$; see Subsects. 7.3 and 7.7 for the precise assumptions. Similar remarks apply to μ and to the rectangular component functions L^α at time 0. To avoid lengthening the paper, we generally do not closely track the dependence of our estimates on $\mathring{\delta}$. In particular, as we explain in Subsect. 2.1, we allow the "constants" C appearing in the estimates to depend on $\mathring{\delta}$. There is one crucially important exception: we carefully track the dependence of a handful of important estimates on a quantity $\mathring{\delta}_*$ that is related to $\mathring{\delta}$ and that controls the blowup-time:

$$\mathring{\delta}_* := \frac{1}{2}\sup_{\Sigma_0^1}\left[G_{LL}\check{X}\Psi\right]_- > 0 \tag{1.9}$$

(see Def. 7.4), where $G_{LL} := \frac{d}{d\Psi}g_{\alpha\beta}(\Psi)L^\alpha L^\beta$ and $f_- = |\min\{f, 0\}|$. We explain the connection between $\mathring{\delta}_*$ and the blowup-time in Subsubsect. 1.4.1. In our proof, we show that we can propagate the $\mathring{\epsilon} - \mathring{\delta}$ hierarchy (in various norms) all the way up to the time of first shock formation, which we show is $\{1 + \mathcal{O}(\mathring{\epsilon})\}\mathring{\delta}_*^{-1}$. We give an example of this kind of propagation in Subsubsect. 1.5.4. In practice, when proving estimates via a bootstrap argument, we give ourselves a margin of error by showing that we could propagate the hierarchy for classical solutions existing up to time $2\mathring{\delta}_*^{-1}$, which is plenty of time for the shock to form. Actually, our results show something stronger: *no other singularities besides shocks can form for times* $\leq 2\mathring{\delta}_*^{-1}$. The factor of 2 in the previous inequality is not important and could be replaced with any positive constant larger than 1, but we would have to further shrink the allowable size of $\mathring{\epsilon}$ as the size of the constant increases.

One important reason why we are able to propagate the hierarchy for times up to $2\mathring{\delta}_*^{-1}$ is: relative to the frame (1.7), the wave equation $\Box_{g(\Psi)}\Psi = 0$ has a **miraculous structure**. Specifically, $\mu\Box_{g(\Psi)}\Psi = 0$ is equivalent to (see Prop. 2.16)

$$-L(\mu L\Psi + 2\check{X}\Psi) + \mu\not{\triangle}\Psi = \mathcal{N}, \tag{1.10}$$

where $\not{\triangle}$ denotes the covariant Laplacian induced by g along the curves $\ell_{t,u}$ and $\mathcal{N}$ denotes quadratic terms depending on ≤ 1 derivatives of Ψ and ≤ 2 derivatives of u with the following critically important null structure: *each product in $\mathcal{N}$ contains at least one good $\mathcal{P}_u$-tangent differentiation and thus inherits a smallness factor of $\mathring{\epsilon}$*. In particular, products containing quadratic or higher powers of pure transversal derivatives (such as $(\check{X}\Psi)^2$, $(\check{X}\Psi)^3$, etc.) are *completely absent*. This good structure is related to Klainerman's null condition, but unlike in his condition, the structure of the cubic and higher-order terms matters. Another way to think about (1.10) is: by bringing μ under the outer L differentiation, we have generated a product term of the form $-(L\mu)\cdots$. This leads to the cancellation of the worst term on the RHS, which was proportional to $\mu^{-1}(\check{X}\Psi)^2$. Put differently, the term $\frac{1}{2}G_{LL}\check{X}\Psi$ from the RHS of equation (1.12) below generates complete, nonlinear cancellation of a term proportional to $\mu^{-1}(\check{X}\Psi)^2$. This null structure survives under commutations of the wave equation with vectorfields adapted to the eikonal function and *allows us to propagate the smallness of the size $\mathring{\epsilon}$ quantities even though the size $\mathring{\delta}$ quantities are allowed to be much larger*.

Our strategy of propagating the smallness of some quantities while simultaneously allowing derivatives transversal to the characteristics to be large has roots in the similar approach taken by Christodoulou [16] in his celebrated proof of the formation of trapped surfaces in solutions to the Einstein-vacuum equations and in the related works [3,33,37,38,47–49]. Similar strategies have been used [51,61,62,65] to prove global existence results for semilinear wave equations verifying the null condition in regimes that allow for large transversal derivatives.

1.3 A Short Proof of Blowup for Plane Symmetric Simple Waves

We now illustrate the strategy discussed in Subsect. 1.2 by studying a model problem. Specifically, we explain how to prove blowup for simple wave solutions (which we explain below) to equation (1.1a) in one spatial dimension. Strictly speaking, such solutions are not covered by our main theorem (Theorem 15.1), but nonetheless, our model problem provides the main idea behind the easy part of the proof of the shock formation and the role of the smallness of the data-size parameter $\mathring{\epsilon}$ from (7.3). That is, the solutions treated in our main theorem may be viewed as small perturbations of solutions that are analogous to the ones treated in this subsection. Note that there is a difference between[25] imposing plane symmetry on solutions to (1.1a) in the case of two spatial dimensions and studying equation (1.1a) in one spatial dimension. However, this difference is minor (as we explain at the end of this subsection) and can be ignored here.

---

[25] In particular, det$g$ depends on the coefficients of the metric corresponding to the "extra spatial dimensions".

Specifically, we start by considering wave equations of the form

$$\Box_{g(\Psi)}\Psi = 0$$

on $\mathbb{R}^{1+1}$. Throughout this subsection, we denote the standard rectangular coordinates on $\mathbb{R}^{1+1}$ by (x^0, x^1). We sometimes use the alternate notation $(t, x) = (x^0, x^1)$. We assume that the rectangular components of the metric verify $g_{\alpha\beta} = g_{\alpha\beta}(\Psi) = m_{\alpha\beta} + \mathcal{O}(\Psi)$. Here $m_{\alpha\beta} = \mathrm{diag}(-1, 1)$ is the standard Minkowski metric. We assume that the data $(\Psi|_{t=0}, \partial_t\Psi|_{t=0})$ are supported in the unit interval $[0, 1]$. Also, for convenience, we make the assumption (2.9). All of these assumptions could be significantly weakened or eliminated, but we do not pursue those issues here.

We now let u and v be a pair of eikonal functions that increase towards the future such that the level sets of u are transversal to those of v. That is, u and v are solutions to

$$(g^{-1})^{\alpha\beta}(\Psi)\partial_\alpha u\partial_\beta u = 0 = (g^{-1})^{\alpha\beta}(\Psi)\partial_\alpha v\partial_\beta v$$

such that $\partial_t u, \partial_t v > 0$ and such that du and dv are linearly independent. For convenience, we choose the initial conditions $u|_{t=0} = 1 - x$, as in (1.4). We also set $v|_{t=0} = x$ to be concrete. As long as (u, v) do not degenerate, we may use them as "null coordinate" functions in place of (t, x). We denote the corresponding coordinate partial derivative vectorfields by ∂_u, ∂_v.

In two (spacetime) dimensions, g can be written, relative to the null coordinates, as $g = -\Omega^2(du \otimes dv + dv \otimes du)$, where Ω is a scalar-valued function. It follows (see Footnote 7) that the covariant wave equation $\Box_{g(\Psi)}\Psi = 0$ is equivalent to

$$\partial_u\partial_v\Psi = 0,$$

where the nonlinearity is "hidden" in the definition of u, v above. Thus, we infer that the condition $\partial_v\Psi = 0$ is propagated by the solution if it is verified by the initial data. We refer to such a solution $\Psi = \Psi(u)$ as a *simple wave*. Note that the simple-wave-initial-data-assumption may be compared with (7.3) with $\mathring{\epsilon} = 0$. However, we make the minor remark that the comparison is not perfect because according to our definitions,[26] $\mathring{\epsilon} = 0$ implies that $\Psi \equiv 0$.

For simple waves, Ψ is constant along the level sets of u and hence so are the rectangular components $(g^{-1})^{\alpha\beta} = (g^{-1})^{\alpha\beta}(\Psi(u))$. It follows that, when graphed in the (t, x) plane, the level sets of u are straight lines *which are not generally parallel*.[27] Thus, if the characteristic velocities (that is, the "slopes" of the level sets of u) are initially not constant across different values of u, then from the compactness of the support of the data, we conclude that there must exist two distinct level sets of u that intersect in finite time. Clearly the rectangular derivatives $\partial_\beta u$ must blow up at the intersection points. As we described in Subsect. 1.2, at such intersection points, the quantity μ defined in (1.6) tends to 0. Below we explain why the vanishing of μ is

---

[26] See Remark 1.9 for related discussions.

[27] Note that this is the same behavior seen in the characteristics associated to solutions of Burgers' equation.

connected to the blowup of a first derivative of Ψ in the direction of a vectorfield with length of order 1.

We now compute the blowup-time by examining the quantity $1/\mu$. Our goal is to explain why the blowup-time is tied to the quantity $\mathring{\delta}_*$ defined in (1.9). To this end, we define the vectorfield L as in (1.8) and the vectorfield $\check{X} = \mu X$ as in (2.17). Note that in the present context, L is a scalar function multiple of ∂_v. Note also that since $Lt = 1$ (see (2.20a)) and since L is parallel to the straight line characteristics (in the (t, x) plane), it follows that $L^\alpha = L^\alpha(u)$ for $\alpha = 0, 1$. From (2.26) and the above discussion, we also see that $X^\alpha = X^\alpha(u)$ for $\alpha = 0, 1$. Just below, we will derive the following evolution equation, valid for simple waves:

$$L\mu = \frac{1}{2}G_{LL}\check{X}\Psi, \tag{1.11}$$

where $G_{LL} := \frac{d}{d\Psi}g_{\alpha\beta}(\Psi)L^\alpha L^\beta$. Recalling that $L = \frac{\partial}{\partial t}|_u$, it is now clear that $\mathring{\delta}_*^{-1}$ is connected to the time of first vanishing of μ (the blowup-time), as we described in Subsect. 1.2.

We now explain why a first derivative of Ψ blows up when μ vanishes. To this end, we note that $L\mu = \frac{1}{2}\mu G_{LL}X\Psi$ and that by (2.21a), $g(X, X) = 1$. In particular, $X\Psi$ is a derivative of Ψ with respect to a vectorfield of strictly positive length. Moreover, from the above discussion, we see that G_{LL} is constant along the integral curves of L (that is, $G_{LL} = G_{LL}(u)$). It follows that if μ goes to 0 in finite time, then $|X\Psi|$ *must blow up*.

To complete our analysis in this subsection, we will derive (1.11). To this end, we differentiate (1.6) to derive the following identity, which relies on the facts that the rectangular derivatives $\partial_\alpha t$ are constant, and that, by the above discussion, $(g^{-1})^{\alpha\beta}$ is constant along the lines of constant u:

$$L\mu^{-1} := L^\alpha \partial_\alpha(\mu^{-1}) = \mu(g^{-1})^{\beta\gamma}\partial_\beta t(g^{-1})^{\alpha\delta}\partial_\delta u \partial_\alpha \partial_\gamma u.$$

Differentiating the eikonal equation $(g^{-1})^{\alpha\beta}(\Psi)\partial_\alpha u\partial_\beta u = 0$, we obtain

$$L\mu = \frac{1}{2}\mu^3(g^{-1})^{\beta\gamma}\partial_\beta t \partial_\alpha u \partial_\delta u \partial_\gamma(g^{-1})^{\alpha\delta},$$

which we can simplify to

$$L\mu = -\frac{1}{2}\mu(g^{-1})^{\beta\gamma}\partial_\beta t \partial_\gamma \Psi G_{LL}.$$

In the expression above, the vectorfield $-(g^{-1})^{\beta\gamma}\partial_\beta t$ is equal to N^γ (see (2.25)), where N is the future-directed unit normal to Σ_t. Hence, from (2.18) and the fact that $L\Psi = 0$ for simple plane waves, we obtain the desired key expression (1.11). This completes our discussion of blowup for simple plane waves.

We close this subsection by noting that similar analysis can be applied to plane symmetric solutions to equation (1.1a) in two spatial dimensions, to the wave equation

(1.3a) via the discussion in Appendix A, and to the equations described in Remark 1.8. In a coordinate system of eikonal functions u, v, all of those equations take the form

$$\partial_u \partial_v \Psi = \mathcal{N}(\Psi, \partial \Psi) \partial_u \Psi \partial_v \Psi$$

for some coefficient function $\mathcal{N}$. Hence, for simple waves (that is, waves with $\partial_v \Psi \equiv 0$), the above analysis carries over without any changes.

1.4 Overview of the Main Steps in the Proof

We now outline the main steps in the proof of Theorem 15.1, which is our main result. Many of the geometric ideas and insights behind these steps are contained in [15]. Indeed, the main theme of the present paper is that the framework of [15] can be extended to prove shock formation in solutions to quasilinear wave equations in a regime different than the one treated in [15]: the regime of nearly simple outgoing plane symmetric waves. For a discussion of the main new ideas in the present paper, see Subsubsect. 1.5.4.

(1) We formulate the shock formation problem so that the fundamental dynamic quantities to be solved for are Ψ, μ, and the rectangular spatial components[28] L^1, L^2. We refer to the latter three quantities as "eikonal function quantities" since they depend on the first rectangular derivatives of u. We then derive evolution equations for μ, L^1, and L^2 along the integral curves of the vectorfield L. These evolution equations are essentially equivalent to the eikonal equation (1.4).

(2) We construct a good set of vectorfields $\mathscr{Z} := \{L, \breve{X}, Y\}$ that we use to commute the wave equation and also the evolution equations for the eikonal function quantities. From the point of view of regularity considerations, it is important to appreciate that the rectangular components of $Z \in \mathscr{Z}$ depend on the first rectangular derivatives of u. We will explain the importance of this fact in Subsubsect. 1.4.2 (see especially the discussion below equation (1.19)). Like Θ, the vectorfield Y (constructed in Subsect. 2.8) is tangent to the $\ell_{t,u}$, but it has better regularity properties than Θ. We use the full commutator set $\mathscr{Z}$ when deriving L^∞ estimates for the derivatives of the solution. When deriving energy estimates, *we use only the $\mathcal{P}_u$-tangent subset* $\mathscr{P} := \{L, Y\}$.

(3) To derive estimates, we make bootstrap assumptions on an open-at-the-top bootstrap region $\mathcal{M}_{T_{(Boot)}, U_0} := \cup_{s \in [0, T_{(Boot)})} \Sigma_s^{U_0}$, where $0 \leq T_{(Boot)} \leq 2\mathring{\delta}_*^{-1}$ (see (1.9)) and $\mathcal{M}_{T_{(Boot)}, U_0}$ is a spacetime subset trapped in between left-most and right-most null hyperplanes and the flat bottom and top hypersurfaces Σ_0 and $\Sigma_{T_{(Boot)}}$; see Figure 2 on pg. 13. We assume that $\mu > 0$ on $\mathcal{M}_{T_{(Boot)}, U_0}$, that is, that no shocks are present. We then make "fundamental" bootstrap assumptions about the L^∞ norms of various low-level derivatives of Ψ with respect to vectorfields in $\mathscr{P}$. These assumptions are non-degenerate in the sense that they do not lead to infinite expressions even when $\mu = 0$. Using them, we derive non-degenerate

---

[28] Note that (1.6) and (1.8) imply that $L^0 \equiv 1$.

L^∞ estimates for the low-level $\mathscr{Z}$ derivatives of the eikonal function quantities and other low-level derivatives of Ψ. Moreover, in Sect. 10, we derive related but much sharper estimates for μ and some of its low-level derivatives. In particular, using a posteriori estimates, we give a precise description showing that $\min_{\Sigma_t^u} \mu$ *vanishes linearly in t and moreover, we connect the vanishing rate to the initial data quantity* $\mathring{\delta}_*$ *defined in* (1.9).[29] In addition, we derive related sharp estimates for certain time-integrals involving degenerate factors of $1/\mu$. The time integrals appear in the Gronwall estimates we use to derive a priori energy estimates, as we describe in Step (4). The estimates of Sect. 10 therefore play a critical role in closing our proof.

(4) We use the L^∞ estimates to derive up-to-top order L^2-type (energy) estimates for Ψ and the eikonal function quantities on $\mathcal{M}_{T_{(Boot)},U_0}$. This step is difficult, in part because we must overcome the potential loss of a derivative tied to the dependence of our commutation vectorfields on the rectangular derivatives of u. To derive the L^2 estimates, we commute the evolution equations with only the $\mathcal{P}_u$-tangent commutators $P \in \mathscr{P}$. Because of the good null structure of the wave equation highlighted in (1.10) and the good properties of the vectorfields in $\mathscr{P}$, we do not need to commute with the transversal derivative $\breve{X}$ when deriving the L^2 estimates. As we have mentioned, at the high derivative levels, the energies are allowed to blow up in a controlled fashion near the shock, while at the lower derivative levels, the energies remain small all the way up to the shock. The degeneracy of the high-order estimates is tied to our approach in avoiding the derivative loss: we work with modified quantities that have unexpectedly good regularity properties but that introduce a difficult factor of $1/\mu$ into the top-order energy identities. This $1/\mu$ factor is the reason that we need the sharp time integral estimates described Step (3); these sharp estimates affect the blowup-rates of our top-order energy estimates, which are central to the entire proof. We remark that the degeneracy of our high-order energy estimates reflects the "worst-case" behavior of μ along Σ_t. That is, regions where μ is small drive the degeneracy of our high-order energy estimates along all of Σ_t. An added layer of complexity is that near the time of first shock formation, μ *can be large at some points while being near* 0 *at others and thus our energy estimates along Σ_t have to simultaneously account for both of these extremes*. We also highlight again the following crucially important feature of our proof: *we must derive non-degenerate energy estimates at the low-derivative levels*. From such estimates, we can recover our fundamental L^∞ bootstrap assumptions via a simple geometric Sobolev embedding result (see Lemma 12.4).

(5) The proof that $\mu \to 0$ and causes blowup (i.e., that the shock forms) before the maximum allowed bootstrap time $2\mathring{\delta}_*^{-1}$ is easy given the non-degenerate low-level L^∞ estimates; see Subsubsect. 1.4.1 for an outline of the proof.

Remark 1.10 (**Straightforward bootstrap structure**). The bootstrap structure of our proof is very simple. Given the simple bootstrap assumptions from Step (3), the

---

[29] Specifically, we show that there exists a (t, u)-dependent constant κ such that for $0 \le s \le t$, we have $\min_{\Sigma_s^u} \mu \approx 1 - \kappa s$; see (10.15a).

logic of our proof is essentially linear: the proofs of our estimates depend only on previously proved estimates. We recover the bootstrap assumptions near the end of the proof of the main theorem.

Steps (1)–(3) involve many geometric decompositions and computations but are relatively standard. In the remainder of Sect. 1, we describe Steps (4) and (5) in more detail, which have some important features that are specific to the problem of shock formation. We start with the easy Step (5).

1.4.1 Outline of the Proof that the Shock Happens

The proofs that μ goes to 0 and that some first rectangular derivative of Ψ blows up are easy given the non-degenerate low-level estimates. Both of these facts are based on the following evolution equation (derived in Lemma 2.12 as a consequence of the eikonal equation):

$$L\mu = \frac{1}{2} G_{LL} \check{X} \Psi + \mathcal{O}(\mu L \Psi). \tag{1.12}$$

In (1.12), $G_{LL} := \frac{d}{d\Psi} g_{\alpha\beta}(\Psi) L^\alpha L^\beta$ and the term $\mathcal{O}(\mu L \Psi)$ is depicted schematically. Our assumptions on the nonlinearities ensure that in the regime under study, we have $G_{LL} \approx 1$. Using the $\mathring{\varepsilon} - \mathring{\delta}$ hierarchy, we have $L(G_{LL} \check{X} \Psi) = \mathcal{O}(\mathring{\varepsilon})$. Since $L = \frac{\partial}{\partial t}$ relative to the geometric coordinates, we can integrate this estimate to obtain $[G_{LL} \check{X} \Psi](t, u, \vartheta) = [G_{LL} \check{X} \Psi](0, u, \vartheta) + \mathcal{O}(\mathring{\varepsilon})$, where the implicit constant in $\mathcal{O}$ is allowed to depend on the expected shock time $\mathring{\delta}_*^{-1}$ (see (1.9)). Inserting into (1.12), we obtain

$$L\mu(t, u, \vartheta) = \frac{1}{2}[G_{LL} \check{X} \Psi](0, u, \vartheta) + \mathcal{O}(\mathring{\varepsilon}). \tag{1.13}$$

Integrating (1.13) and using $\mu(0, u, \vartheta) = 1 + \mathcal{O}(\mathring{\varepsilon})$, we find that

$$\mu(t, u, \vartheta) = 1 + \frac{1}{2}[G_{LL} \check{X} \Psi](0, u, \vartheta)t + \mathcal{O}(\mathring{\varepsilon}). \tag{1.14}$$

From (1.9) and (1.14), we see that for $0 \le t \le 2\mathring{\delta}_*^{-1}$, we have

$$\min_{\Sigma_t^1} \mu = 1 - \mathring{\delta}_* t + \mathcal{O}(\mathring{\varepsilon}). \tag{1.15}$$

From (1.15), we see that μ vanishes for the first time at $T_{Lifespan} = \{1 + \mathcal{O}(\mathring{\varepsilon})\} \mathring{\delta}_*^{-1}$. Moreover, the above argument can easily be extended to show that at the points $(T_{Lifespan}, u, \vartheta)$ where μ vanishes, the quantity $|\check{X}\Psi|(T_{Lifespan}, u, \vartheta)$ is uniformly bounded from below, strictly away from 0; see inequality (15.6) and its proof. Since $\sqrt{g(\check{X}, \check{X})} = \mu$, we conclude that the derivative of Ψ with respect to the g-unit-length vectorfield $X := \mu^{-1}\check{X}\Psi \sim -\partial_1 \Psi$ must blow up at the points $(T_{Lifespan}, u, \vartheta)$ where μ vanishes.

1.4.2 Energy Estimates at the Highest Order

By far, the most difficult part of the analysis is obtaining the high-order L^2 estimates of Step (4). To derive them, we use the well-known multiplier method. Specifically, we derive energy identities by applying the divergence theorem to the vectorfield $J^\alpha := Q^\alpha_\beta T^\beta$ on the region $\mathcal{M}_{t,u}$, where $Q_{\mu\nu}[\Psi] := \mathcal{D}_\mu \Psi \mathcal{D}_\nu \Psi - \frac{1}{2} g_{\mu\nu}(g^{-1})^{\alpha\beta}\mathcal{D}_\alpha \Psi \mathcal{D}_\beta \Psi$ is the energy-momentum tensorfield (see (3.1)) and $T := (1 + 2\mu)L + 2\check{X}$ is a timelike vectorfield[30] verifying $g(T, T) = -4\mu(1 + \mu) < 0$; see Prop. 3.5 for the precise statement and Figure 2 for a picture illustrating the region of integration. As we have mentioned, we are able to close our energy estimates by commuting the wave equation with only $\mathcal{P}_u$-tangent commutators $P \in \mathscr{P}$ (we commute with the $\mathcal{P}_u$-transversal vectorfield $\check{X}$ only when deriving low-level L^∞ estimates). Moreover, we do not rely on the lowest level energy identity corresponding to the non-commuted equation. That is, we derive energy estimates for $P\Psi$, $PP\Psi$, etc. Consequently, for our data, the energies are of small size $\mathring{\epsilon}$ at time 0. At the first commuted level, the energies $\mathbb{E}[P\Psi](t, u)$ and null fluxes $\mathbb{F}[P\Psi](t, u)$ have the following strength (note carefully which terms contain explicit μ weights!):

$$\mathbb{E}[P\Psi](t, u) \sim \int_{\Sigma_t^u} \mu(LP\Psi)^2 + (\check{X}P\Psi)^2 + \mu|\slashed{d}P\Psi|^2 \, d\underline{\varpi}, \tag{1.16a}$$

$$\mathbb{F}[P\Psi](t, u) \sim \int_{\mathcal{P}_u^t} (LP\Psi)^2 + \mu|\slashed{d}P\Psi|^2 \, d\overline{\varpi}. \tag{1.16b}$$

In (1.16a)–(1.16b), $\slashed{d}P\Psi$ denotes the $\ell_{t,u}$-gradient of $P\Psi$ (that is, the gradient of $P\Psi$ viewed as a function of the geometric torus coordinate ϑ) and the forms $d\underline{\varpi}$ and $d\overline{\varpi}$ are constructed[31] so that they remain non-degenerate all the way up to and including the shock. We stress that the *terms with μ weights in* (1.16a)–(1.16b) *become very weak near the shock, and they are not useful for controlling error terms that lack μ weights*. Since both appearances of $|\slashed{d}P\Psi|^2$ in (1.16a) involve μ weights, we must find a different way to control error terms proportional to $|\slashed{d}P\Psi|^2$ *that does not rely on $\mathbb{E}$ or $\mathbb{F}$*. To this end, we exploit a subtle spacetime integral $\mathbb{K}(t, u)$ with special properties first identified by Christodoulou [15]; we explain this in Subsubsect. 1.4.4 in more detail.

With $\mathbb{E}_M$ denoting the energy corresponding to commuting the wave equation M times with elements $P \in \mathscr{P}$, $\mathring{\epsilon}$ denoting the small size of the L^2 quantities at time 0, and $\mu_\star(t, u) := \min\{1, \min_{\Sigma_t^u} \mu\}$, we derive the following energy estimate hierarchy (see Prop. 14.1), valid for classical solutions when $(t, u) \in [0, 2\mathring{\delta}_\star^{-1}] \times [0, U_0]$:

$$\mathbb{E}_{18}(t, u) \leq C\mathring{\epsilon}^2 \mu_\star^{-11.8}(t, u), \tag{1.17a}$$

$$\mathbb{E}_{17}(t, u) \leq C\mathring{\epsilon}^2 \mu_\star^{-9.8}(t, u), \tag{1.17b}$$

$$\cdots$$

$$\mathbb{E}_{13}(t, u) \leq C\mathring{\epsilon}^2 \mu_\star^{-1.8}(t, u), \tag{1.17c}$$

---

[30] In many other works, the symbol T denotes the future-directed unit normal to Σ_t. In contrast, in the present article, the vectorfield T is not the future-directed unit normal to Σ_t.

[31] $d\underline{\varpi}$ is a rescaled version of the canonical form induced by g on Σ_t.

$$\mathbb{E}_{12}(t, u) \leq C \mathring{\epsilon}^2, \tag{1.17d}$$

$$\cdots$$

$$\mathbb{E}_1(t, u) \leq C \mathring{\epsilon}^2. \tag{1.17e}$$

A similar hierarchy holds for the null fluxes $\mathbb{F}$ and the spacetime integrals $\mathbb{K}$.

We now explain how to derive the top-order energy estimate (1.17a) and the origin of its degeneracy with respect to μ. The main difficulty that one confronts in deriving (1.17a) is that naive estimates do not work at the top order because they lead to the loss of a derivative. The following mantra summarizes our approach to overcoming this difficulty.

One can gain back the derivative, *but only at the expense of incurring a factor of μ^{-1} in the energy identities.*

We now flesh out these issues. The hardest step in deriving (1.17a) is using the L^∞ bootstrap assumptions and the L^∞ estimates to obtain the following top-order energy inequality:

$$\mathbb{E}_{18}(t, u) \leq C \mathring{\epsilon}^2 + 4 \int_{t'=0}^{t} \left\{ \sup_{\Sigma_{t'}^u} \left| \frac{L\mu}{\mu} \right| \right\} \mathbb{E}_{18}(t', u) \, dt' + \cdots. \tag{1.18}$$

The aforementioned factor of μ^{-1} is the one indicated on RHS (1.18). The second hardest step is estimating the singular ratio $\sup_{\Sigma_{t'}^u} \left| \frac{L\mu}{\mu} \right|$ in a way that allows us to derive a Gronwall estimate from (1.18). To estimate the ratio, we need sharp information describing how $\min_{\Sigma_{t'}^u} \mu$ goes to 0. This analysis is very technical and is based on a posteriori estimates involving possible late-time behaviors of μ; see Sect. 10. A key ingredient is that by virtue of the wave equation (1.10) and equation (1.12), one can show that $LL\mu = \mathcal{O}(\mathring{\epsilon})$, which implies that $L\mu$ is approximately constant along the integral curves of L on the time scale of interest. To explain the basic idea behind the Gronwall estimates, let us pretend that μ is a function of t alone, that μ is near 0, and that $L\mu < 0$. Then recalling that $L = \frac{\partial}{\partial t}$, we use Gronwall's inequality and (1.18) to derive $\mathbb{E}_{18}(t, u) \leq C \mathring{\epsilon}^2 \mu^{-4}(t) \times \cdots$. Note that the blowup-rate $\mu^{-4}(t)$ is determined by the numerical constant 4 on RHS (1.18). In particular, *it is important that the coefficient 4 of the dangerous integral is a structural constant that does not depend on the number of times that the equations are differentiated.* We remark that the blow-up exponent on RHS (1.17a) is 11.8 rather than 4 because there are other difficult error integrals on RHS (1.18) (which we ignore in this introduction) that contribute to the top-order degeneracy.

We now sketch how we derive inequality (1.18) and explain the appearance of the singular factor $\sup_{\Sigma_{t'}^u} \left| \frac{L\mu}{\mu} \right|$. To illustrate the main ideas, we commute the wave equation one time with a $\mathcal{P}_u$-tangent commutation vectorfield P constructed in Step (2) and pretend that the wave equation in $P\Psi$ represents the top-order equation. An important

fact is that the rectangular components of the vectorfields $P \in \mathscr{P}$ depend on Ψ and $\mu \partial u$ (see (1.8)). Hence, upon commuting the wave equation with P, we obtain the following schematic wave equation:

$$\mu \Box_{g(\Psi)} P \Psi = \mu \partial^2 (\mu \partial u) \cdot \partial \Psi + \mu \partial (\mu \partial u) \cdot \partial^2 \Psi + \cdots \qquad (1.19)$$

In (1.19), the schematic symbol $\cdot$ denotes tensorial contractions *that produce products with a special structure*. Specifically, the P are designed so that the worst imaginable error terms are completely absent on RHS (1.19), which is possible only because we allow P to depend on ∂u. In particular, a careful decomposition of RHS (1.19) relative to the frame (1.7) reveals that the factor $\breve{X} \breve{X} \Psi$ is absent. This is important because by signature considerations, $\breve{X} \breve{X} \Psi$ would have come with the singular factor $1/\mu$, which would prevent us from deriving non-degenerate estimates at the low orders. Because of this structure, all terms $\mu \partial (\mu \partial u) \cdot \partial^2 \Psi$ are relatively easy to control all the way up to the shock. The main difficulty is that the factor $\mu \partial^2 (\mu \partial u)$ on RHS (1.19) seems to have insufficient regularity to close the estimates: commuting the eikonal equation (1.4), one obtains the evolution equation $L \partial^3 u \sim \partial^3 \Psi + \cdots$, *which is inconsistent with the available regularity* (two derivatives of Ψ) for solutions to (1.19). Clearly this difficulty propagates upon further commuting the wave equation. In the energy estimates, this difficulty leads to error integrals that are hard to control near the shock. As we will explain, the most difficult (in the sense of degeneracy created by a factor of $1/\mu$) error integral[32] has the following schematic form:

$$2 \int_{t'=0}^{t} \int_{\Sigma_{t'}^u} \breve{X} \Psi \cdot \partial^2 (\mu \partial u) \cdot \breve{X} P \Psi \, d\underline{\varpi} \, dt', \qquad (1.20)$$

where the factor $\partial^2 (\mu \partial u)$ in (1.20) has a special structure that we explain just below. It remains for us to outline why (1.20) can be expressed as the integral on RHS (1.18) plus other error integrals that are similar or easier to treat. The key fact, explained in the next paragraph, is that $\partial^2 (\mu \partial u) = \mu^{-1} \mathsf{Modified} + \mu^{-1} G_{LL} \breve{X} P \Psi + \cdots$, where G_{LL} is as in (1.13), $\mathsf{Modified}$ solves a good evolution equation with source terms that have an allowable level of regularity, and $\cdots$ denotes terms that are easy to treat. Then observing that $\breve{X} \Psi \cdot \partial^2 (\mu \partial u)$ contains the special product $G_{LL} \breve{X} \Psi$, we may use (1.12) to substitute, which allows us to rewrite (1.20) in the form

$$4 \int_{t'=0}^{t} \int_{\Sigma_{t'}^u} \frac{L\mu}{\mu} (\breve{X} P \Psi)^2 \, d\underline{\varpi} \, dt' + 2 \int_{t'=0}^{t} \int_{\Sigma_{t'}^u} (\breve{X} \Psi) \frac{\mathsf{Modified}}{\mu} (\breve{X} P \Psi) \, d\underline{\varpi} \, dt' + \cdots .$$
$$(1.21)$$

---

[32] More precisely, this error integral is difficult only when the vectorfield P in (1.20) is equal to the $\ell_{t,u}$-tangent vectorfield Y. The case $P = L$ is much easier to treat because in this case, one can show that the term $\partial^2 (\mu \partial u)$ involves at least one L differentiation. Consequently, we can use the Raychaudhuri equation described below to algebraically replace $\partial^2 (\mu \partial u)$ with terms involving ≤ 2 derivatives of Ψ.

From (1.16a) and the first integral in (1.21), we obtain the difficult integral on RHS (1.18). The integral involving Modified in (1.21) is difficult to treat,[33] but the resulting estimates are similar to the ones that we have sketched for the first integral.

We now elaborate on the special structure of the factor $\partial^2(\mu\partial u)$ appearing in (1.20). Some rather involved computations (see Lemmas 2.18 and 4.2 and Prop. 4.4) yield that the factor $\partial^2(\mu\partial u)$ appearing in (1.20) is equal to the geometric quantity $\mu P \mathrm{tr}_{g\!\!/}\chi$, where χ is the symmetric type $\binom{0}{2}$ $\ell_{t,u}$-tangent[34] tensorfield defined by $\chi_{\Theta\Theta} := g(\mathscr{D}_\Theta L, \Theta)$, and $\mathrm{tr}_{g\!\!/}$ denotes the trace with respect to the Riemannian metric $g\!\!/$ induced on the $\ell_{t,u}$ by g. To estimate $\mathrm{tr}_{g\!\!/}\chi$, we rely on the well-known *Raychaudhuri equation* from geometry, which yields the evolution equation $L\mathrm{tr}_{g\!\!/}\chi = -\mathrm{Ric}_{LL} + \cdots$, where $\mathrm{Ric}_{LL} := \mathrm{Ric}_{\alpha\beta}L^\alpha L^\beta$ is a component of the Ricci curvature tensor of $g(\Psi)$ and the terms $\cdots$ involve fewer derivatives. The key point is that a careful decomposition (see Lemma 6.1) shows that for solutions to (1.1a), all top-order terms contain a perfect L derivative: $\mu\mathrm{Ric}_{LL} = L(-G_{LL}\breve{X}\Psi + \mu P\Psi) + \cdots$, where the factor $-G_{LL}\breve{X}\Psi$ is precisely depicted. This remarkable structure was first[35] observed[36] by Klainerman and Rodnianski in their proof of low regularity well-posedness for quasilinear wave equations [36] and was also used in [15,52,60]. Combining, we find that $L\left\{\mu\mathrm{tr}_{g\!\!/}\chi - G_{LL}\breve{X}\Psi + \mu P\Psi\right\} = \cdots$. Taking one P derivative and setting Modified $:= \mu P\mathrm{tr}_{g\!\!/}\chi - G_{LL}\breve{X}P\Psi + \mu PP\Psi$, we find that LModified $= l.o.t.$ as desired, where $l.o.t.$ denotes terms with an allowable degree of differentiability.

Remark 1.11 (**The need for elliptic estimates in three or more spatial dimensions**). In n spatial dimensions with $n \geq 3$, it is no longer possible to obtain an equation of the form LModified $= l.o.t.$. The difficulty is that some third derivatives of u still remain on the RHS: LModified $= \partial^2(\mu\partial u) + l.o.t.$. However a careful decomposition of the remaining term $\partial^2(\mu\partial u)$ on the RHS shows that $\partial^2(\mu\partial u) \sim \hat{\chi} \cdot \mathcal{L}_P\hat{\chi}$, where $\mathcal{L}$ denotes Lie differentiation and $\hat{\chi}$ is the trace-free part of χ, which vanishes when $n = 2$. To bound the top-order factor $\mathcal{L}_P\hat{\chi}$ in L^2, one can derive elliptic estimates on the $n-1$ dimensional surfaces analogous to the $\ell_{t,u}$ in the present article; see, for example, [11,15,36,52,60] for more details.

1.4.3 Less Degenerate Energy Estimates at the Lower Orders

We now explain why the energy estimates (1.17b)–(1.17d) become two powers less degenerate relative to $\mu_\star^{-1}$ at each level in the descent, which eventually brings us to the non-degenerate levels (1.17d)–(1.17e). To illustrate the method, we now pretend

---

[33] We ignore it here; see the proofs of Prop. 11.10 and 14.2 and Lemma 14.8 for the details.

[34] Note that the $\ell_{t,u}$ are one-dimensional curves and hence for any m and n, the space of all type $\binom{m}{n}$ $\ell_{t,u}$-tangent tensors is one-dimensional. Hence, the study of $\ell_{t,u}$-tangent tensorfields could be completely reduced to the study of scalar functions. However, we do not carry out such a reduction in this article; we prefer to retain the tensorial character of $\ell_{t,u}$-tangent tensorfields because that structure allows us to directly apply standard formulas and techniques from differential geometry.

[35] A related but simpler observation was made in [11].

[36] Although the authors needed to exploit this structure to avoid losing a derivative in their work [36], they did not need to address the difficulty of obtaining estimates in regions where μ is near 0.

that equation (1.19) represents one level below top order (equivalently, that three derivatives of Ψ in the norm $\| \cdot \|_{L^2(\Sigma_t^u)}$ represents top order). The main idea is to allow the loss of one derivative in the factor $\partial^2(\mu\partial u) \sim P\mathrm{tr}_{g\!\!\!/}\chi$ in (1.20); a loss of one derivative is permissible below top order.

We refer to the just-below-top-order energy that we are trying to estimate by $\mathbb{E}_{One-Below-Top}$. In this case, we can use the non-degenerate low-level estimate $\|\check{X}\Psi\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_t^u)} \lesssim 1$ and Cauchy-Schwarz to bound the error integral in (1.20) by

$$\lesssim \int_{t'=0}^{t} \left\| P\mathrm{tr}_{g\!\!\!/}\chi \right\|_{L^2(\Sigma_{t'}^u)} \mathbb{E}^{1/2}_{One-Below-Top}(t', u)\, dt'. \tag{1.22}$$

The expression (1.22) leads to a gain in powers of $\mu_\star$ because of the following critically important estimate (see (10.36)), which shows that integrating in time produces the gain: for constants $B > 1$, we have

$$\int_{t'=0}^{t} \frac{1}{\mu_\star^B(t', u)}\, dt' \lesssim \mu_\star^{1-B}(t, u). \tag{1.23}$$

The point is that there are two time integrations in (1.22), the obvious one, and the one that comes from the schematic relation $\left\| LP\mathrm{tr}_{g\!\!\!/}\chi \right\|_{L^2(\Sigma_{t'}^u)} \sim \|P\mathrm{Ric}_{LL}\|_{L^2(\Sigma_{t'}^u)} +$ $\cdots \sim \|PPP\Psi\|_{L^2(\Sigma_{t'}^u)} + \cdots \sim \mu_\star^{-1/2}(t', u)\mathbb{E}^{1/2}_{Top}(t', u) + \cdots$, where we have incurred the factor $\mu_\star^{-1/2}$ in the last step due to the fact that the energies control "geometric torus derivatives" $P = \partial\!\!\!/$ with a $\mu^{1/2}$ weight (see (1.16a)). By the already proven[37] bound $\mathbb{E}^{1/2}_{Top}(t', u) \lesssim \mathring{\epsilon}\mu_\star^{-5.9}$ (see (1.17a)) we can integrate the previous estimate in time (see Lemma 13.2) to yield, via (1.23), the estimate $\left\| P\mathrm{tr}_{g\!\!\!/}\chi \right\|_{L^2(\Sigma_{t'}^u)} \sim$ $\int_{s=0}^{t} \left\| LP\mathrm{tr}_{g\!\!\!/}\chi \right\|_{L^2(\Sigma_s^u)} ds + \cdots \sim \mathring{\epsilon} \int_{s=0}^{t'} \mu_\star^{-6.4}(s, u)\, ds + \cdots \lesssim \mathring{\epsilon}\mu_\star^{-5.4}(t, u) + \cdots$. The outer time integration in (1.22) leads to the gain of another power of $\mu_\star$, which in total yields the a priori estimate[38] $\mathbb{E}^{1/2}_{One-Below-Top}(t, u) \lesssim \mathring{\epsilon}\mu_\star^{-4.4}(t, u) + \cdots$, an improvement over the top-order degeneracy. We can continue the descent in this fashion, and when we reach the level (1.17e), the following analog of (1.23) (proved below as (10.39)) *allows us to completely break* the $\mu_\star^{-1}$ *degeneracy*:

$$\int_{t'=0}^{t} \frac{1}{\mu_\star^{9/10}(t', u)}\, dt' \lesssim 1. \tag{1.24}$$

We conclude by remarking that the proofs of (1.23) and (1.24) are based on knowing exactly how $\mu_\star$ goes to 0, that is, based on a sharp version of the caricature estimate

---

[37] In practice, we have to derive a Gronwall estimate for the top-order and just-below-top-order energies as a system, rather than treating the top energy completely separately.

[38] We have ignored some other error integrals which are slightly more degenerate and only allow us to prove the slightly weaker estimate $\mathbb{E}^{1/2}_{One-Below-Top}(t, u) \lesssim \mathring{\epsilon}\mu_\star^{-4.9}(t, u)$.

$\mu_\star(t, u) \sim 1 - t\mathring{\delta}_\star$; see (10.15a). In particular, it is very important that $\mu_\star$ goes to 0 *linearly* in time.

1.4.4 The Coercive Spacetime Integral

As we highlighted in Subsubsect. 1.4.2, the energies (1.16a) and null fluxes (1.16b) control geometric torus derivatives with μ weights, which makes them too weak to control certain error integrals involving torus derivatives that lack μ weights, at least in regions where μ is small. The saving grace is that as in [15,52,60], our energy estimates generate a spacetime integral with a good sign. Under appropriate bootstrap assumptions, the integral is strong in regions where μ is small and controls geometric torus derivatives without μ weights. For the P-commuted wave equation, this integral takes the form

$$\mathbb{K}[P\Psi](t, u) := \frac{1}{2} \int_{\mathcal{M}_{t,u}} [L\mu]_- |\slashed{d} P\Psi|^2 \, d\varpi, \qquad (1.25)$$

where $[L\mu]_- = |\min\{L\mu, 0\}|$. The key estimate that makes (1.25) useful in regions of small μ is: $\mu(t, u, \vartheta) \leq \frac{1}{4} \implies L\mu(t, u, \vartheta) \leq -\frac{1}{4}\mathring{\delta}_\star$ (see (10.12)). Here $\mathring{\delta}_\star > 0$ is the data-dependent parameter (1.9) that controls the blowup-time. $\mathring{\delta}_\star$ is large enough to be useful because of our assumption that $\mathring{\epsilon}$ is sufficiently small. Note that the key estimate has a "point of no return character" in that once μ becomes sufficiently small, it must continue to shrink along the integral curves of L to form a shock. The proof of the key estimate is non-trivial and is part of the detailed analysis of μ located in Sect. 10.

1.5 Comparison with Previous Work

1.5.1 Blowup-Results in One Spatial Dimension

Under the assumption of plane symmetry, the finite-time breakdown of solutions to (1.1a) or (1.3a) (for nonlinearities verifying the conditions described in Subsect. 2.2) is well known and can be proved through the method of characteristics; our analysis in Subsect. 1.3 was essentially a simple version of this method. Readers may consult [23,60] for detailed examples derived with the help of sharp techniques paralleling the ones employed in the present article.

There is a vast literature on the use of the method of characteristics to prove blowup for various nonlinear hyperbolic systems. A far-from-exhaustive list of examples is: the groundbreaking work of Riemann [54] mentioned at the beginning, Lax's seminal finite-time breakdown results [43] for scalar conservation laws and his aforementioned application of the method of Riemann invariants to 2×2 genuinely nonlinear strictly hyperbolic systems [42], Jeffrey's work [26] on magnetoacoustics, Jeffrey-Korobeinikov's work [24] on nonlinear electromagnetism, Jeffrey-Teymur's work [25] on hyperelastic solids, John's extension [28] of Lax's work to systems in one spatial dimension with more than two unknowns (which required the development of

new methods, in particularly identifying the important role played by *simple waves*, since the method of Riemann invariants is no longer applicable), Liu's further refinement [46] of John's work, John's work [30] on spherically symmetric solutions to the equations of elasticity, Klainerman-Majda's work [34] on nonlinear vibrating string equations, Bloom's work [5] on nonlinear electrodynamics, and Cheng-Young-Zhang's work [10] on magnetohydrodynamics and related systems. Roughly, the blowup in all of these works is proved by finding a quantity $y(t)$ that verifies a Riccati-type equation $\dot{y}(t) = a(t)y^2(t) + \text{Error}$, where $a(t)$ is non-integrable in time near ∞ and Error is a small error term that does not interfere with the blowup. Recently, Christodoulou and Raoul Perez gave a new sharp proof [14] of John's blowup-results [28] for genuinely nonlinear strictly hyperbolic quasilinear first-order systems in one spatial dimension. They showed that these systems can be treated with extensions of Christodoulou's framework [15], which yields a sharp description of the blowup with upper and lower bounds on the lifespan. Moreover, they applied their results to prove shock formation in electromagnetic plane waves in a crystal.

1.5.2 Proofs of Breakdown by a Contradiction Argument in More Than One Spatial Dimension

For nonlinear hyperbolic equations in more than one spatial dimension, many blowup-results have been proved by a contradiction argument that bypasses the need to obtain a detailed description of the singularity. For example, John gave a non-constructive proof [29] showing that many wave equations in three spatial dimensions with quadratic nonlinearities exhibit finite-time blowup for a large set[39] of smooth data. He did not need to impose any size restriction on the data for his proof to work, but his proof did not provide any information about the blowup-time. As a second example, we mention Sideris' well-known proof [57] of blowup for the compressible Euler equations in three spatial dimensions under a convexity assumption on the equation of state and under signed integral conditions on the data. His proof was based on virial identity arguments that yielded a manifestly non-negative weighted space-integrated quantity with a sufficiently negative time derivative, which eventually leads to a contradiction even if one assumes that the solution is otherwise smooth. In particular, his proof gave an explicit upper bound on the solution's lifespan. There are many similar results available which prove blowup for various evolution equations via a virial identity argument. We do not aim to survey the extensive literature here, but we do highlight the following examples: semilinear Schrödinger equations [21], the relativistic Vlasov-Poisson equation [20], and various semilinear wave and heat equations [32]. We note that for semilinear Schrödinger, wave, and related equations, the state of the art knowledge of the blowup has advanced far beyond proof of blowup by contradiction; see [50,53] for surveys.

Though appealing in its shortness, a serious limitation of the virial identity approach is that it relies specific algebraic structures of the equations that are unstable under perturbations of the equations. Another limitation is that it provides a lifespan upper

---

[39] For some nonlinearities, John's proof yields blowup for *all* non-trivial, smooth, compactly supported data.

bound that can be inaccurate; without additional information, one must concede that the solution could in principle blow up much sooner by a different mechanism. In contrast, our proof has many robust elements (see, however, Remark 1.8), and our work yields a sharp description of the solution's lifespan and identifies the quantities that blow up as well as the ones that remain regular.

1.5.3 Detailed Blowup-Results in More Than One Spatial Dimension

Alinhac was the first [1,2] to give a sharp description of singularity formation in solutions to quasilinear wave equations in more than one spatial dimension without symmetry assumptions. He addressed a compactly supported small-data regime in which dispersive effects are eventually overcome by sufficiently strong quadratic non-linearities. For convenience, even though these kinds of solutions eventually blow up, we say that they belong to the "small-data dispersive regime." Alinhac's results have been generalized to various equations by several authors; see, for example, [17–19]. In the case of three spatial dimensions (more precisely, the data are given on $\mathbb{R}^3$), Alinhac proved that whenever the nonlinearities in equation (1.3a) fail to satisfy Klainerman's null condition [40], there exists a set of data of small size $\mathring{\epsilon}$ (in a Sobolev norm) such that the solution decays for a long time at the linear rate t^{-1} before finally blowing up at the "almost global existence" time $\sim \exp(c\mathring{\epsilon}^{-1})$. More precisely, the singularity-forming quantities[40] behave like $\dfrac{\mathring{\epsilon}}{(1+t)\left[1+\mathcal{O}(\mathring{\epsilon})\ln(1+t)\right]}$, where the $\mathcal{O}(\mathring{\epsilon})$ term in the denominator depends on the nonlinearities as well as the profile of the data and the blowup (for some $t > 0$) occurs in regions where $\mathcal{O}(\mathring{\epsilon}) < 0$.

Alinhac's data were posed in an annular region of $\mathbb{R}^3$, and he assumed that they verified a non-degeneracy condition. His results showed that the almost global existence lifespan lower bounds, obtained by John and Klainerman [27,39,41] with the help of dispersive estimates that delay[41] the singularity formation, are in fact saturated. Moreover, his results confirmed John's conjecture [31] regarding the asymptotically correct description of the blowup-time in the limit $\mathring{\epsilon} \downarrow 0$ for data verifying the non-degeneracy condition.

Christodoulou's remarkable work [15] yielded a sharp improvement (described below) of Alinhac's results for a similar class of small compactly supported data given on $\mathbb{R}^3$, and he did not make any non-degeneracy assumption. His main results applied to irrotational regions of solutions to the special relativistic Euler equations in the small-data dispersive regime. In such regions, the fluid equations reduce[42] to a special case of the wave equation (1.3a) in which additional structure is present. The non-relativistic Euler equations were treated through the same approach in [13] and feature the same additional structure, including that the irrotational fluid equations derive from a Lagrangian (and thus can be written in Euler-Lagrange form) and that

---

[40] In Alinhac's equations of type (1.3a), the second rectangular derivatives of the solution blow up. In our work on equations of type (1.1a), the first rectangular derivatives blow up.

[41] By "delay," we mean relative to the case of one spatial dimension, where the lack of dispersion leads to blowup at time $\mathcal{O}(\mathring{\epsilon}^{-1})$.

[42] Up to simple renormalizations outlined in Appendix B.

solutions possess several conserved quantities associated to various symmetries of the Lagrangian. These assumptions were used in the proofs, in particular in exhibiting the good null structure[43] enjoyed by the equations. The equations also had some additional structure due to the assumption that they model a physical fluid. In addition to assuming that the data are of a small size ɛ̊ in a high Sobolev norm, Christodoulou also made further assumptions on the data to ensure that a shock forms. His sufficient conditions were phrased in terms of certain integrals of the data: shocks form in the solution whenever the data integrals have the appropriate sign (determined by the nonlinearities) and are not too small in magnitude relative to ɛ̊.

Christodoulou's results were extended [60] to a larger class of equations and data by Speck (see also the survey article [23], joint with Holzegel, Klainerman, and Wong). In particular, for data given on $\mathbb{R}^3$, he proved a sharp small-data shock formation result for equations (1.1a) or (1.3a) whenever the null condition fails. That is, he showed that Christodoulou's sharp shock formation results are not tied to the specific structure of the fluid equations and that the additional structure present in those equations is not needed to close the proof. Speck also showed that given any sufficiently regular non-trivial compactly supported initial data, if they are rescaled by a small positive factor, then the solution forms a shock in finite time. That is, *all sufficiently regular data profiles lead to shock formation if they are suitably rescaled*.

Alinhac's and Christodoulou's approaches to proving shock formation share many common features. For example, the main idea of Alinhac's proof was to resolve the singularity by constructing an eikonal function u, as in Subsect. 1.2. Moreover, near the singularity, he changed variables to a new "geometric" coordinate system in which u is one of the new coordinates. Relative to the geometric coordinates, he proved that the solution to (1.3a) remains regular all the way up to the point where the characteristics first intersect but that the change of variables map between the rectangular and geometric coordinates breaks down there. Changing variables back to rectangular coordinates, he showed that the degeneracy implies that $|\partial^2 \Phi|$ blows up in finite time precisely at the point where the characteristics intersect. Alinhac also had to overcome the potential loss of derivatives that we described in Subsubsect. 1.4.2 with the help of "modified" quantities. However, the methods he used did not immediately eliminate all of the derivative loss and thus differed in a fundamental way from Christodoulou's approach. Specifically, to close his energy estimates, Alinhac employed a Nash-Moser iteration scheme. His scheme featured a free boundary due to the fact that the blowup-time for each iterate can be slightly different. Although Alinhac gave a sharp description of the asymptotic behavior of the solution near the singularity, his proof was not able to reveal information beyond the first blowup-point. Moreover, in order for his proof to close, *the constant-time hypersurface of first blowup was allowed to contain only one blowup-point*. These fundamental technical limitations were tied to the presence of the free boundary in his Nash-Moser iteration scheme and they are the reason that he had to make the non-degeneracy assumption on the data; see [60] for additional discussion regarding his approach.

---

[43] In particular, in Christodoulou's version of equation (A.5), the RHS completely vanishes. The vanishing occurs because he studies equations of the form (1.3a) that derive from a Lagrangian.

We now describe the most important difference between the approaches of Alinhac and Christodoulou. The main advantage afforded by Christodoulou's framework, as shown in [13,15,60], is that in the small-data dispersive regime, there is a sharp criterion for blowup. Specifically, the solution blows up at a given point $\iff$ μ vanishes there. In particular, in the small-data dispersive regime, *shocks are the only kinds of singularities that can form*. Since the behavior of μ is local in time and space, the vanishing of μ at one point does not preclude one from continuing the solution to a neighborhood of other nearby points where μ > 0. Moreover, {μ = 0} precisely characterizes the singular portion of the boundary of the maximal development of the data, that is, the portion of the boundary on which the solution blows up. Thus, Christodoulou's framework is able to reveal detailed information about the structure of the maximal development of the data, the shape of the various components of its boundary, and the behavior of the solution along it. The same information can be extracted for the solutions that we study here; see Remark 1.5. The sharp description is an essential ingredient in setting up the problem of extending the Euler solution weakly beyond the first singularity. We note that an essential component of solving this problem is obtaining information about the shock hypersurface across which discontinuities occur. The problem was recently solved in spherical symmetry [12], while the non-symmetric problem remains open and is expected to be of immense difficulty.

1.5.4 Differences Between the Proof of Shock Formation in the Small-Data Dispersive Regime and in the Nearly Plane Symmetric Regime

As we mentioned near the beginning of Sect. 1, the most important new feature of the analysis in the nearly plane symmetric regime is that we rely on a different mechanism to control the nonlinear error terms. More precisely, since solutions do not decay in the nearly plane symmetric regime, our approach is based on the propagation of the $\mathring{\epsilon}-\mathring{\delta}$ hierarchy described in Subsubsect. 1.4.1 (in other words, proving that our solution remain close to a simple outgoing wave), rather than the smallness and dispersive decay estimates[44] used in the small-data dispersive regime [13,15,60]. We remark that there is a technical simplification in the nearly plane symmetric regime that allows for a shorter proof compared to the small-data dispersive regime: our propagation of the $\mathring{\epsilon} - \mathring{\delta}$ hierarchy does not involve weights in t or the Euclidean radial coordinate r.

To propagate the $\mathring{\epsilon} - \mathring{\delta}$ hierarchy, we must make some observations about various product/null structures in the equations that are not needed for treating the small-data dispersive regime. Such structures are relevant both for obtaining suitable energy estimates up to top order and for deriving non-degenerate L^∞ estimates at the lower derivative levels. We now give one example of such a structure:

Repeatedly commuting the wave equation $\mu\square_{g(\Psi)}\Psi = 0$ up to top order with $\mathcal{P}_u$-tangent vectorfields $P \in \mathscr{P} = \{L, Y\}$ produces commutator error term

---

[44] We recall that in both regimes, the solution remains regular at the low derivative levels with respect to the geometric coordinates and the blowup occurs in the partial derivatives of the solution with respect to the rectangular coordinates.

products that are quadratic and higher order in the derivatives of Ψ, μ, and L^i *with each product involving no more than one $\check{X}$ derivative.*

The above structure is a consequence of the schematic structures $[P_1, P_2] \sim P_3$ and $[\check{X}, P_1] \sim P_2$, where P_1, P_2, and P_3 are arbitrary $\mathcal{P}_u$-tangent vectorfields. These schematic commutator relations are easy to see relative to the geometric coordinates (t, u, ϑ). To further explain these issues, we first note that $\check{X} = \frac{\partial}{\partial u} - \xi \frac{\partial}{\partial \vartheta}$, where $\Theta = \frac{\partial}{\partial \vartheta}$ and ξ is a scalar function (see (2.23)). From these expressions, it easily follows that for $Z_1, Z_2 \in \{\check{X}, P_1, P_2\}$, the commutator $[Z_1, Z_2]$ belongs to span$\{\frac{\partial}{\partial t}, \frac{\partial}{\partial \vartheta}\}$ and is therefore $\mathcal{P}_u^t$-tangent (the key point is that the coefficient of $\frac{\partial}{\partial u}$ in the above expression for $\check{X}$ is a constant!). That is, we have shown that $[P_1, P_2] \sim P_3$ and $[\check{X}, P_1] \sim P_2$. Recalling the wave equation decomposition (1.10), we easily obtain the structure for the commutators $[\mu \Box_{g(\Psi)}, P]$ highlighted in the above indented sentence in the special case $P \in \{L, Y\}$ relevant for our energy estimates.[45] The structure is a manifestation of the miraculous null structure mentioned in the discussion surrounding equation (1.10), and it allows us to derive energy estimates for the L and Y derivatives of the solution up to top order without having to derive energy estimates for its high $\check{X}$ derivatives. Put differently, there is a kind of decoupling between energy estimates for the $\mathcal{P}_u$-tangential derivatives and the $\mathcal{P}_u$-transversal derivatives. Moreover, the structure has the following important consequence: all energy estimate error integrands generated by commuting the wave equation with L and Y *contain at most one $\mathring{\delta}$-sized factor and thus are at least quadratically small in the quantities that are expected to be of size $\mathring{\epsilon}$.* This suggests that a Gronwall estimate will lead to the $C\mathring{\epsilon}^2$ smallness of the energies for[46] the relevant time scale $t < 2\mathring{\delta}_*^{-1}$, as described in Subsect. 1.2. Indeed, modulo the many difficulties with high-order energy degeneracy with respect to $\mu_\star^{-1}$ that we previously explained, this is exactly what our energy estimate hierarchy (1.17a)–(1.17e) reveals. This allows us to propagate the $\mathcal{O}(\mathring{\epsilon}^2)$ smallness of the energies of the $\mathcal{P}_u$-tangent derivatives of Ψ without having to bound the energies[47] of the pure transversal derivatives such as $\check{X}\Psi$, $\check{X}\check{X}\Psi$, etc., which can be of large size $\mathcal{O}(\mathring{\delta}^2)$.

For illustration, we now give one example of how the $\mathcal{O}(\mathring{\epsilon}^2)$ smallness of the energies is used in our proof. We recall that our bootstrap argument heavily relies on the expectation (described just below equation (1.15)) that the first vanishing time of μ (that is, the blowup-time of the first rectangular derivatives of Ψ) is $(1 + \mathcal{O}(\mathring{\epsilon}))\mathring{\delta}_*^{-1}$. To realize this expectation, we must show that the $L\Psi$-involving products on RHS (1.12) are of small size $\mathcal{O}(\mathring{\epsilon})$ all the way up to the shock. The desired smallness estimate $\|L\Psi\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_t^u)} \lesssim \mathring{\epsilon}$ is a simple consequence of the $\mathcal{O}(\mathring{\epsilon}^2)$ smallness of the low-order

---

[45] The detailed proof of the structure of the commutators $[\mu \Box_{g(\Psi)}, P]$ for $P \in \{L, Y\}$, in the precise form that we need for our proof, is based on straightforward but lengthy geometric computations carried out in Lemma 4.2, Prop. 4.4 with $Z \in \{L, Y\}$, and Lemma 2.18.

[46] As we explain in Subsect. 2.1, we use the convention that constants C are allowed to depend on $\mathring{\delta}$ and $\mathring{\delta}_*^{-1}$.

[47] We note, however, the following non-obvious feature of our proof, described at the start of Sect. 9: to close our energy estimates at any order, we rely on the bound $\|\check{X}^{\leq 3}\Psi\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_t^u)} \lesssim \mathring{\delta} \lesssim 1$, which we obtain by commuting the wave equation up to two times with $\check{X}$ and treating the wave equation as a transport equation up to derivative-losing terms.

energies, a data smallness assumption, and Sobolev embedding; see Cor. 13.4 for a proof.

We now further explain how the analysis of the small-data dispersive regime [13, 15, 60] is different than our analysis here. In that regime, *there is only one smallness parameter capturing the size of a full spanning set of directional derivatives of the solution at time* 0, and the $\mathring{\epsilon}^2$ smallness of all energies from level 0 up to top order can be propagated all the way up to the shock (modulo possible energy degeneracy relative to powers of $\mu_\star^{-1}$ at the high orders). Because all directional derivatives are controlled, there is no need to rely on the structure emphasized two paragraphs above, namely that the energy estimates for the pure tangential derivatives (up to top order) effectively decouple from energy estimates for transversal derivatives. The good null structure mentioned above does, however, play an important role in allowing one to control error terms and prove shock formation. The structure is used in a different way: in place of the two-parameter $\mathring{\epsilon} - \mathring{\delta}$ hierarchy exploited in the present article, the error terms are controlled all the way up to the shock via a hierarchy of dispersive estimates. More precisely, one relies on the fact that *the transversal derivative of the solution decays in time at a non-integrable rate tied to the formation of a shock*, while the tangential derivatives decay at an integrable rate and generate only small error terms; see the next paragraph for more details. The availability of this decay hierarchy is intimately connected to the good null structure, and we explain it more detail two paragraphs below.

For the sake of comparison, we first provide some additional background on the behavior of solutions in the small-data dispersive regime [13,15,60]. The data are compactly supported functions on $\mathbb{R}^3$ of small Sobolev[48] size $\mathring{\epsilon}$, and the characteristics are outgoing null cones $\mathcal{C}_u$. The $\mathcal{C}_u$, which are level sets of an eikonal function u, are distorted versions of the Minkowskian cones $\{t - r = \text{const}\}$, where r is the standard radial coordinate on Minkowski spacetime. The dispersive estimates take the following form: *relative to a suitable rescaled vectorfield frame* analogous to (1.7), Ψ and its $\mathcal{C}_u$-transversal derivative decay like $\mathring{\epsilon}(1 + t)^{-1}$ while its $\mathcal{C}_u$-tangential derivatives decay at the faster rate $\mathring{\epsilon}(1 + t)^{-2}$. Moreover, relative to the geometric coordinates, related estimates hold for Ψ at slightly higher derivative levels and for the low-order derivatives of μ and the rectangular components L^i. We now describe the mechanism for the vanishing of μ (that is, for the formation of a shock) in the small-data dispersive regime. The most relevant estimate takes the form $L\mu = \mathcal{O}(\mathring{\epsilon})(1+t)^{-1} + \mathcal{O}(\mathring{\epsilon})(1+t)^{-2}$ and is analogous to the estimate (1.13) in this paper.

The term $\mathcal{O}(\mathring{\epsilon})(1 + t)^{-1}$ corresponds to the size of the $\mathcal{C}_u$-transversal derivative of the solution, while the term $\mathcal{O}(\mathring{\epsilon})(1+t)^{-2}$ is an error term that bounds the $\mathcal{C}_u$-tangential derivatives. In view of the fact that $L = \dfrac{\partial}{\partial t}$, the small-data estimate $\mu|_{t=0} \sim 1$, and the observation that $(1 + t)^{-1}$ is not integrable in t while $(1 + t)^{-2}$ is, we see that $\mu \sim 1 + \mathcal{O}(\mathring{\epsilon}) \ln(1 + t)$. Hence, μ will vanish at a time $\exp\left(|\mathcal{O}(\mathring{\epsilon})|^{-1} \right)$ for data such

---

[48] The work [60] showed that for equations of type (1.1a), the proof closes for small data verifying $(\mathring{\Psi}, \mathring{\Psi}_0) \in H_e^{25}(\Sigma_0) \times H_e^{24}(\Sigma_0)$.

that the factor $\mathcal{O}(\mathring{\epsilon})$ from the term $\mathcal{O}(\mathring{\epsilon})(1+t)^{-1}$ is negative and sufficiently bounded from below in magnitude.[49]

The derivation of the above mentioned *directionally dependent* decay rates in the small-data dispersive regime is based on a modified version of Klainerman's commuting vectorfield method [41], the modification being that the vectorfields are dynamically adapted to the characteristics through an eikonal function, much like the vectorfields $\mathscr{Z}$ that we use in the present article (as described at the start of Subsect. 1.4). As we mentioned previously, the use of an eikonal function in the context of deriving global estimates for quasilinear hyperbolic equations originated in [11]. In the small-data dispersive regime, one can exploit the decay properties mentioned above, the good null structure mentioned in the discussion surrounding equation (1.10), and various structures present in the evolution equations for μ and L^i to show that the solution behaves, relative to the rescaled frame, much like a solution to a wave equation that verifies Klainerman's classic null condition. In particular, upon commuting the wave equation $\mu \Box_{g(\Psi)} \Psi = 0$ with an appropriate spanning commutation set, one can show that the commutator error terms are quadratic and higher-order products such that *each product contains no more than one slowly decaying factor corresponding to pure $\mathcal{C}_u$-transversal differentiations*. This is an analog, for a full spanning set of commutation vectorfields, of the structure described in the second paragraph of this subsubsection for the L and Y commutation vectorfields in our case.

Moreover, in the small-data dispersive regime, relative to the rescaled frame, one can propagate the $\mathring{\epsilon}$ smallness of the solution in various Sobolev norms and prove *conditional* global existence and decay-type estimates. In particular, *without any a priori restriction on t* (such as the restriction $t < 2\mathring{\delta}_*^{-1}$ made in our work here), one can prove that the solution remains regular relative to both the geometric coordinates and the rectangular coordinates as long as μ remains strictly positive. We mention again that in contrast, in the nearly plane symmetric regime, there is no obvious structure in the equations hinting at the validity of a conditional global existence-type result in which the solution persists for all times as long as μ remains strictly positive. Rather, as we explained in Subsect. 1.2, we propagate the $\mathring{\epsilon} - \mathring{\delta}$ hierarchy only for times up to $2\mathring{\delta}_*^{-1}$, which is long enough for the shock to form.

1.5.5 Blowup in a Large-Data Regime Featuring a One-Parameter Scaling of the Data

Recently, Miao and Yu proved [52] a related shock formation result for the wave equation $-\partial_t^2 \phi + [1 + (\partial_t \phi)^2]\Delta \phi = 0$ in three spatial dimensions with data that are compactly supported in an annular region of radius ≈ 1 and thin width δ, where δ is a small positive parameter. The data's amplitude and their functional dependence on a radial coordinate are rescaled by powers of δ. Consequently, the data and their derivatives verify a hierarchy of estimates featuring various powers of δ. For example, ϕ itself has small L^∞ size $\delta^{3/2}$, its rectangular derivatives $\partial_\alpha \phi$ have L^∞ size $\delta^{1/2}$, and a certain derivative of $\partial_\alpha \phi$ that is transversal to the characteristics has *large L^∞*

---

[49] The precise behavior of the $\mathcal{O}(\mathring{\epsilon})(1+t)^{-1}$ term depends on the nonlinearities as well as the profile of the data and is connected to Friedlander's radiation field; see [23,60] for more details.

size $\delta^{-1/2}$. Due to the largeness, the blowup of the second rectangular derivatives of ϕ happens within one unit of time. The scaling of the data is closely related to the short-pulse ansatz pioneered by Christodoulou in his aforementioned proof of the formation of trapped surfaces in solutions to the Einstein-vacuum equations [16]. The main contribution of [52] was showing how to propagate the δ hierarchy estimates until the time of first shock formation. In the proof, dispersive effects are not relevant. Instead, the authors control nonlinear error terms by tracking the powers of δ associated to each factor in the product. Roughly, the error terms have a product structure, typically of the form small · large (relative to powers of δ), where the small factor often more than compensates for the large one. That is, the authors show that the overall powers of δ associated to the error term products are favorable in the sense that the smallness of δ is sufficient for controlling them. In this way, a class of large data solutions can be treated using techniques borrowed from the usual small-data framework.

Our results are related to those of [52] but are distinguished by our use of two size parameters (the parameters $\mathring{\epsilon}$ and $\mathring{\delta}$ from Subsect. 1.2 and Subsubsect. 1.4.1), which allows us to treat a set of initial conditions containing large data and, unlike [52], small data too. As we described above, a key aspect of our proof is that we can propagate the small size $\mathring{\epsilon}$ of the $\mathcal{P}_u$-tangent derivatives long enough for the shock to form, even though the transversal derivatives can be of a relatively large size $\mathring{\delta}$. To this end, we must exploit the good product/null structure in the equations, as described in Subsubsect. 1.5.4, in ways that go beyond the δ scaling structures exploited in [52].

2 Geometric Setup

In this section, we set up the geometric framework that we use for analyzing solutions. We note that most of the basic geometric insights are present in [15] and that the calculations in this section have analogs in [15]. For the reader's convenience, we re-derive the relevant results and adapt them in our setting. Similar remarks apply throughout the article (see Subsubsect. 1.5.4 for an overview of the main new ideas of the present work). We also note that for pedagogical reasons, there is some redundancy with Sect. 1.

2.1 Notational Conventions and Shorthand Notation

We start by summarizing some of our notational conventions; the precise definitions of some of the concepts referred to here are provided later in the article.

- Lowercase Greek spacetime indices α, β, etc. correspond to the rectangular space-time coordinates defined in Subsect. 2.2 and vary over 0, 1, 2. Lowercase Latin spatial indices a,b, etc. correspond to the rectangular spatial coordinates and vary over 1, 2. All lowercase Greek indices are lowered and raised with the spacetime metric g and its inverse g^{-1}, and *not with the Minkowski metric*.
- We sometimes use · to denote the natural contraction between two tensors (and thus raising or lowering indices with a metric is not needed). For example, if ξ is a spacetime one-form and V is a spacetime vectorfield, then $\xi \cdot V := \xi_\alpha V^\alpha$.

- If ξ is a one-form and V is a vectorfield, then $\xi_V := \xi_\alpha V^\alpha$. Similarly, if W is a vectorfield, then $W_V := W_\alpha V^\alpha = g(W, V)$. We use similar notation when contracting higher-order tensorfields against vectorfields. Similarly, if $\Gamma_{\alpha\kappa\beta}$ are the rectangular Christoffel symbols (2.61), then $\Gamma_{UVW} := U^\alpha V^\kappa W^\beta \Gamma_{\alpha\kappa\beta}$.
- If ξ is an $\ell_{t,u}$-tangent one-form (as defined in Subsect. 2.5), then $\xi^\#$ denotes its $\mathbf{\not g}$−dual vectorfield, where $\mathbf{\not g}$ is the Riemannian metric induced on $\ell_{t,u}$ by g. Similarly, if ξ is a symmetric type $\binom{0}{2}$ $\ell_{t,u}$-tangent tensor, then $\xi^\#$ denotes the type $\binom{1}{1}$ $\ell_{t,u}$-tangent tensor formed by raising one index with $\mathbf{\not g}^{-1}$ and $\xi^{\#\#}$ denotes the type $\binom{2}{0}$ $\ell_{t,u}$-tangent tensor formed by raising both indices with $\mathbf{\not g}^{-1}$.
- If ξ is an $\ell_{t,u}$-tangent tensor, then the norm $|\xi|$ is defined relative to the Riemannian metric $\mathbf{\not g}$, as in Def. 7.1.
- Unless otherwise indicated, all quantities in our estimates that are not explicitly under an integral are viewed as functions of the geometric coordinates (t, u, ϑ) of Def. 2.5. Unless otherwise indicated, quantities under integrals have the functional dependence established below in Def. 3.2.
- If Q_1 and Q_2 are two operators, then $[Q_1, Q_2] = Q_1 Q_2 - Q_2 Q_1$ denotes their commutator.
- $A \lesssim B$ means that there exists $C > 0$ such that $A \leq CB$.
- $A = \mathcal{O}(B)$ means that $|A| \lesssim |B|$.
- Constants such as C and c are free to vary from line to line. Explicit and implicit constants are allowed to depend in an increasing, continuous fashion on the data-size parameters $\mathring{\delta}$ and $\mathring{\delta}_*^{-1}$ from Subsect. 7.3. However, the constants can be chosen to be independent of the parameters $\mathring{\epsilon}$ and ε whenever $\mathring{\epsilon}$ and ε are sufficiently small relative to $\mathring{\delta}^{-1}$ and $\mathring{\delta}_*$.
- $\lfloor \cdot \rfloor$ and $\lceil \cdot \rceil$ respectively denote the floor and ceiling functions.

2.2 The Structure of the Equation in Rectangular Components

In this subsection, we formulate equation (1.1a) in rectangular coordinates and state our assumptions on the nonlinear terms. We use $t = x^0 \in \mathbb{R}$ to denote the time coordinate and $(x^1, x^2) \in \mathbb{R} \times \mathbb{T}$ to denote standard coordinates on Σ, where x^2 is locally defined. The vectorfields ∂_t, ∂_1, ∂_2 are globally defined. We call $\{x^\alpha\}_{\alpha=0,1,2}$ the *rectangular coordinates* because relative to them, the standard Minkowski metric on $\mathbb{R} \times \Sigma$ takes the form $m_{\mu\nu} = \mathrm{diag}(-1, 1, 1)$.

We assume that relative to the rectangular coordinates,

$$g_{\mu\nu} = g_{\mu\nu}(\Psi) := m_{\mu\nu} + g_{\mu\nu}^{(Small)}(\Psi), \qquad (\mu, \nu = 0, 1, 2), \qquad (2.1)$$

where $g_{\mu\nu}^{(Small)}(\Psi)$ is a given smooth function of Ψ with

$$g_{\mu\nu}^{(Small)}(0) = 0. \qquad (2.2)$$

Relative to the rectangular coordinates, (1.1a) takes the form

$$(g^{-1})^{\alpha\beta} \partial_\alpha \partial_\beta \Psi - (g^{-1})^{\alpha\beta} (g^{-1})^{\kappa\lambda} \Gamma_{\alpha\kappa\beta} \partial_\lambda \Psi = 0. \qquad (2.3)$$

The $\Gamma_{\alpha\kappa\beta}$ are the lowered Christoffel symbols[50] of g relative to rectangular coordinates and can be expressed as

$$\Gamma_{\alpha\kappa\beta} = \Gamma_{\alpha\kappa\beta}(\Psi, \partial\Psi) := \frac{1}{2}\left\{\partial_\alpha g_{\kappa\beta} + \partial_\beta g_{\alpha\kappa} - \partial_\kappa g_{\alpha\beta}\right\} \tag{2.4}$$

$$= \frac{1}{2}\left\{G_{\kappa\beta}\partial_\alpha\Psi + G_{\alpha\kappa}\partial_\beta\Psi - G_{\alpha\beta}\partial_\kappa\Psi\right\},$$

where

$$G_{\alpha\beta} = G_{\alpha\beta}(\Psi) := \frac{d}{d\Psi}g_{\alpha\beta}(\Psi). \tag{2.5}$$

For later use, we also define

$$G'_{\alpha\beta} = G'_{\alpha\beta}(\Psi) := \frac{d^2}{d\Psi^2}g_{\alpha\beta}(\Psi). \tag{2.6}$$

We now describe our assumptions on the tensorfield $G_{\alpha\beta}(\Psi = 0)$, which can be viewed as a 3×3 matrix with *constant entries* relative to rectangular coordinates. We could prove the existence[51] of stable shock-forming solutions whenever there exists a Minkowski-null vectorfield $L_{(Flat)}$ (that is, $m_{\alpha\beta}L^\alpha_{(Flat)}L^\beta_{(Flat)} = 0$) such that

$$G_{\alpha\beta}(\Psi = 0)L^\alpha_{(Flat)}L^\beta_{(Flat)} \neq 0. \tag{2.7}$$

The assumption (2.7) holds for most nonlinearities and is equivalent to the failure of Klainerman's classic null condition [40]. We recall that the main results that we present in this article rely on the existence of a family of plane symmetric shock-forming solutions. The existence of the family is based on the following assumption: there exists a vectorfield $L_{(Flat)} \in \text{span}\{\partial_t, \partial_1\}$ such that (2.7) holds. We may then perform a Lorentz transformation on the t, x^1 coordinates if necessary in order to put $L_{(Flat)}$ into the following form, which we assume throughout the remainder of the article:

$$L_{(Flat)} = \partial_t + \partial_1. \tag{2.8}$$

Note that under the above assumptions, LHS (2.7) is equal to the non-zero constant $G_{00}(\Psi = 0) + 2G_{01}(\Psi = 0) + G_{11}(\Psi = 0)$.

Remark 2.1 (**Genuinely nonlinear systems**). Our assumption that the vectorfield (2.8) verifies (2.7) is reminiscent of the well-known genuine nonlinearity condition

---

[50] Our Christoffel symbol index conventions are such that for vectorfields V, we have $\mathscr{D}_\alpha V^\beta = \partial_\alpha V^\beta + \Gamma_\alpha{}^\beta{}_\lambda V^\lambda$, where $\Gamma_\alpha{}^\beta{}_\lambda := (g^{-1})^{\beta\kappa}\Gamma_{\alpha\kappa\lambda}$.

[51] The condition (2.7) would be sufficient for allowing us to prove the existence of stable large-data shock-forming solutions. However, in order to handle the set of data (which includes some small data) stated in Theorem 15.1, we need the additional assumption (2.8).

for first-order strictly hyperbolic systems. In particular, for plane symmetric solutions with Ψ sufficiently small, the assumption ensures that there are quadratic Riccati-type terms[52] in the wave equation, which is the main mechanism driving the singularity formation in the 2×2 genuinely nonlinear strictly hyperbolic systems studied by Lax [42].

By rescaling the metric by the scalar function $1/(g^{-1})^{00}(\Psi)$, we may assume without loss of generality[53] that

$$(g^{-1})^{00}(\Psi) \equiv -1. \tag{2.9}$$

The assumption (2.9) simplifies many of our formulas.

Remark 2.2 In total, our assumptions on the nonlinearities imply that the term $\frac{1}{2} G_{LL} \breve{X} \Psi$ on RHS (2.62), which lies at the heart of our analysis, is sufficiently strong to drive μ to 0 in the regime under study.

2.3 Basic Constructions Involving the Eikonal Function

As we described in Subsect. 1.2, our entire work is based on an eikonal function, specifically, the solution to the hyperbolic initial value problem (1.4)–(1.5). We associate the following subsets of spacetime to u. They were depicted in Figure 2 on pg. 13.

Definition 2.1 (**Subsets of spacetime**). We define the following spacetime subsets:

$$\Sigma_{t'} := \{(t, x^1, x^2) \in \mathbb{R} \times \mathbb{R} \times \mathbb{T} \mid t = t'\}, \tag{2.10a}$$

$$\Sigma_{t'}^{u'} := \{(t, x^1, x^2) \in \mathbb{R} \times \mathbb{R} \times \mathbb{T} \mid t = t', \ 0 \le u(t, x^1, x^2) \le u'\}, \tag{2.10b}$$

$$\mathcal{P}_{u'}^{t'} := \{(t, x^1, x^2) \in \mathbb{R} \times \mathbb{R} \times \mathbb{T} \mid 0 \le t \le t', \ u(t, x^1, x^2) = u'\}, \tag{2.10c}$$

$$\ell_{t',u'} := \mathcal{P}_{u'}^{t'} \cap \Sigma_{t'}^{u'} = \{(t, x^1, x^2) \in \mathbb{R} \times \mathbb{R} \times \mathbb{T} \mid t = t', \ u(t, x^1, x^2) = u'\}, \tag{2.10d}$$

$$\mathcal{M}_{t',u'} := \cup_{u \in [0,u']} \mathcal{P}_{u}^{t'} \cap \{(t, x^1, x^2) \in \mathbb{R} \times \mathbb{R} \times \mathbb{T} \mid 0 \le t < t'\}. \tag{2.10e}$$

We refer to the Σ_t and Σ_t^u as "constant time slices," the $\mathcal{P}_u^t$ as "null hyperplanes," and the $\ell_{t,u}$ as "curves." We sometimes use the notation $\mathcal{P}_u$ in place of $\mathcal{P}_u^t$ when we are not concerned with the truncation time t. We restrict our attention to spacetime regions with $0 \le u \le U_0$, where we recall (see (1.2)) that $0 < U_0 \le 1$ is a parameter, fixed until Theorem 15.1.

---

[52] The vectorfield frame that we construct in fact leads to the cancellation of the Riccati-type terms; see the discussion just below (1.10).

[53] Technically, rescaling the metric introduces a semilinear term proportional to $(g^{-1})^{\alpha\beta}(\Psi)\partial_\alpha \Psi \partial_\beta \Psi$ in the covariant wave equation corresponding to the rescaled metric. However, our proof will show that for the solutions under study, this term makes a negligible contribution to the dynamics because it has a special null structure (it verifies the strong null condition mentioned in Remark 1.8) that is visible relative to the frame (2.19a). Hence, we ignore it for simplicity.

Remark 2.3 The constants in all of our estimates can be chosen to be independent of $U_0 \in (0, 1]$.

We associate the following gradient vectorfield to the eikonal function solution to (1.4):

$$L_{(Geo)}^{\nu} := -(g^{-1})^{\nu \alpha} \partial_\alpha u. \tag{2.11}$$

It is easy to see that $L_{(Geo)}$ is future-directed[54] with

$$g(L_{(Geo)}, L_{(Geo)}) := g_{\alpha\beta} L_{(Geo)}^{\alpha} L_{(Geo)}^{\beta} = 0, \tag{2.12}$$

that is, $L_{(Geo)}$ is g-null. Moreover, we can differentiate the eikonal equation with $\mathscr{D}^\nu := (g^{-1})^{\nu \alpha} \mathscr{D}_\alpha$ and use the torsion-free property of the connection $\mathscr{D}$ to deduce that $0 = (g^{-1})^{\alpha\beta} \mathscr{D}_\alpha u \mathscr{D}_\beta \mathscr{D}^\nu u = -\mathscr{D}^\alpha u \mathscr{D}_\alpha L_{(Geo)}^\nu = L_{(Geo)}^\alpha \mathscr{D}_\alpha L_{(Geo)}^\nu$. That is, $L_{(Geo)}$ is geodesic:

$$\mathscr{D}_{L_{(Geo)}} L_{(Geo)} = 0. \tag{2.13}$$

In addition, since $L_{(Geo)}$ is proportional to the metric dual of the one-form du, which is co-normal to the level sets $\mathcal{P}_u$ of the eikonal function, it follows that $L_{(Geo)}$ is g-orthogonal to $\mathcal{P}_u$. Hence, the $\mathcal{P}_u$ have null normals. Such hypersurfaces are known as *null hypersurfaces*. Our analysis will show that the rectangular components of $L_{(Geo)}$ blow up when the shock forms. In particular, as we described in Subsect. 1.2, the formation of a shock is equivalent to the vanishing of the following quantity μ.

Definition 2.2 (**Inverse foliation density**). Let $L_{(Geo)}^0$ be the 0 rectangular component of the vectorfield $L_{(Geo)}$ defined in (2.11). We define the inverse foliation density μ as follows:

$$\mu := \frac{-1}{(g^{-1})^{\alpha\beta} \partial_\alpha t \partial_\beta u} = \frac{-1}{(g^{-1})^{0\alpha} \partial_\alpha u} = \frac{1}{L_{(Geo)}^0}. \tag{2.14}$$

The quantity $1/\mu$ measures the density of the level sets of u relative to the constant-time hypersurfaces Σ_t. When μ becomes 0, the density becomes infinite and the level sets of u intersect. We also note that the vanishing of μ is equivalent to the blow up of $\mathscr{D}_V u$, where $V := -(g^{-1})^{0\alpha} \partial_\alpha$ is approximately equal to ∂_t in the regime under study.

In our analysis, we work with a rescaled version of $L_{(Geo)}$ that we refer to as L. Our proof reveals that the rectangular components of L remain near those of $L_{(Flat)}$ (which is defined in (2.8)) all the way up to the shock.

Definition 2.3 (**Rescaled null vectorfield**). We define the rescaled null (see (2.12)) vectorfield L as follows:

$$L := \mu L_{(Geo)}. \tag{2.15}$$

---

[54] Here and throughout, a vectorfield V is "future-directed" if its rectangular component V^0 is positive.

Definition 2.4 (**Geometric torus coordinate** ϑ **and the corresponding vectorfield** Θ). Along Σ_0^1, we define $\vartheta (t = 0, x^1, x^2) = x^2$. We extend ϑ to regions of the form $\mathcal{M}_{t,u}$ by solving the transport equation $L\vartheta = 0$ with ϑ subject to the above initial conditions along Σ_0^1.

We define $\Theta = \frac{\partial}{\partial \vartheta} := \frac{\partial}{\partial \vartheta}|_{t,u}$ to be the vectorfield corresponding to partial differentiation with respect to ϑ at fixed t and u.

Definition 2.5 (**Geometric coordinates**). We refer to (t, u, ϑ) as the geometric coordinates.

Remark 2.4 (C^1-**equivalent differential structures until shock formation**). We often identify spacetime regions of the form $\mathcal{M}_{t,U_0}$ (see (2.10e)) with the region $[0, t) \times [0, U_0] \times \mathbb{T}$ corresponding to the geometric coordinates. This identification is justified by the fact that during the classical lifespan of the solutions under consideration, the differential structure on $\mathcal{M}_{t,U_0}$ corresponding to the geometric coordinates is C^1-equivalent to the differential structure on $\mathcal{M}_{t,U_0}$ corresponding to the rectangular coordinates. The equivalence is captured by the fact that the change of variables map Υ (see Def. 2.20) from geometric to rectangular coordinates is differentiable with a differentiable inverse, until a shock forms; see Lemma 15.1 and Theorem 15.1. However, at points where μ vanishes, the rectangular derivatives of Ψ blow up (see equation (15.6) and the discussion below it), the inverse map Υ^{-1} becomes singular, and the equivalence of the differential structures breaks down as well.

2.4 Important Vectorfields, the Rescaled Frame, and the Non-rescaled Frame

In this subsection, we define some additional vectorfields that we use in our analysis and exhibit their basic properties.

Definition 2.6 (X, $\check{X}$, **and** N). We define X to be the unique vectorfield that is Σ_t-tangent, g-orthogonal to the $\ell_{t,u}$, and normalized by

$$g(L, X) = -1. \tag{2.16}$$

We define

$$\check{X} := \mu X. \tag{2.17}$$

We define

$$N := L + X. \tag{2.18}$$

Definition 2.7 (**Two frames**). We define, respectively, the rescaled frame and the non-rescaled frame as follows:

$$\{L, \check{X}, \Theta\}, \qquad \text{Rescaled frame}, \tag{2.19a}$$
$$\{L, X, \Theta\}, \qquad \text{Non-rescaled frame}. \tag{2.19b}$$

Lemma 2.1 (**Basic properties of** X, $\check{X}$, L, **and** N). *The following identities hold:*

$$Lu = 0, \qquad Lt = L^0 = 1, \tag{2.20a}$$

$$\check{X}u = 1, \qquad \check{X}t = \check{X}^0 = 0, \tag{2.20b}$$

$$g(X, X) = 1, \qquad g(\check{X}, \check{X}) = \mu^2, \tag{2.21a}$$

$$g(L, X) = -1, \qquad g(L, \check{X}) = -\mu. \tag{2.21b}$$

Moreover, relative to the geometric coordinates, we have

$$L = \frac{\partial}{\partial t}. \tag{2.22}$$

In addition, there exists an $\ell_{t,u}$-tangent vectorfield $\Xi = \xi\Theta$ (where ξ is a scalar function) such that

$$\check{X} = \frac{\partial}{\partial u} - \Xi = \frac{\partial}{\partial u} - \xi\Theta. \tag{2.23}$$

The vectorfield N defined in (2.18) is future-directed, g-orthogonal to Σ_t and is normalized by

$$g(N, N) = -1. \tag{2.24}$$

Moreover, relative to rectangular coordinates, we have (for $\nu = 0, 1, 2$):

$$N^\nu = -(g^{-1})^{0\nu}. \tag{2.25}$$

Finally, the following identities hold relative to the rectangular coordinates (for $\nu = 0, 1, 2$):

$$X_\nu = -L_\nu - \delta_\nu^0, \qquad X^\nu = -L^\nu - (g^{-1})^{0\nu}, \tag{2.26}$$

where δ_ν^0 is the standard Kronecker delta.

Proof We first prove (2.20a). We begin by using (1.4), (2.11), and (2.15) to deduce that $Lu = L^\alpha \partial_\alpha u = -\mu(g^{-1})^{\alpha\beta}\partial_\alpha u \partial_\beta u = 0$ as desired. The fact that $Lt = 1$ is a simple consequence of (2.11), (2.14), and (2.15).

We now prove (2.20b). We begin by using (2.11), (2.15), (2.16), and (2.17) to deduce that $\check{X}u = \mu X^\alpha \partial_\alpha u = -X^\alpha L_\alpha = -g(X, L) = 1$. The fact that $\check{X}t = 0$ is an immediate consequence of the fact that by construction, $\check{X}$ is Σ_t-tangent.

(2.23) then follows easily from (2.20b) and the fact that $\frac{\partial}{\partial u}$ and Θ span the tangent space of Σ_t at each point.

(2.21b) is an easy consequence of (2.16) and (2.17).

To derive the properties of N, we consider the vectorfield $V^\nu := -(g^{-1})^{0\nu}$, which is g-dual to the one-form with rectangular components $-\delta_\nu^0$ and therefore g-orthogonal to Σ_t. By (2.9), $g(V,V) = (g^{-1})^{\alpha\beta}\delta_\alpha^0\delta_\beta^0 = -1$, so V is future-directed, timelike, and unit-length. In particular, V belongs to the g-orthogonal complement of $\ell_{t,u}$, a space spanned by $\{L, X\}$. Thus, there exist scalars a, b such that $V = aL + bX$. Since $Vt = V^0 = 1 = Lt = L^0$ and since $Xt = X^0 = 0$, we find that $a = 1$, that is, that $V = L + bX$. Taking the inner product of this expression with X and using (2.21b) together with the fact that X is Σ_t-tangent (and hence g-orthogonal to V), we find that $0 = -1 + bg(X, X)$. Similarly, using (2.21b), the fact that L is null, and the previous identity, we compute that $-1 = g(V,V) = -2b + b^2 g(X,X) = -2b + b = -b$. It follows that $V = L + X := N$ and $g(X, X) = 1$. We have thus obtained the properties of N and obtained (2.24), (2.25), and the first identity in (2.21a). The second identity in (2.21a) follows easily from the first one and definition (2.17). (2.26) follows from the definition (2.18) of N and from lowering the indices in (2.25) with g.

To obtain (2.22), we simply use (2.20a) and the fact that by construction, we have $L\vartheta = 0$ (see Def. 2.4). $\qquad\qquad\qquad\qquad\qquad\qquad\qquad\qquad\qquad\qquad\qquad\qquad\qquad\square$

2.5 Projection Tensorfields, $G_{(Frame)}$, and Projected Lie Derivatives

Many of our constructions involve projections onto Σ_t and $\ell_{t,u}$.

Definition 2.8 (**Projection tensorfields**). We define the Σ_t projection tensorfield $\underline{\Pi}$ and the $\ell_{t,u}$ projection tensorfield $\slashed{\Pi}$ relative to rectangular coordinates as follows:

$$\underline{\Pi}_\nu{}^\mu := \delta_\nu{}^\mu - N_\nu N^\mu = \delta_\nu{}^\mu + \delta_\nu{}^0 L^\mu + \delta_\nu{}^0 X^\mu, \tag{2.27a}$$

$$\slashed{\Pi}_\nu{}^\mu := \delta_\nu{}^\mu + X_\nu L^\mu + L_\nu(L^\mu + X^\mu) = \delta_\nu{}^\mu - \delta_\nu{}^0 L^\mu + L_\nu X^\mu. \tag{2.27b}$$

Definition 2.9 (**Projections of tensorfields**). Given any spacetime tensorfield ξ, we define its Σ_t projection $\underline{\Pi}\xi$ and its $\ell_{t,u}$ projection $\slashed{\Pi}\xi$ as follows:

$$(\underline{\Pi}\xi)^{\mu_1\cdots\mu_m}_{\nu_1\cdots\nu_n} := \underline{\Pi}^{\mu_1}_{\tilde{\mu}_1} \cdots \underline{\Pi}^{\mu_m}_{\tilde{\mu}_m} \underline{\Pi}^{\tilde{\nu}_1}_{\nu_1} \cdots \underline{\Pi}^{\tilde{\nu}_n}_{\nu_n} \xi^{\tilde{\mu}_1\cdots\tilde{\mu}_m}_{\tilde{\nu}_1\cdots\tilde{\nu}_n}, \tag{2.28a}$$

$$(\slashed{\Pi}\xi)^{\mu_1\cdots\mu_m}_{\nu_1\cdots\nu_n} := \slashed{\Pi}^{\mu_1}_{\tilde{\mu}_1} \cdots \slashed{\Pi}^{\mu_m}_{\tilde{\mu}_m} \slashed{\Pi}^{\tilde{\nu}_1}_{\nu_1} \cdots \slashed{\Pi}^{\tilde{\nu}_n}_{\nu_n} \xi^{\tilde{\mu}_1\cdots\tilde{\mu}_m}_{\tilde{\nu}_1\cdots\tilde{\nu}_n}. \tag{2.28b}$$

We say that a spacetime tensorfield ξ is Σ_t-tangent (respectively $\ell_{t,u}$-tangent) if $\underline{\Pi}\xi = \xi$ (respectively if $\slashed{\Pi}\xi = \xi$). Alternatively, we say that ξ is a Σ_t tensor (respectively $\ell_{t,u}$ tensor).

Definition 2.10 ($\ell_{t,u}$ **projection notation**). If ξ is a spacetime tensor, then we define

$$\slashed{\xi} := \slashed{\Pi}\xi. \tag{2.29}$$

If ξ is a symmetric type $\binom{0}{2}$ spacetime tensor and V is a spacetime vectorfield, then we define

$$\slashed{\xi}_V := \slashed{\Pi}(\xi_V), \tag{2.30}$$

where ξ_V is the spacetime one-form with rectangular components $\xi_{\alpha\nu} V^\alpha$, ($\nu = 0, 1, 2$).

We often refer to the following arrays of $\ell_{t,u}$-tangent tensorfields in our analysis.

Definition 2.11 (**Components of G and G' relative to the non-rescaled frame**). We define

$$G_{(Frame)} := \left(G_{LL}, G_{LX}, G_{XX}, \slashed{G}_L, \slashed{G}_X, \slashed{G} \right)$$

to be the array of components of the tensorfield (2.5) relative to the non-rescaled frame (2.19b). Similarly, we define $G'_{(Frame)}$ to be the analogous array for the tensorfield (2.6).

Definition 2.12 (**Lie derivatives**). If V^μ is a spacetime vectorfield and $\xi_{\nu_1 \cdots \nu_n}^{\mu_1 \cdots \mu_m}$ is a type $\binom{m}{n}$ spacetime tensorfield, then relative to the arbitrary coordinates,[55] the Lie derivative of ξ with respect to V is the type $\binom{m}{n}$ spacetime tensorfield $\mathcal{L}_V \xi$ with the following components:

$$\mathcal{L}_V \xi_{\nu_1 \cdots \nu_n}^{\mu_1 \cdots \mu_m} := V^\alpha \partial_\alpha \xi_{\nu_1 \cdots \nu_n}^{\mu_1 \cdots \mu_m} - \sum_{a=1}^{m} \xi_{\nu_1 \cdots \nu_n}^{\mu_1 \cdots \mu_{a-1} \alpha \mu_{a+1} \cdots \mu_m} \partial_\alpha V^{\mu_a}$$

$$+ \sum_{b=1}^{n} \xi_{\nu_1 \cdots \nu_{b-1} \alpha \nu_{b+1} \cdots \nu_n}^{\mu_1 \cdots \mu_m} \partial_{\nu_b} V^\alpha. \tag{2.31}$$

In addition, when V and W are both vectorfields, we often use the standard Lie bracket notation $[V, W] := \mathcal{L}_V W$.

It is a standard fact that Lie differentiation obeys the Leibniz rule as well as the Jacobi-type identity

$$\mathcal{L}_V \mathcal{L}_W \xi - \mathcal{L}_W \mathcal{L}_V \xi = \mathcal{L}_{[V,W]} \xi = \mathcal{L}_{\mathcal{L}_V W} \xi. \tag{2.32}$$

Moreover, it is a standard fact based on the torsion-free property of $\mathcal{D}$ that RHS (2.31) is invariant upon replacing all coordinate partial derivatives ∂ with covariant derivatives $\mathcal{D}$.

In our analysis, we will apply the Leibniz rule for Lie derivatives to contractions of tensor products of $\ell_{t,u}$-tensorfields. Due in part to the special properties (such as (2.59)) of the vectorfields that we use to differentiate, the non-$\ell_{t,u}$ components of the differentiated factor in the products typically cancel. This motivates the following definition.

---

[55] It is well-known that RHS (2.31) is coordinate invariant.

Definition 2.13 ($\ell_{t,u}$ and Σ_t-**projected Lie derivatives**). Given a tensorfield ξ and a vectorfield V, we define the Σ_t-projected Lie derivative $\underline{\mathcal{L}}_V \xi$ of ξ and the $\ell_{t,u}$-projected Lie derivative $\mathcal{L}\!\!\!/_V \xi$ of ξ as follows:

$$\underline{\mathcal{L}}_V \xi := \underline{\Pi}\mathcal{L}_V \xi, \qquad \mathcal{L}\!\!\!/_V \xi := \Pi\!\!\!/\mathcal{L}_V \xi. \tag{2.33}$$

Definition 2.14 (**Geometric torus differential**). If f is a scalar function on $\ell_{t,u}$, then $d\!\!\!/f := \nabla\!\!\!\!/ f = \Pi\!\!\!/ \mathscr{D} f$, where $\mathscr{D} f$ is the gradient one-form associated to f.

The above definition avoids potentially confusing notation such as $\nabla\!\!\!\!/ L^i$ by replacing it with $d\!\!\!/L^i$; the latter notation clarifies that L^i is to be viewed as a scalar rectangular component function.

Lemma 2.2 (**Sometimes $\ell_{t,u}$ projection is redundant**). *Let ξ be a type $\binom{0}{n}$ spacetime tensorfield. Then $\underline{\mathcal{L}}_N \xi = \underline{\mathcal{L}}_N(\underline{\Pi}\xi)$ and $\mathcal{L}\!\!\!/_L \xi = \mathcal{L}\!\!\!/_L \xi\!\!\!/$.*

Proof To prove $\underline{\mathcal{L}}_N \xi = \underline{\mathcal{L}}_N(\underline{\Pi}\xi)$, we will show that $\underline{\Pi}_\mu{}^\alpha \mathcal{L}_N \underline{\Pi}_\alpha{}^\nu = 0$. Once we have shown this, we combine this identity with the Leibniz rule to deduce the following identity, where the first term on the RHS is exact and the second one schematic: $\underline{\mathcal{L}}_N(\underline{\Pi}\xi) = \underline{\mathcal{L}}_N \xi + \underline{\Pi} \cdot \mathcal{L}_N \underline{\Pi} \cdot \xi$. A careful analysis of the schematic term shows that it always contains a factor of the form $\underline{\Pi}_\mu{}^\alpha \mathcal{L}_N \underline{\Pi}_\alpha{}^\nu$, which vanishes. We have proved the desired result.

We now show that $\underline{\Pi}_\mu{}^\alpha \mathcal{L}_N \underline{\Pi}_\alpha{}^\nu = 0$. Actually, we prove a stronger result: $\mathcal{L}_N \underline{\Pi}_\nu{}^\mu = 0$. Since $\mathcal{L}_N \delta_\nu{}^\mu = 0$ and since $\mathcal{L}_N N^\mu = 0$, we see from (2.27a) that it suffices to prove that $\mathcal{L}_N N_\nu = 0$. The LHS of the previous identity is equal to the one-form $(\mathcal{L}_N g_{\nu\alpha})N^\alpha$. To show that it vanishes, we separately show that its N and Σ_t-tangent components vanish. For the former, we use the identity $g(N, N) = -1$ and the Leibniz rule for Lie derivatives to deduce the desired result $(\mathcal{L}_N g_{\nu\alpha})N^\alpha N^\nu = 0$. It remains only for us to show that $(\mathcal{L}_N g)(V, N) = 0$ for Σ_t-tangent vectorfields V. Using that $Vt = 0$, we compute that $(\mathcal{L}_N V)t = N(Vt) - V(Nt) = -V(1) = 0$. It follows that $\mathcal{L}_N V$ is also Σ_t-tangent and hence $g(\mathcal{L}_N V, N) = 0$. By the Leibniz rule for Lie derivatives, we conclude that $0 = N(g(V, N)) = (\mathcal{L}_N g)(V, N)$ as desired.

The proof that $\mathcal{L}\!\!\!/_L \xi = \mathcal{L}\!\!\!/_L \xi\!\!\!/$ is similar and reduces to showing that $\Pi\!\!\!/_\nu{}^\alpha \mathcal{L}_L \Pi\!\!\!/_\alpha{}^\mu = 0$. From (2.27b), we see that it further reduces to showing that $\Pi\!\!\!/_\nu{}^\alpha \mathcal{L}_L \{X_\alpha L^\mu + L_\alpha (L^\mu + X^\mu)\} = 0$. Since $\Pi\!\!\!/$ annihilates L and X, we need only to confirm that $\Pi\!\!\!/_\nu{}^\alpha \mathcal{L}_L (X_\alpha + L_\alpha) = 0$, which is equivalent to $\Pi\!\!\!/_\nu{}^\alpha \mathcal{L}_L N_\alpha = 0$. Since Θ spans the tangent space of $\ell_{t,u}$, it suffices to show that $\Theta^\alpha \cdot \mathcal{L}_L N_\alpha = 0$. This latter identity follows easily from differentiating the identity $\Theta^\alpha N_\alpha = 0$ with $\mathcal{L}_L$ and using the identity $\mathcal{L}_L \Theta = 0$ (since $L = \frac{\partial}{\partial t}$ and $\Theta = \frac{\partial}{\partial \vartheta}$). $\qquad\square$

2.6 First and Second Fundamental Forms and Covariant Differential Operators

Definition 2.15 (**First fundamental forms**). We define the first fundamental form $\underline{g}$ of Σ_t and the first fundamental form $g\!\!\!/$ of $\ell_{t,u}$ as follows:

$$\underline{g} := \underline{\Pi}g, \qquad g\!\!\!/ := \Pi\!\!\!/g. \tag{2.34}$$

We define the corresponding inverse first fundamental forms by raising the indices with g^{-1}:

$$(\underline{g}^{-1})^{\mu\nu} := (g^{-1})^{\mu\alpha}(g^{-1})^{\nu\beta}\underline{g}_{\alpha\beta}, \qquad (\mathring{g}^{-1})^{\mu\nu} := (g^{-1})^{\mu\alpha}(g^{-1})^{\nu\beta}\mathring{g}_{\alpha\beta}. \qquad (2.35)$$

Note that $\underline{g}$ is the Riemannian metric on Σ_t induced by g and that $\mathring{g}$ is the Riemannian metric on $\ell_{t,u}$ induced by g. Moreover, a straightforward calculation shows that $(\underline{g}^{-1})^{\mu\alpha}\underline{g}_{\alpha\nu} = \underline{\Pi}_\nu{}^\mu$ and $(\mathring{g}^{-1})^{\mu\alpha}\mathring{g}_{\alpha\nu} = \slashed{\Pi}_\nu{}^\mu$.

Remark 2.5 Because the $\ell_{t,u}$ are one-dimensional manifolds, it follows that symmetric type $\binom{0}{2}$ $\ell_{t,u}$-tangent tensorfields ξ satisfy $\xi = (\text{tr}_{\mathring{g}}\xi)\mathring{g}$, where $\text{tr}_{\mathring{g}}\xi := \mathring{g}^{-1}\cdot\xi$. This simple fact simplifies some of our formulas compared to the case of higher spatial dimensions. In the remainder of the article, we often use this fact without explicitly mentioning it. Moreover, as we described in Remark 1.11, this fact is the reason that we do not need to derive elliptic estimates in two spatial dimensions.

Definition 2.16 (**Differential operators associated to the metrics**). We use the following notation for various differential operators associated to the spacetime metric g, the Minkowski metric m, and the Riemannian metric $\mathring{g}$ induced on the $\ell_{t,u}$.

- $\mathscr{D}$ denotes the Levi-Civita connection of the spacetime metric g.
- $\slashed{\nabla}$ denotes the Levi-Civita connection of $\mathring{g}$.
- If ξ is an $\ell_{t,u}$-tangent one-form, then $\slashed{\text{div}}\,\xi$ is the scalar-valued function $\slashed{\text{div}}\,\xi := \mathring{g}^{-1}\cdot\slashed{\nabla}\xi$.
- Similarly, if V is an $\ell_{t,u}$-tangent vectorfield, then $\slashed{\text{div}}V := \mathring{g}^{-1}\cdot\slashed{\nabla}V_\flat$, where $V_\flat$ is the one-form $\mathring{g}$-dual to V.
- If ξ is a symmetric type $\binom{0}{2}$ $\ell_{t,u}$-tangent tensorfield, then $\slashed{\text{div}}\,\xi$ is the $\ell_{t,u}$-tangent one-form $\slashed{\text{div}}\,\xi := \mathring{g}^{-1}\cdot\slashed{\nabla}\xi$, where the two contraction indices in $\slashed{\nabla}\xi$ correspond to the operator $\slashed{\nabla}$ and the first index of ξ.

Definition 2.17 (**Covariant wave operators and Laplacians**). We use the following standard notation.

- $\Box_g := (g^{-1})^{\alpha\beta}\mathscr{D}^2_{\alpha\beta}$ denotes the covariant wave operator corresponding to the spacetime metric g.
- $\slashed{\Delta} := \mathring{g}^{-1}\cdot\slashed{\nabla}^2$ denotes the covariant Laplacian corresponding to $\mathring{g}$.

Definition 2.18 (**Second fundamental forms**). We define the second fundamental form k of Σ_t, which is a symmetric type $\binom{0}{2}$ Σ_t-tangent tensorfield, by

$$k := \frac{1}{2}\mathcal{L}_N\underline{g}. \qquad (2.36)$$

We define the null second fundamental form χ of $\ell_{t,u}$, which is a symmetric type $\binom{0}{2}$ $\ell_{t,u}$-tangent tensorfield, by

$$\chi := \frac{1}{2}\slashed{\mathcal{L}}_L\mathring{g}. \qquad (2.37)$$

From Lemma 2.2, we see that the following alternate expressions hold:

$$k = \frac{1}{2}\underline{\mathcal{L}}_N g, \qquad \chi = \frac{1}{2}\mathcal{L}_L g. \tag{2.38}$$

We now provide some identities that we use later.

Lemma 2.3 (**Alternate expressions for the second fundamental forms**). *We have the following identities:*

$$\chi_{\Theta\Theta} = g(\mathscr{D}_\Theta L, \Theta), \tag{2.39a}$$

$$k\!\!\!/_{X\Theta} = g(\mathscr{D}_\Theta L, X). \tag{2.39b}$$

Proof We prove only (2.39b) since the proof of (2.39a) is similar. Using (2.38), we compute that $2k\!\!\!/_{X\Theta} = (\underline{\mathcal{L}}_N g)_{X\Theta} = (\mathcal{L}_N g)_{X\Theta} = g(\mathscr{D}_X N, \Theta) + g(\mathscr{D}_\Theta N, X)$. Since $g(X, X) = 1$ and $N = L + X$, we see that $g(\mathscr{D}_\Theta N, X) = g(\mathscr{D}_\Theta L, X)$. Thus, to complete the proof, we need only to show that $g(\mathscr{D}_X N, \Theta) = g(\mathscr{D}_\Theta L, X)$. To proceed, we note that since $g(N, X) = 0$ and $g(X, X) = 1$, we have $g(\mathscr{D}_\Theta N, X) = -g(\mathscr{D}_\Theta X, N) = -g(\mathscr{D}_\Theta X, L)$. Then since $g(X, L) = -1$, we conclude that $-g(\mathscr{D}_\Theta X, L) = g(\mathscr{D}_\Theta L, X)$ as desired. □

2.7 Expressions for the Metrics

In this subsection, we decompose g relative to the non-rescaled frame and relative to the geometric coordinates. We then provide expressions for various forms relative to the geometric coordinates and for the change of variables map from geometric to rectangular coordinates.

Lemma 2.4 (**Expressions for g and g^{-1} in terms of the non-rescaled frame**). *We have the following identities:*

$$g_{\mu\nu} = -L_\mu L_\nu - (L_\mu X_\nu + X_\mu L_\nu) + g\!\!\!/_{\mu\nu}, \tag{2.40a}$$

$$(g^{-1})^{\mu\nu} = -L^\mu L^\nu - (L^\mu X^\nu + X^\mu L^\nu) + (g\!\!\!/^{-1})^{\mu\nu}. \tag{2.40b}$$

Proof It suffices to prove (2.40a) since (2.40b) then follows from raising the indices of (2.40a) with g^{-1}.

To verify the formula (2.40a), we contract each side against the rectangular coordinates of pairs of elements of the frame $\{L, X, \Theta\}$ and check that both sides agree. This of course requires that we know the inner products of all pairs of elements of the frame, some of which follow from the basic properties of the frame vectorfields, and some of which were established in Lemma 2.1. As an example, we note that contracting the LHS against $L^\mu \Theta^\nu$ yields $g(L, \Theta) = 0$, while contracting the RHS yields $-g(L, L)g(L, \Theta) - g(L, L)g(X, \Theta) - g(X, L)g(L, \Theta) + g\!\!\!/(L, \Theta) = 0 + 0 + 0 + 0 = 0$ as desired. As a second example, we note that contracting the LHS against $L^\mu X^\nu$ yields $g(L, X) = -1$, while contracting the RHS yields

$-g(L, L)g(L, X) - g(L, L)g(X, X) - g(X, L)g(L, X) + g\!\!\!/(L, X) = 0 + 0 - 1 + 0 = -1$ as desired. $\qquad\square$

The following scalar function captures the $\ell_{t,u}$ part of g.

Definition 2.19 (**The metric component** υ). We define the scalar function $\upsilon > 0$ by

$$\upsilon^2 := g(\Theta, \Theta) = g\!\!\!/(\Theta, \Theta). \tag{2.41}$$

It follows that relative to the geometric coordinates, we have

$$g\!\!\!/^{-1} = \upsilon^{-2}\Theta \otimes \Theta. \tag{2.42}$$

We now express g relative to the geometric coordinates.

Lemma 2.5 (**Expressions for** g **and** g^{-1} **in terms of the geometric coordinate frame**). *Relative to the geometric coordinate* (t, u, ϑ), *we have*

$$g = -2\mu dt \otimes du + \mu^2 du \otimes du + \upsilon^2(d\vartheta + \xi du) \otimes (d\vartheta + \xi du), \tag{2.43}$$

$$g^{-1} = -\frac{\partial}{\partial t} \otimes \frac{\partial}{\partial t} - \mu^{-1}\frac{\partial}{\partial t} \otimes \frac{\partial}{\partial u} - \mu^{-1}\frac{\partial}{\partial u} \otimes \frac{\partial}{\partial t} - \mu^{-1}\xi\frac{\partial}{\partial t} \otimes \Theta$$

$$- \mu^{-1}\xi\Theta \otimes \frac{\partial}{\partial t} + \upsilon^{-2}\Theta \otimes \Theta. \tag{2.44}$$

The scalar functions ξ *and* υ *from above are defined respectively in* (2.23) *and* (2.41).

Proof We recall that by Lemma 2.1 and (2.42), we have $L = \frac{\partial}{\partial t}$, and $\mu X = \check{X} = \frac{\partial}{\partial u} - \xi\Theta$, and $g\!\!\!/^{-1} = \upsilon^{-2}\frac{\partial}{\partial \vartheta} \otimes \frac{\partial}{\partial \vartheta}$. Moreover, by (2.40b), we have $g^{-1} = -L \otimes L - L \otimes X - X \otimes L + g\!\!\!/^{-1}$. Combining these identities, we easily conclude (2.44). (2.43) then follows from (2.44) as a simple linear algebra exercise (just compute the inverse of the 3×3 matrix corresponding to (2.44)). $\qquad\square$

We now provide expressions for the geometric volume form factors of g and $\underline{g}$.

Corollary 2.6 (**The geometric volume form factors of** g **and** $\underline{g}$). *The following identity is verified by the spacetime metric* g:

$$|\det g| = \mu^2\upsilon^2, \tag{2.45}$$

where the determinant on the LHS is taken relative to the geometric coordinates (t, u, ϑ).

Furthermore, the following identity is verified by the first fundamental form $\underline{g}$ *of* $\Sigma_t^{U_0}$:

$$\det\underline{g}|_{\Sigma_t^{U_0}} = \mu^2\upsilon^2, \tag{2.46}$$

where the determinant on the LHS is taken relative to the geometric coordinates (u, ϑ) *induced on* $\Sigma_t^{U_0}$.

Proof Equation (2.45) follows easily from computing the determinant of (2.43).

Next, we note that (2.43) implies that $\underline{g} = \mu^2 du^2 + \upsilon^2(d\vartheta + \xi du)(d\vartheta + \xi du)$. A simple calculation then yields (2.46).   □

Definition 2.20 We define $\Upsilon : [0, T) \times [0, U_0] \times \mathbb{T} \to \mathcal{M}_{T,U_0}$, $\Upsilon(t, u, \vartheta) := (t, x^1, x^2)$, to be the change of variables map from geometric to rectangular coordinates.

Lemma 2.7 (**Basic properties of the change of variables map**). *We have the following expression for the Jacobian of Υ:*

$$\frac{\partial \Upsilon}{\partial(t, u, \vartheta)} := \frac{\partial(x^0, x^1, x^2)}{\partial(t, u, \vartheta)} = \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 0 & 0 \\ L^1 & \check{X}^1 + \Xi^1 & \Theta^1 \\ L^2 & \check{X}^2 + \Xi^2 & \Theta^2 \end{pmatrix}. \qquad (2.47)$$

Moreover, the Jacobian determinant of Υ can be expressed as

$$\det \frac{\partial(x^0, x^1, x^2)}{\partial(t, u, \vartheta)} = \mu(\det \underline{g}_{ij})^{-1/2}\upsilon, \qquad (2.48)$$

where υ is the metric component from Def. 2.19 and $(\det \underline{g}_{ij})^{-1/2}$ is a smooth function of Ψ in a neighborhood of 0 with $(\det \underline{g}_{ij})^{-1/2}(\Psi = 0) = 1$. In (2.48), $\underline{g}$ is viewed as the Riemannian metric on $\Sigma_t^{U_0}$ defined by (2.34) and $\det \underline{g}_{ij}$ is the determinant of the corresponding 2×2 matrix of components of $\underline{g}$ relative to the rectangular spatial coordinates.

Proof Since $\frac{\partial}{\partial t} = L$, first column of the matrix on RHS (2.47) is by definition $(Lx^0, Lx^1, Lx^2)^\top = (1, L^1, L^2)^\top$, where $\top$ denotes the transpose operator and we have used (2.20a). The second column is $(\frac{\partial}{\partial u}x^0, \frac{\partial}{\partial u}x^1, \frac{\partial}{\partial u}x^2)^\top$, and to obtain the form stated on RHS (2.47), we use (2.23). The third column is $(\Theta x^0, \Theta x^1, \Theta x^2)^\top$, and to obtain the stated form, we use the fact that $\Theta x^0 = \Theta t = 0$ (since Θ is Σ_t-tangent).

To obtain (2.48), we first observe that the determinant of the RHS is equal to the determinant of the 2×2 lower right block. Moreover, since Ξ and Θ are parallel, we can assume that $\Xi \equiv 0$. Also recalling that $\check{X} = \mu X$, we see that the determinant of interest is equal to $\mu \det N$, where $N := \begin{pmatrix} X^1 & \Theta^1 \\ X^2 & \Theta^2 \end{pmatrix}$. Next we consider the 2×2 matrix $M := \begin{pmatrix} g(X, X) & g(X, \Theta) \\ g(\Theta, X) & g(\Theta, \Theta) \end{pmatrix} = \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 0 \\ 0 & \upsilon^2 \end{pmatrix}$. On the one hand, we clearly have $\det M = \upsilon^2$. On the other hand, we have the matrix identity $M = N^\top \cdot \underline{g} \cdot N$ (where $\underline{g}$ is viewed as a 2×2 matrix expressed relative to the spatial rectangular coordinates), which implies that $\det M = \det \underline{g}(\det N)^2$. Combining these identities, we conclude (2.48). Finally, we note that since $\underline{g}_{ij} = \delta_{ij} + f(\Psi)\Psi$ with f a tensor depending smoothly on Ψ, we easily conclude that $(\det \underline{g}_{ij})^{-1/2}$ is a smooth function of Ψ in a neighborhood of 0 with $(\det \underline{g}_{ij})^{-1/2}(\Psi = 0) = 1$.   □

2.8 Commutation Vectorfields

To obtain higher-order estimates for Ψ and the eikonal function quantities along $\ell_{t,u}$, we commute various evolution equations with an $\ell_{t,u}$-tangent vectorfield. A natural candidate commutator is the geometric coordinate partial derivative vectorfield Θ, which solves the transport equation $\mathcal{L}_L \Theta = 0$. In terms of the rectangular component functions, the transport equation reads $L\Theta^i = \Theta \cdot \displaystyle{\not}d L^i$ and thus Θ^i is one degree less differentiable than L^i in directions transversal to L. This loss of a derivative introduces technical complications into the analysis that have no obvious resolution. To circumvent this difficulty, we instead commute with the $\ell_{t,u}$-tangent vectorfield Y, obtained by projecting a rectangular coordinate vectorfield $Y_{(Flat)}$ onto the $\ell_{t,u}$. The identity (2.26) and Lemma 2.8 below together show that unlike Θ, the rectangular components Y^i have the same degree of differentiability as Ψ and L^i. Another advantage of using the commutator Y is that its deformation tensor structure allows us to derive our high-order energy estimates without commuting the wave equation with the transversal vectorfield $\check{X}$ at high orders (see Def. 13.1 and Prop. 14.1). We note here that at first glance, the top-order derivatives of the deformation tensor of Y that appear in the top-order wave equation energy estimates seem to lose derivatives relative to Ψ. However, we are able to overcome this difficulty by working with modified quantities, which we construct in Sect. 6.

Definition 2.21 (**The vectorfields $Y_{(Flat)}$ and Y**). We define the rectangular components of the Σ_t-tangent vectorfields $Y_{(Flat)}$ and Y as follows ($i = 1, 2$):

$$Y_{(Flat)}^i := \delta_2^i, \tag{2.49}$$

$$Y^i := {\not}\Pi_a^{\ i} Y_{(Flat)}^a = {\not}\Pi_2^{\ i}, \tag{2.50}$$

where ${\not}\Pi$ is the $\ell_{t,u}$ projection tensorfield defined in (2.27b).

To prove our main theorem, we commute the equations with the elements of the following set of vectorfields.

Definition 2.22 (**Commutation vectorfields**). We define the commutation set $\mathscr{Z}$ as follows:

$$\mathscr{Z} := \{L, \check{X}, Y\}, \tag{2.51}$$

where L, $\check{X}$, and Y are respectively defined by (2.15), (2.17), and (2.50).
We define the $\mathcal{P}_u$-tangent commutation set $\mathscr{P}$ as follows:

$$\mathscr{P} := \{L, Y\}. \tag{2.52}$$

The rectangular spatial components of L, X, and Y deviate from their flat values by a small amount captured in the following definition.

Definition 2.23 (**Perturbed part of various vectorfields**). For $i = 1, 2$, we define the following scalar functions:

$$L^i_{(Small)} := L^i - \delta^i_1, \quad X^i_{(Small)} := X^i + \delta^i_1, \quad Y^i_{(Small)} := Y^i - \delta^i_2. \quad (2.53)$$

The vectorfields L, X, and Y in (2.53) are defined in Defs. 2.3, 2.6, and 2.21.

Remark 2.6 From (2.1), (2.2), (2.26), and (2.53), we have that $X^i_{(Small)} = -L^i_{(Small)} - (g^{-1})^{0i}$, where $(g^{-1})^{0i}(\Psi = 0) = 0$. We will use this simple fact later on.

In the next lemma, we characterize the discrepancy between $Y_{(Flat)}$ and Y.

Lemma 2.8 (**Decomposition of** $Y_{(Flat)}$). *We can decompose* $Y_{(Flat)}$ *into an* $\ell_{t,u}$*-tangent vectorfield and a vectorfield parallel to X as follows: since Y is $\ell_{t,u}$-tangent, there exists a scalar function ρ such that*

$$Y^i_{(Flat)} = Y^i + \rho X^i, \quad (2.54a)$$

$$Y^i_{(Small)} = -\rho X^i. \quad (2.54b)$$

Moreover, we have

$$\rho = g(Y_{(Flat)}, X) = g_{ab} Y^a_{(Flat)} X^b = g_{2a} X^a = g^{(Small)}_{21} X^1 - g_{22} X^2_{(Small)}. \quad (2.55)$$

Proof The existence of the decomposition (2.54a) follows from the fact that by construction, $Y_{(Flat)}$ and Y differ only by a vectorfield that is parallel to X (because the $\ell_{t,u}$ projection tensorfield $\not{\Pi}$ annihilates the X component of the Σ_t-tangent vectorfield $Y_{(Flat)}$ while preserving its $\ell_{t,u}$-tangent component).

The expression (2.54b) then follows from definition (2.53) and (2.54a).

To obtain (2.55), we contract (2.54a) against X_i and use (2.1)–(2.2), the identities $Y^a X_a = 0$ and $X^a X_a = 1$, and definition (2.53) $\square$

2.9 Deformation Tensors and Basic Vectorfield Commutator Properties

In this subsection, we start by recalling the standard definition of the deformation tensor of a vectorfield. We then exhibit some basic properties enjoyed by the Lie derivatives of various vectorfields.

Definition 2.24 (**Deformation tensor of a vectorfield** V). If V is a spacetime vectorfield, then its deformation tensor $^{(V)}\pi$ (relative to the spacetime metric g) is the symmetric type $\binom{0}{2}$ spacetime tensorfield

$$^{(V)}\pi_{\alpha\beta} := \mathcal{L}_V g_{\alpha\beta} = \mathscr{D}_\alpha V_\beta + \mathscr{D}_\beta V_\alpha, \quad (2.56)$$

where the last equality in (2.56) is a well-known consequence of (2.31) and the torsion-free property of the connection $\mathscr{D}$.

Lemma 2.9 (**Basic vectorfield commutator properties**). *The vectorfields* $[L, \check{X}]$, $[L, Y]$, *and* $[\check{X}, Y]$ *are* $\ell_{t,u}$*- tangent, and the following identities hold:*

$$[L, \check{X}] = {}^{(\check{X})}\!\not{\pi}_L^{\#}, \qquad [L, Y] = {}^{(Y)}\!\not{\pi}_L^{\#}, \qquad [\check{X}, Y] = {}^{(Y)}\!\not{\pi}_{\check{X}}^{\#}. \tag{2.57}$$

Furthermore, if $Z \in \mathscr{Z}$*, then*

$$\mathcal{L}_Z \not{g} = {}^{(Z)}\!\not{\pi}, \qquad \mathcal{L}_Z \not{g}^{-1} = -{}^{(Z)}\!\not{\pi}^{\#\#}. \tag{2.58}$$

Finally, if V *is an* $\ell_{t,u}$*-tangent vectorfield, then*

$$[L, V] \text{ and } [\check{X}, V] \text{ are } \ell_{t,u} - \text{tangent.} \tag{2.59}$$

Proof We first prove (2.59). We use the identities $Lu = 0$ and $Lt = 1$ to compute that $[L, V]t = LVt - VLt = L0 - V1 = 0$ and $[L, V]u = LVu - VLu = L0 - V0 = 0$. Since $[L, V]$ annihilates t and u, it must be $\ell_{t,u}$-tangent as desired. A similar argument based on the identities $\check{X}u = 1$ and $\check{X}t = 0$ yields that $[\check{X}, V]$ is $\ell_{t,u}$-tangent.

We now prove (2.57). Using the arguments from the previous paragraph, we easily deduce that the left-hand and right-hand sides of the identities are vectorfields that annihilate the function t and are therefore Σ_t-tangent. Hence, it suffices to show that the inner products of the two sides of (2.57) with $\check{X}$ are equal and that the same holds for inner products with Y. We give the details only in the case of the last identity $[\check{X}, Y] = {}^{(Y)}\!\not{\pi}_{\check{X}}^{\#}$ since the other two can be proved similarly. First, we note that the inner product of $\check{X}$ and ${}^{(Y)}\!\not{\pi}_{\check{X}}^{\#}$ is trivially 0. Moreover, since we showed in the first paragraph that $[\check{X}, Y]$ is $\ell_{t,u}$-tangent, we conclude that $g([\check{X}, Y], \check{X}) = 0$ as desired. We now show that the inner products of Y and the two sides of the last identity in (2.57) are equal. Using again the torsion-free property and the fact that $g(\check{X}, Y) = 0$, we compute that $g([\check{X}, Y], Y) = g(\mathscr{D}_{\check{X}} Y, Y) - g(\mathscr{D}_Y \check{X}, Y) = g(\mathscr{D}_{\check{X}} Y, Y) + g(\mathscr{D}_Y Y, \check{X})$. The RHS of this identity is equal to the inner product of the RHS of the last identity in (2.57) with Y as desired.

To prove (2.58) for $\mathcal{L}_Z \not{g}$, we apply $\mathcal{L}_Z \not{g}$ to the identity (2.40a). The LHS of the resulting identity is ${}^{(Z)}\!\not{\pi}$, while only the last term $\mathcal{L}_Z \not{g}$ survives on the RHS since the $\ell_{t,u}$-projection $\not{\Pi}$ annihilates the non-differentiated factors arising from the first three tensor products on RHS (2.40a). We have thus proved (2.58) for $\mathcal{L}_Z \not{g}$. The identity (2.58) for $\mathcal{L}_Z \not{g}^{-1}$ is a simple consequence of the identity for $\mathcal{L}_Z \not{g}$, the identity $(\not{g}^{-1})^{\alpha\kappa} \not{g}_{\kappa\beta} = \not{\Pi}_\beta^\alpha$, the Leibniz rule, and the identity $(\not{g}^{-1})^{\alpha\kappa} \mathcal{L}_Z \not{\Pi}_\kappa^\beta = 0$, which we now prove. Since $(\not{g}^{-1})^{\alpha\beta} = \upsilon^{-2}\Theta^\alpha \Theta^\beta$, the proof reduces to showing that $(\mathcal{L}_Z \not{\Pi}_i{}^a)\Theta^i = 0$. To this end, we differentiate the identity $\Theta = \not{\Pi} \cdot \Theta$ and use the Leibniz rule to deduce that $\mathcal{L}_Z \Theta = (\mathcal{L}_Z \not{\Pi}) \cdot \Theta + \not{\Pi} \cdot \mathcal{L}_Z \Theta$. Using (2.59), we see that $\mathcal{L}_Z \Theta = \not{\Pi} \cdot \mathcal{L}_Z \Theta$, which finishes the proof. $\square$

Lemma 2.10 ($L, \check{X}, Y$ **commute with** $\not{d}$). *For scalar functions* f *and* $V \in \{L, \check{X}, Y\}$, *we have*

$$\mathcal{L}_V \not{d} f = \not{d} V f. \tag{2.60}$$

Proof We prove the identity only when $V = \check{X}$ since the remaining identities can be proved similarly. To proceed, we contract (2.60) against Y and use the Leibniz rule on the LHS to find that the identity is equivalent to $\check{X}Yf - (\mathcal{L}_{\check{X}}Y) \cdot \mathrm{d}\!\!\!/ f = Y\check{X}f$. The previous identity is equivalent to $[\check{X}, Y] = \mathcal{L}_{\check{X}}Y$, which follows from (2.57). □

2.10 The Rectangular Christoffel Symbols

In many of our subsequent calculations, we start by expressing quantities in rectangular coordinates. The most important of these are the Christoffel symbols.

Lemma 2.11 (**Christoffel symbols of g in rectangular coordinates**). *Let*

$$\Gamma_{\alpha\kappa\beta} := \frac{1}{2} \left\{ \partial_\alpha g_{\kappa\beta} + \partial_\beta g_{\alpha\kappa} - \partial_\kappa g_{\alpha\beta} \right\}$$

denote the lowered Christoffel symbols of g relative to rectangular coordinates and recall that $G_{\alpha\beta}(\Psi) = \frac{d}{d\Psi}g_{\alpha\beta}(\Psi)$. Then we have

$$\Gamma_{\alpha\kappa\beta} = \frac{1}{2} \left\{ G_{\kappa\beta}\partial_\alpha\Psi + G_{\alpha\kappa}\partial_\beta\Psi - G_{\alpha\beta}\partial_\kappa\Psi \right\}. \tag{2.61}$$

Proof (2.61) is a simple consequence of the chain rule. □

2.11 Transport Equations for the Eikonal Function Quantities

We now use Lemma 2.11 to derive evolution equations for μ and the rectangular components $L^i_{(Small)}$, $(i = 1, 2)$.

Lemma 2.12 (**The transport equations verified by μ and L^i**). *The inverse foliation density μ defined in (2.14) verifies the following transport equation:*

$$L\mu := \omega = \frac{1}{2}G_{LL}\check{X}\Psi - \frac{1}{2}\mu G_{LL}L\Psi - \mu G_{LX}L\Psi. \tag{2.62}$$

Moreover, the scalar-valued rectangular component functions $L^i_{(Small)}$, $(i = 1, 2)$, defined in (2.53), verify the following transport equation:

$$LL^i_{(Small)} = -\frac{1}{2}G_{LL}(L\Psi)L^i - \frac{1}{2}G_{LL}(L\Psi)(g^{-1})^{0i} - \mathcal{G}_L^{\#} \cdot (\mathrm{d}\!\!\!/ x^i)(L\Psi)$$
$$+ \frac{1}{2}G_{LL}(\mathrm{d}\!\!\!/^{\#}\Psi) \cdot \mathrm{d}\!\!\!/ x^i. \tag{2.63}$$

Proof We first prove (2.62). We start by writing the 0 component of the geodesic equation $\mathscr{D}_{L_{(Geo)}}L_{(Geo)} = 0$ relative to rectangular coordinates with the help of (2.61): $L_{(Geo)}L^0_{(Geo)} = (g^{-1})^{0\kappa} \left\{ (1/2)G_{L_{(Geo)}L_{(Geo)}}\partial_\kappa\Psi - G_{\kappa L_{(Geo)}}L_{(Geo)}\Psi \right\}$. Using this equation, the identity $(g^{-1})^{0\kappa} = -L^\kappa - X^\kappa$ (see (2.40b) and recall that $L^0 = 1$

and $X^0 = 0$), the relation $\mu = 1/L^0_{(Geo)}$, and the definition $L = \mu L_{(Geo)}$, we conclude (2.62) from straightforward computations.

To prove (2.63), we use the definition $L = \mu L_{(Geo)}$ and (2.53) to write the spatial components of the geodesic equation $\mathscr{D}_{L_{(Geo)}} L_{(Geo)} = 0$ relative to rectangular components as $LL^i_{(Small)} = LL^i = -(g^{-1})^{i\kappa} \Gamma_{L\kappa L} + \mu^{-1}(L\mu)L^i$. Using (2.40b) and (2.61), we compute that $-(g^{-1})^{i\kappa} \Gamma_{L\kappa L} = (L^i + X^i)\Gamma_{LLL} + L^i\Gamma_{LXL} - (g^{-1})^{i\kappa} \Gamma_{L\kappa L}$. Using (2.26) and (2.61), we express the RHS of the previous identity as $-(1/2)(g^{-1})^{0i} G_{LL} L\Psi + L^i \{G_{LX} L\Psi - (1/2)G_{LL} X\Psi\} - \mathscr{G}^i_L L\Psi + (1/2)G_{LL}\slashed{d}^i\Psi$. We then add this expression to the second product $\mu^{-1}(L\mu)L^i$ in the formula for $LL^i_{(Small)}$ from above and use (2.62) to substitute for $L\mu$. We note in particular that the terms proportional to $L^i G_{LL} X\Psi$ and $L^i G_{LX} L\Psi$ completely cancel. Also using the simple identities $\mathscr{G}^i_L = \mathscr{G}^{\#}_L \cdot \slashed{d}x^i$ and $\slashed{d}^i\Psi = (\slashed{d}^{\#}\Psi) \cdot \slashed{d}x^i$, we conclude (2.63). $\qquad\square$

2.12 Connection Coefficients of the Rescaled Frame

We now derive expressions for the connection coefficients of the frame $\{L, \breve{X}, \Theta\}$ in terms of Ψ, μ, L^1, L^2. We also decompose some of the connection coefficients into "regular" pieces and pieces that have a "singular" μ^{-1} factor.

Lemma 2.13 (**Connection coefficients of the rescaled frame** $\{L, \breve{X}, \Theta\}$). **and their decomposition into μ^{-1}-singular and μ^{-1}-regular pieces**) *Let ζ be the $\ell_{t,u}$-tangent one-form defined by (see the identity (2.39b))*

$$\zeta_\Theta := \slashed{k}_{X\Theta} = g(\mathscr{D}_\Theta L, X) = \mu^{-1} g(\mathscr{D}_\Theta L, \breve{X}). \tag{2.64}$$

Then the covariant derivatives of the rescaled frame vectorfields can be expressed as follows, where the tensorfields k, χ, and ω are defined in (2.36), (2.37), and (2.62):

$$\mathscr{D}_L L = \mu^{-1}\omega L, \tag{2.65a}$$

$$\mathscr{D}_{\breve{X}} L = -\omega L + \mu\zeta^{\#} + \slashed{d}^{\#}\mu, \tag{2.65b}$$

$$\mathscr{D}_\Theta L = -\zeta_\Theta L + \text{tr}_{\slashed{g}}\chi\Theta, \tag{2.65c}$$

$$\mathscr{D}_L \breve{X} = -\omega L - \mu\zeta^{\#}, \tag{2.65d}$$

$$\mathscr{D}_{\breve{X}} \breve{X} = \mu\omega L + \left\{\mu^{-1}\breve{X}\mu + \omega\right\} \breve{X} - \mu\slashed{d}^{\#}\mu, \tag{2.65e}$$

$$\mathscr{D}_\Theta \breve{X} = \mu\zeta_\Theta L + \zeta_\Theta \breve{X} + \mu^{-1}(\slashed{d}_\Theta\mu)\breve{X} + \mu\text{tr}_{\slashed{g}}\slashed{k}\Theta - \mu\text{tr}_{\slashed{g}}\chi\Theta, \tag{2.65f}$$

$$\mathscr{D}_L \Theta = \mathscr{D}_\Theta L, \tag{2.65g}$$

$$\mathscr{D}_\Theta \Theta = \slashed{\nabla}_\Theta\Theta + \slashed{k}_{\Theta\Theta} L + \mu^{-1}\chi_{\Theta\Theta}\breve{X}. \tag{2.65h}$$

Furthermore, we can decompose the frame components of the $\ell_{t,u}$-tangent tensorfields $\slashed{k}$ and ζ into μ^{-1}-singular and μ^{-1}-regular pieces as follows:

$$\zeta = \mu^{-1}\zeta^{(Trans-\Psi)} + \zeta^{(Tan-\Psi)}, \tag{2.66a}$$

$$\slashed{k} = \mu^{-1}\slashed{k}^{(Trans-\Psi)} + \slashed{k}^{(Tan-\Psi)}, \tag{2.66b}$$

where

$$\zeta^{(Trans-\Psi)} := -\frac{1}{2}\mathcal{G}_L \,\check{X}\Psi, \tag{2.67a}$$

$$\displaystyle{\not{k}}^{(Trans-\Psi)} := \frac{1}{2}\mathcal{G}\check{X}\Psi, \tag{2.67b}$$

and

$$\zeta^{(Tan-\Psi)} := \frac{1}{2}\mathcal{G}_X \,L\Psi - \frac{1}{2}G_{LX}\displaystyle{\not{d}}\Psi - \frac{1}{2}G_{XX}\displaystyle{\not{d}}\Psi, \tag{2.68a}$$

$$\displaystyle{\not{k}}^{(Tan-\Psi)} := \frac{1}{2}\mathcal{G}L\Psi - \frac{1}{2}\mathcal{G}_L \otimes \displaystyle{\not{d}}\Psi - \frac{1}{2}\displaystyle{\not{d}}\Psi \otimes \mathcal{G}_L - \frac{1}{2}\mathcal{G}_X \otimes \displaystyle{\not{d}}\Psi - \frac{1}{2}\displaystyle{\not{d}}\Psi \otimes \mathcal{G}_X. \tag{2.68b}$$

Proof The identity (2.65a) follows easily from the geodesic equation $\mathscr{D}_{L_{(Geo)}}L_{(Geo)} = 0$ and the definition $L = \mu L_{(Geo)}$.

To derive (2.65d), we expand $\mathscr{D}_L \check{X} = a_L L + a_{\check{X}} \check{X} + a_\Theta \Theta$, where the a are scalar functions. Taking the inner product of each side with L and using $g(L, \check{X}) = -\mu$, $g(L, \Theta) = 0$, and (2.65a), we find that $-a_{\check{X}}\mu = g(\mathscr{D}_L \check{X}, L) = -L\mu - g(\check{X}, \mathscr{D}_L L) = 0$ as desired. Taking the inner product of each side with $\check{X}$ and using in addition that $g(\check{X}, \check{X}) = \mu^2$ and $g(\check{X}, \Theta) = 0$, we find that $-\mu a_L = g(\mathscr{D}_L \check{X}, \check{X}) = \mu L \mu$ as desired. Finally, taking the inner product of each side with Θ and using in addition that $0 = [L, \Theta] = \mathscr{D}_L \Theta - \mathscr{D}_\Theta L$ (where the second equality follows from the torsion-free property of $\mathscr{D}$), we find that $a_\Theta g(\Theta, \Theta) = g(\mathscr{D}_L \check{X}, \Theta) = -g(\check{X}, \mathscr{D}_L \Theta) = -g(\check{X}, \mathscr{D}_\Theta L) = -\mu\zeta_\Theta$ as desired. A similar argument yields (2.65b); we omit the full details and instead only note that the argument relies in part on the identity $g(\mathscr{D}_{\check{X}}L, \Theta) = -g(\mathscr{D}_{\check{X}}\Theta, L) = -g(\mathscr{D}_\Theta \check{X}, L) - g([\check{X}, \Theta], L) = -g(\mathscr{D}_\Theta \check{X}, L)$. The second equality follows from the torsion-free property of $\mathscr{D}$, while the last one follows from the fact that $[\check{X}, \Theta]$ is $\ell_{t,u}$-tangent, which is a simple consequence of (2.23). A similar argument also yields (2.65e); we omit the details.

To derive (2.65c), we expand $\mathscr{D}_\Theta L = a_L L + a_{\check{X}} \check{X} + a_\Theta \Theta$. Taking the inner product of each side with L and using the identities noted above as well as $g(L, L) = 0$, we find that $a_{\check{X}} = 0$ as desired. Similarly, taking the inner product of each side with $\check{X}$, we find that $-\mu a_L = g(\mathscr{D}_\Theta L, \check{X}) = \mu\zeta_\Theta$ as desired. Similarly, taking the inner product of each side with Θ and using (2.39a), we find that $a_\Theta g(\Theta, \Theta) = g(\mathscr{D}_\Theta L, \Theta) = \chi_{\Theta\Theta}$, from which we easily conclude that $a_\Theta = \mathrm{tr}_{\displaystyle{\not{g}}}\chi$ as desired.

(2.65g) is a simple consequence of the identity $[L, \Theta] = 0$ and the torsion-free property of $\mathscr{D}$.

To prove (2.65h), we expand $\mathscr{D}_\Theta \Theta = a_L L + a_{\check{X}} \check{X} + a_\Theta \Theta$. Taking the inner product of each side with L and using the identities noted above, we find that $-a_{\check{X}}\mu = g(\mathscr{D}_\Theta \Theta, L) = -g(\mathscr{D}_\Theta L, \Theta) = -\mathrm{tr}_{\displaystyle{\not{g}}}\chi g(\Theta, \Theta) = -\chi_{\Theta\Theta}$ as desired. Taking the inner product of each side with $\check{X}$, and using (2.17), (2.18), and (2.65c), we find that $-\mu a_L = g(\mathscr{D}_\Theta \Theta, \check{X}) - \mu\chi_{\Theta\Theta} = -g(\mathscr{D}_\Theta \check{X}, \Theta) - \mu\mathrm{tr}_{\displaystyle{\not{g}}}\chi g(\Theta, \Theta) = -\mu g(\mathscr{D}_\Theta X, \Theta) - \mu\mathrm{tr}_{\displaystyle{\not{g}}}\chi g(\Theta, \Theta) = -\mu g(\mathscr{D}_\Theta N, \Theta) = -\mu\displaystyle{\not{k}}_{\Theta\Theta}$ as desired. Taking the inner product of

each side with Θ and using that $\slashed{\nabla}\xi = \slashed{\nabla}\mathscr{D}\xi$ for $\ell_{t,u}$-tangent tensorfields ξ, we find that $a_\Theta g(\Theta, \Theta) = g(\mathscr{D}_\Theta\Theta, \Theta) = g(\slashed{\nabla}_\Theta\Theta, \Theta)$ as desired.

To prove (2.65f), we expand $\mathscr{D}_\Theta\breve{X} = a_L L + a_{\breve{X}}\breve{X} + a_\Theta\Theta$. Taking the inner product of each side with L and using and using the identities noted above as well as (2.65c), we find that $-a_{\breve{X}}\mu = g(\mathscr{D}_\Theta\breve{X}, L) = -\Theta\mu - g(\mathscr{D}_\Theta L, \breve{X}) = -\Theta\mu - \mu\zeta_\Theta$ as desired. Taking the inner product of each side with $\breve{X}$, we find that $-\mu a_L = g(\mathscr{D}_\Theta\breve{X}, \breve{X}) - \mu^2 a_{\breve{X}} = -\mu^2\zeta_\Theta$ as desired. Finally, taking the inner product of each side with Θ and using (2.65h), we find that $a_\Theta g(\Theta, \Theta) = g(\mathscr{D}_\Theta\breve{X}, \Theta) = -g(\breve{X}, \mathscr{D}_\Theta\Theta) = \mu\slashed{k}_{\Theta\Theta} - \mu\chi_{\Theta\Theta} = \mu\mathrm{tr}_{\slashed{g}}\slashed{k}\, g(\Theta, \Theta) - \mu\mathrm{tr}_{\slashed{g}}\chi\, g(\Theta, \Theta)$ as desired.

We now prove (2.66a), (2.67a), and (2.68a). Our proof relies on the identity

$$(\mathcal{L}_N g)_{X\Theta} = G_{X\Theta}L\Psi - G_{L\Theta}X\Psi - G_{LX}\Theta\Psi - G_{XX}\Theta\Psi. \qquad (2.69)$$

To prove (2.69), we use (2.18), (2.25), (2.40a), (2.40b), the chain rule identity $Ng_{\alpha\beta} = G_{\alpha\beta}N\Psi$, and the inverse matrix differentiation identity $-V(g^{-1})^{0\alpha} = (g^{-1})^{0\kappa}(g^{-1})^{\alpha\lambda}G_{\kappa\lambda}V\Psi$ (valid for any vectorfield V) to deduce that

$$
\begin{aligned}
(\mathcal{L}_N g)_{X\Theta} &= G_{X\Theta}N\Psi + g_{X\alpha}\Theta N^\alpha + g_{\alpha\Theta}X N^\alpha \\
&= G_{X\Theta}L\Psi + G_{X\Theta}X\Psi + g_{X\alpha}(g^{-1})^{0\kappa}(g^{-1})^{\alpha\lambda}G_{\kappa\lambda}\Theta\Psi \\
&\quad + g_{\alpha\Theta}(g^{-1})^{0\kappa}(g^{-1})^{\alpha\lambda}G_{\kappa\lambda}X\Psi \\
&= G_{X\Theta}L\Psi + G_{X\Theta}X\Psi - G_{LX}\Theta\Psi - G_{XX}\Theta\Psi - G_{L\Theta}X\Psi - G_{X\Theta}X\Psi.
\end{aligned}
$$
$$(2.70)$$

We have thus proved (2.69). We now use (2.38), (2.39b), (2.64), and (2.69) to compute that $\zeta_\Theta = (1/2)\mathrm{RHS}$ (2.69), which easily yields (2.66a), (2.67a), and (2.68a).

The identities (2.66b), (2.67b), and (2.68b) can be proved by employing a similar argument; we omit the details. □

We will use the next lemma when deriving L^∞ estimates for the transversal derivatives of the rectangular component functions $L^i_{(Small)}$.

Lemma 2.14 (Formula for $\breve{X}L^i$). *We have the following identity for the scalar-valued functions $L^i_{(Small)}$, ($i = 1, 2$):*

$$
\begin{aligned}
\breve{X}L^i_{(Small)} &= \left\{-\frac{1}{2}G_{LL}\breve{X}\Psi + \frac{1}{2}\mu G_{LL}L\Psi + \mu G_{LX}L\Psi + \frac{1}{2}\mu G_{XX}L\Psi\right\} L^i \\
&\quad + \left\{-\frac{1}{2}G_{LL}\breve{X}\Psi + \frac{1}{2}\mu G_{LL}L\Psi + \mu G_{LX}L\Psi + \frac{1}{2}\mu G_{XX}L\Psi\right\} (g^{-1})^{0i} \\
&\quad - \left\{\slashed{G}^{\#}_L \breve{X}\Psi + \frac{1}{2}\mu G_{XX}\slashed{d}^{\#}\Psi\right\} \cdot \slashed{d}x^i + (\slashed{d}^{\#}\mu) \cdot \slashed{d}x^i.
\end{aligned}
$$
$$(2.71)$$

Proof Throughout this proof, ∇ denotes the Levi-Civita connection of the background Minkowski metric $m_{\alpha\beta} = \mathrm{diag}(-1, 1, 1)$. Since $L^0 = 1$, we can view $\nabla_{\breve{X}}L$ as a Σ_t-tangent vectorfield with rectangular spatial components $\breve{X}L^i$. Since X and Θ span the

tangent space of Σ_t at each point, we can expand $\nabla_{\breve{X}} L = a_X X + a_\Theta \Theta$, where a_X and a_Θ are scalar functions. Taking the inner product of each side with X, we find that $a_X = g(\nabla_{\breve{X}} L, X) = g(\mathscr{D}_{\breve{X}} L, X) - \Gamma_{\breve{X} X L}$, where $\Gamma_{\breve{X} X L} := \breve{X}^\alpha X^\kappa L^\beta \Gamma_{\alpha \kappa \beta}$ and $\Gamma_{\alpha \kappa \beta}$ is given by (2.61). Using (2.61), (2.62), and (2.65a), we compute that $g(\mathscr{D}_{\breve{X}} L, X) = \omega = \frac{1}{2} G_{LL} \breve{X} \Psi - \frac{1}{2} \mu G_{LL} L \Psi - \mu G_{LX} L \Psi$ and $\Gamma_{\breve{X} X L} = \frac{1}{2} \mu G_{XX} L \Psi$. Hence, $a_X = \frac{1}{2} G_{LL} \breve{X} \Psi - \frac{1}{2} \mu G_{LL} L \Psi - \mu G_{LX} L \Psi - \frac{1}{2} \mu G_{XX} L \Psi$. Similarly, we find that $a_\Theta = g(\mathscr{D}_{\breve{X}} L, \Theta) - \Gamma_{\breve{X} \Theta L}$. Using (2.65a), we compute that $g(\mathscr{D}_{\breve{X}} L, \Theta) = \mu \zeta_\Theta + \slashed{d}_\Theta \mu$ and $\Gamma_{\breve{X} \Theta L} = \frac{1}{2} \left\{ \mu G_{X\Theta} L \Psi + G_{L\Theta} \breve{X} \Psi - \mu G_{LX} \slashed{d}_\Theta \Psi \right\}$. Hence, using (2.66a), (2.67a), and (2.68a) to substitute for $\mu \zeta$, we deduce that $a_\Theta = -G_{L\Theta} \breve{X} \Psi - \frac{1}{2} \mu G_{XX} \slashed{d}_\Theta \Psi + \slashed{d}_\Theta \mu$. Combining these identities, using the identity $\Theta^i = \slashed{d}_\Theta x^i$, and using (2.26) to replace X^i with $-L^i - (g^{-1})^{0i}$, we conclude (2.71). $\qquad\square$

2.13 Useful Expressions for the Null Second Fundamental Form

Lemma 2.15 (**Identities involving** χ). *We have the following identities:*

$$\chi = g_{ab}(\slashed{d}L^a) \otimes \slashed{d}x^b + \frac{1}{2} \mathcal{G} L \Psi, \tag{2.72a}$$

$$\mathrm{tr}_{\slashed{g}} \chi = g_{ab} \slashed{g}^{-1} \cdot \left\{ (\slashed{d}L^a) \otimes \slashed{d}x^b \right\} + \frac{1}{2} \slashed{g}^{-1} \cdot \mathcal{G} L \Psi, \tag{2.72b}$$

$$L \ln \upsilon = \mathrm{tr}_{\slashed{g}} \chi, \tag{2.72c}$$

where χ is the $\ell_{t,u}$-tangent tensorfield defined by (2.37) and υ is the metric component from Def. 2.19.

Proof To prove (2.72a), we use (2.39a) and (2.61) to compute, relative to rectangular coordinates, that $\chi_{\Theta\Theta} = g_{ab}(\Theta L^a)\Theta^b + \Gamma_{\Theta\Theta L} = g_{ab}(\Theta L^a_{(Small)})\Theta^b + \frac{1}{2} G_{\Theta\Theta} L \Psi$. Noting that $\Theta x^b = \Theta \cdot \slashed{d}x^b$, we easily conclude (2.72a). To deduce (2.72b), we simply take the $\slashed{g}$-trace of (2.72a). To prove (2.72c), we use the Leibniz rule, the fact that $[L, \Theta] = 0$, and the torsion-free property of $\mathscr{D}$ to compute that $L(\upsilon^2) = L[g(\Theta, \Theta)] = 2g(\mathscr{D}_L \Theta, \Theta) = 2g(\mathscr{D}_\Theta L, \Theta) = 2\chi_{\Theta\Theta} = 2\mathrm{tr}_{\slashed{g}} \chi g(\Theta, \Theta) = 2\mathrm{tr}_{\slashed{g}} \chi \upsilon^2$, from which the desired identity easily follows. $\qquad\square$

2.14 Frame Decomposition of the Wave Operator

In this subsection, we decompose $\mu \Box_{g(\Psi)}$ relative to the rescaled frame. The factor of μ is important for our decompositions.

Proposition 2.16 (**Frame decomposition of** $\mu \Box_{g(\Psi)} f$). *Let f be a scalar function. Then relative to the rescaled frame $\{L, \breve{X}, \Theta\}$, $\mu \Box_{g(\Psi)} f$ can be expressed in either of the following two forms:*

$$\mu\Box_{g(\Psi)}f = -L(\mu Lf + 2\check{X}f) + \mu\slashed{\Delta}f - \mathrm{tr}_{\slashed{g}}\chi\check{X}f - \mu\mathrm{tr}_{\slashed{g}}\slashed{k}Lf - 2\mu\zeta^{\#}\cdot\slashed{d}f,$$
$$(2.73a)$$

$$= -(\mu L + 2\check{X})(Lf) + \mu\slashed{\Delta}f - \mathrm{tr}_{\slashed{g}}\chi\check{X}f - \omega Lf + 2\mu\zeta^{\#}\cdot\slashed{d}f$$
$$+ 2(\slashed{d}^{\#}\mu)\cdot\slashed{d}f,$$
$$(2.73b)$$

where the $\ell_{t,u}$-tangent tensorfields χ, ζ, and $\slashed{k}$ can be expressed via (2.72a), (2.66a), *and* (2.66b).

Proof To derive (2.73a), we first use (2.40b) to decompose

$$\mu\Box_{g(\Psi)}f = -\mu L^{\alpha}L^{\beta}\mathscr{D}^2_{\alpha\beta}f - 2L^{\alpha}\check{X}^{\beta}\mathscr{D}^2_{\alpha\beta}f + (\slashed{g}^{-1})\cdot\mathscr{D}^2 f$$
$$= -L(\mu Lf + 2\check{X}f) + (\slashed{g}^{-1})\cdot\mathscr{D}^2 f$$
$$+ \mu(\mathscr{D}_L L^{\alpha})\mathscr{D}_{\alpha}f + 2(\mathscr{D}_L\check{X}^{\alpha})\mathscr{D}_{\alpha}f + (L\mu)Lf. \qquad (2.74)$$

Next, we note that $\Theta(\Theta f) = \Theta^{\alpha}\mathscr{D}_{\alpha}(\Theta^{\beta}\mathscr{D}_{\beta}f) = \mathscr{D}^2_{\Theta\Theta}f + (\mathscr{D}_{\Theta}\Theta)^{\alpha}\mathscr{D}_{\alpha}f = \slashed{\nabla}^2_{\Theta\Theta}f + (\slashed{\nabla}_{\Theta}\Theta)\cdot\slashed{d}f$. Hence, by (2.65h), we have $\mathscr{D}^2_{\Theta\Theta}f = \slashed{\nabla}^2_{\Theta\Theta}f - \slashed{k}_{\Theta\Theta}Lf - \mu^{-1}\chi_{\Theta\Theta}\check{X}f$. Consequently, $\mu(\slashed{g}^{-1})\cdot\mathscr{D}^2 f = (1/g(\Theta,\Theta))\left\{\mu\slashed{\nabla}^2_{\Theta\Theta}f - \mu\slashed{k}_{\Theta\Theta}Lf - \chi_{\Theta\Theta}\check{X}f\right\} = \mu\slashed{\Delta}f - \mu\mathrm{tr}_{\slashed{g}}\slashed{k}Lf - \mathrm{tr}_{\slashed{g}}\chi\check{X}f$. We now substitute this identity into RHS (2.74). We also use Lemma 2.13 to substitute for the terms $\mu(\mathscr{D}_L L^{\alpha})\mathscr{D}_{\alpha}f$ and $2(\mathscr{D}_L\check{X}^{\alpha})\mathscr{D}_{\alpha}f$. The identity (2.73a) then follows from straightforward calculations.

The proof of (2.73b) is similar and we omit the details. $\qquad\square$

2.15 Frame Components of the Deformation Tensors of the Commutation Vectorfields

In this subsection, we decompose the deformation tensors (see Def. 2.24) of the commutation vectorfields (2.51) relative to the rescaled frame. The exact structure of a few of the terms, including the precise numerical constants, affects the degree of degeneracy of our top-order energy estimates.

The main result of this subsection is Lemma 2.18. We first provide a preliminary lemma in which we calculate certain covariant derivatives of the $\ell_{t,u}$ projection tensorfield $\slashed{\Pi}$.

Lemma 2.17 (**Frame covariant derivatives of $\slashed{\Pi}$**). *Let $\slashed{\Pi}$ be the type $\binom{1}{1}$ $\ell_{t,u}$ projection tensorfield defined in* (2.27b). *Then the following identities hold:*

$$(\mathscr{D}_L\slashed{\Pi})\cdot X = \mu^{-1}\zeta^{(Trans-\Psi)\#} + \zeta^{(Tan-\Psi)\#}, \qquad (2.75a)$$

$$(\mathscr{D}_L\slashed{\Pi})\cdot\Theta = -\mu^{-1}\zeta^{(Trans-\Psi)}_{\Theta}L - \zeta^{(Tan-\Psi)}_{\Theta}L, \qquad (2.75b)$$

$$(\mathscr{D}_{\check{X}}\slashed{\Pi})\cdot X = \slashed{d}^{\#}\mu, \qquad (2.75c)$$

$$(\mathscr{D}_{\check{X}}\slashed{\Pi})\cdot\Theta = \zeta^{(Trans-\Psi)}_{\Theta}L + \mu\zeta^{(Tan-\Psi)}_{\Theta}L + \zeta^{(Trans-\Psi)}_{\Theta}X$$
$$+ \mu\zeta^{(Tan-\Psi)}_{\Theta}X + (\slashed{d}_{\Theta}\mu)X, \qquad (2.75d)$$

$$(\mathscr{D}_\Theta \slashed{\Pi}) \cdot X = \chi_\Theta^{\#} - \mu^{-1} \slashed{k}_\Theta^{(Trans-\Psi)\#} - \slashed{k}_\Theta^{(Tan-\Psi)\#}, \tag{2.75e}$$

$$(\mathscr{D}_\Theta \slashed{\Pi}) \cdot \Theta = \mu^{-1} \slashed{k}_{\Theta\Theta}^{(Trans-\Psi)} L + \slashed{k}_{\Theta\Theta}^{(Tan-\Psi)} L + \chi_{\Theta\Theta} X. \tag{2.75f}$$

In the above expressions, the $\ell_{t,u}$-tangent tensorfields χ, $\zeta^{(Trans-\Psi)}$, $\slashed{k}^{(Trans-\Psi)}$, $\zeta^{(Tan-\Psi)}$, and $\slashed{k}^{(Tan-\Psi)}$ are defined by (2.37), (2.67a), (2.67b), (2.68a), and (2.68b).

Proof The main idea of the proof is to use the decompositions provided by Lemma 2.13. As examples, we prove (2.75a) and (2.75d). The remaining identities in the lemma can be proved using similar arguments and we omit those details. To prove (2.75a), we differentiate the identity $\slashed{\Pi} \cdot \check{X} = 0$ and use the identity $\check{X} = \mu X$ to deduce that $(\mathscr{D}_L \slashed{\Pi}) \cdot X = \mu^{-1} (\mathscr{D}_L \slashed{\Pi}) \cdot \check{X} = -\mu^{-1} \slashed{\Pi} \cdot \mathscr{D}_L \check{X}$. The desired identity (2.75a) now follows easily from the previous identity, (2.65d), and (2.66a).

To prove (2.75d), we differentiate the identity $\slashed{\Pi} \cdot \Theta = \Theta$ to deduce $(\mathscr{D}_{\check{X}} \slashed{\Pi}) \cdot \Theta = \mathscr{D}_{\check{X}} \Theta - \slashed{\Pi} \cdot \mathscr{D}_{\check{X}} \Theta$. Since $\mathscr{D}_{\check{X}} \Theta - \mathscr{D}_\Theta \check{X} = [\check{X}, \Theta]$ is $\ell_{t,u}$-tangent (see Lemma 2.9), it follows that $(\mathscr{D}_{\check{X}} \slashed{\Pi}) \cdot \Theta = \mathscr{D}_\Theta \check{X} - \slashed{\Pi} \cdot \mathscr{D}_\Theta \check{X}$. The desired identity (2.75d) now follows easily from the previous identity, (2.65f), and (2.66a). □

We now provide the main lemma of Subsect. 2.15.

Lemma 2.18 (**The frame components of $^{(Z)}\pi$**). *We have the following identities for the frame components of the deformation tensors (see Def. 2.24) of the commutation vectorfields $Z \in \mathscr{Z}$ (see definition (2.51)):*

$$^{(\check{X})}\pi_{LL} = 0, \qquad ^{(\check{X})}\pi_{\check{X}X} = 2\check{X}\mu, \qquad ^{(\check{X})}\pi_{L\check{X}} = -\check{X}\mu, \tag{2.76a}$$

$$^{(\check{X})}\slashed{\pi}_L = -\slashed{d}\mu - 2\zeta^{(Trans-\Psi)} - 2\mu\zeta^{(Tan-\Psi)}, \qquad ^{(\check{X})}\slashed{\pi}_{\check{X}} = 0, \tag{2.76b}$$

$$^{(\check{X})}\slashed{\pi} = -2\mu\chi + 2\slashed{k}^{(Trans-\Psi)} + 2\mu\slashed{k}^{(Tan-\Psi)}, \tag{2.76c}$$

$$^{(L)}\pi_{LL} = 0, \qquad ^{(L)}\pi_{\check{X}X} = 2L\mu, \qquad ^{(L)}\pi_{L\check{X}} = -L\mu, \tag{2.77a}$$

$$^{(L)}\slashed{\pi}_L = 0, \qquad ^{(L)}\slashed{\pi}_{\check{X}} = \slashed{d}\mu + 2\zeta^{(Trans-\Psi)} + 2\mu\zeta^{(Tan-\Psi)}, \tag{2.77b}$$

$$^{(L)}\slashed{\pi} = 2\chi, \tag{2.77c}$$

$$^{(Y)}\pi_{LL} = 0, \qquad ^{(Y)}\pi_{\check{X}X} = 2Y\mu, \qquad ^{(Y)}\pi_{L\check{X}} = -Y\mu, \tag{2.78a}$$

$$^{(Y)}\slashed{\pi}_L = -\chi \cdot Y + \frac{1}{2}(\mathcal{G} \cdot Y)L\Psi + \rho\mathcal{G}_X L\Psi + \frac{1}{2}(\mathcal{G}_L \cdot Y)\slashed{d}\Psi$$
$$- \rho G_{LX}\slashed{d}\Psi - \frac{1}{2}\rho G_{XX}\slashed{d}\Psi, \tag{2.78b}$$

$$^{(Y)}\slashed{\pi}_{\check{X}} = \mu\chi \cdot Y + \rho\slashed{d}\mu + \rho\mathcal{G}_X \check{X}\Psi - \frac{1}{2}\mu\rho G_{XX}\slashed{d}\Psi$$
$$- \frac{1}{2}\mu(\mathcal{G} \cdot Y)L\Psi + \mu(\mathcal{G}_L \cdot Y)\slashed{d}\Psi + \mu(\mathcal{G}_X \cdot Y)\slashed{d}\Psi, \tag{2.78c}$$

$$^{(Y)}\slashed{\pi} = 2\rho\chi + \frac{1}{2}(\mathcal{G} \cdot Y) \otimes \slashed{d}\Psi + \frac{1}{2}\slashed{d}\Psi \otimes (\mathcal{G} \cdot Y) - \rho\mathcal{G}L\Psi$$

$$+ \rho \slashed{\mathcal{G}}_L \otimes \slashed{d}\Psi + \rho \slashed{d}\Psi \otimes \slashed{\mathcal{G}}_L + \rho \slashed{\mathcal{G}}_X \otimes \slashed{d}\Psi + \rho \slashed{d}\Psi \otimes \slashed{\mathcal{G}}_X . \qquad (2.78d)$$

The scalar function ρ from above is as in Lemma 2.8, *while the $\ell_{t,u}$-tangent tensorfields* χ, $\zeta^{(Trans-\Psi)}$, $\slashed{k}^{(Trans-\Psi)}$, $\zeta^{(Tan-\Psi)}$, *and* $\slashed{k}^{(Tan-\Psi)}$ *from above are as in* (2.37), (2.67a), (2.67b), (2.68a), *and* (2.68b).

Proof We give a detailed proof of the identities (2.78a)–(2.78d), some of which involve the observation of important cancellations. The proofs of the remaining identities do not involve such cancellations. Hence, they are easier to prove and we omit those details.

First, we deduce $^{(Y)}\pi_{LL} = 2g(\mathscr{D}_L Y, L) = -2g(\mathscr{D}_L L, Y)$, where to obtain the second equality, we differentiated the identity $g(L, Y) = 0$. Using (2.65a), we conclude that $g(\mathscr{D}_L L, Y) = 0$ as desired.

Next, we use similar reasoning to obtain $^{(Y)}\pi_{\check{X}X} = 2\mu^{-1}g(\mathscr{D}_{\check{X}} Y, \check{X}) = -2\mu^{-1}g(\mathscr{D}_{\check{X}}\check{X}, Y)$ Using (2.65e), we conclude that the previous expression is equal to $2g(\slashed{d}^{\#}\mu, Y) = 2Y\mu$ as desired.

Next, we use similar reasoning to obtain $^{(Y)}\pi_{L\check{X}} = g(\mathscr{D}_L Y, \check{X}) + g(\mathscr{D}_{\check{X}} Y, L) = -g(\mathscr{D}_L \check{X}, Y) - g(\mathscr{D}_{\check{X}} L, Y)$. Using (2.65a) and (2.65d), we conclude that the previous expression is equal to $-g(\slashed{d}^{\#}\mu, Y) = -Y\mu$ as desired.

Next, we use similar reasoning to obtain $g(^{(Y)}\slashed{\pi}_L^{\#}, \Theta) = g(\mathscr{D}_L Y, \Theta) + g(\mathscr{D}_\Theta Y, L) = g(\mathscr{D}_L Y, \Theta) - g(\mathscr{D}_\Theta L, Y)$. By (2.65c), we have $-g(\mathscr{D}_\Theta L, Y) = -\chi_{Y\Theta}$. From definition (2.50), we derive

$$g(\mathscr{D}_L Y, \Theta) = g((\mathscr{D}_L \slashed{\Pi}) \cdot Y_{(Flat)}, \Theta) + g(\mathscr{D}_L Y_{(Flat)}, \Theta). \qquad (2.79)$$

Using (2.54a), (2.75a), and (2.75b), we compute that

$$g((\mathscr{D}_L \slashed{\Pi}) \cdot Y_{(Flat)}, \Theta) = \mu^{-1}\rho\zeta^{(Trans-\Psi)}_\Theta + \rho\zeta^{(Tan-\Psi)}_\Theta. \qquad (2.80)$$

Next, using that $LY^i_{(Flat)} = 0$ and (2.61), we compute that

$$\begin{aligned}
g(\mathscr{D}_L Y_{(Flat)}, \Theta) &= \Gamma_{L\Theta Y_{(Flat)}} = \Gamma_{L\Theta Y} + \rho\Gamma_{L\Theta X} \\
&= \frac{1}{2}\slashed{\mathcal{G}}_{L\Theta} Y\Psi + \frac{1}{2}\slashed{\mathcal{G}}_{\Theta Y} L\Psi - \frac{1}{2}G_{LX}\Theta\Psi \\
&\quad + \frac{1}{2}\mu^{-1}\rho\slashed{\mathcal{G}}_{L\Theta} \check{X}\Psi + \frac{1}{2}\rho\slashed{\mathcal{G}}_{X\Theta} L\Psi - \frac{1}{2}\rho G_{LX}\Theta\Psi. \qquad (2.81)
\end{aligned}$$

Combining the above calculations, noting that the term $\mu^{-1}\rho\zeta^{(Trans-\Psi)}_\Theta$ exactly cancels the dangerous term $\frac{1}{2}\mu^{-1}\rho\slashed{\mathcal{G}}_{L\Theta} \check{X}\Psi$ on RHS (2.81) (see (2.67a)), using (2.68a), and noting that $\slashed{\mathcal{G}}_{L\Theta} Y\Psi = (\slashed{\mathcal{G}}_L \cdot Y)\Theta\Psi$, we conclude (2.78b).

Next, we use similar reasoning to obtain $g(^{(Y)}\slashed{\pi}_{\check{X}}^{\#}, \Theta) = g(\mathscr{D}_{\check{X}} Y, \Theta) + g(\mathscr{D}_\Theta Y, \check{X}) = g(\mathscr{D}_{\check{X}} Y, \Theta) - g(\mathscr{D}_\Theta \check{X}, Y)$. By (2.65f), we have $-g(\mathscr{D}_\Theta \check{X}, Y) = -\mu\slashed{k}_{Y\Theta} + \mu\chi_{\Theta Y}$. From definition (2.50), we derive

$$g(\mathscr{D}_{\check{X}} Y, \Theta) = g((\mathscr{D}_{\check{X}} \slashed{\Pi}) \cdot Y_{(Flat)}, \Theta) + g(\mathscr{D}_{\check{X}} Y_{(Flat)}, \Theta). \qquad (2.82)$$

Using (2.54a), (2.75c), and (2.75d), we compute that

$$g((\mathscr{D}_{\check{X}}\not{Y}) \cdot Y_{(Flat)}, \Theta) = \rho\Theta\mu. \tag{2.83}$$

Next, using that $\check{X}Y^i_{(Flat)} = 0$ and (2.61), we compute that

$$\begin{aligned}
g(\mathscr{D}_{\check{X}}Y_{(Flat)}, \Theta) &= \Gamma_{\check{X}\Theta Y_{(Flat)}} = \Gamma_{\check{X}\Theta Y} + \rho\Gamma_{\check{X}\Theta X} \\
&= \frac{1}{2}\mu\not{G}_{X\Theta}\,Y\Psi + \frac{1}{2}\not{G}_{Y\Theta}\,\check{X}\Psi - \frac{1}{2}\mu(\not{G}_X \cdot Y)\Theta\Psi \\
&\quad + \rho\not{G}_{X\Theta}\,\check{X}\Psi - \frac{1}{2}\mu\rho G_{XX}\Theta\Psi.
\end{aligned} \tag{2.84}$$

Combining the above calculations, using (2.66b), (2.67b), and (2.68b) to substitute for $-\mu\not{k}_{Y\Theta}$, and noting that $\not{G}_{X\Theta}\,Y\Psi = (\not{G}_X \cdot Y)\Theta\Psi$, we conclude (2.78c).

Next, we note that $^{(Y)}\not{\pi}_{\Theta\Theta} = 2g(\mathscr{D}_{\Theta}Y, \Theta)$. From definition (2.50), we derive

$$g(\mathscr{D}_{\Theta}Y, \Theta) = g((\mathscr{D}_{\Theta}\not{Y}) \cdot Y_{(Flat)}, \Theta) + g(\mathscr{D}_{\Theta}Y_{(Flat)}, \Theta). \tag{2.85}$$

Using (2.54a), (2.75e), and (2.75f), we compute that

$$g((\mathscr{D}_{\Theta}\not{Y}) \cdot Y_{(Flat)}, \Theta) = \rho\chi_{\Theta\Theta} - \mu^{-1}\rho\not{k}_{\Theta\Theta}{}^{(Trans-\Psi)} - \rho\not{k}_{\Theta\Theta}{}^{(Tan-\Psi)\#}. \tag{2.86}$$

Next, using that $\Theta Y^i_{(Flat)} = 0$ and (2.61), we compute that

$$\begin{aligned}
g(\mathscr{D}_{\Theta}Y_{(Flat)}, \Theta) &= \Gamma_{\Theta\Theta Y_{(Flat)}} = \Gamma_{\Theta\Theta Y} + \rho\Gamma_{\Theta\Theta X} \\
&= \frac{1}{2}\not{G}_{\Theta Y}\,\Theta\Psi + \frac{1}{2}\mu^{-1}\rho\not{G}_{\Theta\Theta}\,\check{X}\Psi.
\end{aligned} \tag{2.87}$$

Combining the above calculations, noting that the term $-\mu^{-1}\rho\not{k}_{\Theta\Theta}{}^{(Trans-\Psi)}$ on RHS (2.86) exactly cancels the dangerous term $\frac{1}{2}\mu^{-1}\rho\not{G}_{\Theta\Theta}\,\check{X}\Psi$ on RHS (2.87) (see (2.67b)), and using (2.68b), we conclude (2.78d). $\quad\square$

2.16 Arrays of Fundamental Unknowns

Our goal in this subsection is to show that many scalar functions and tensorfields that we have introduced depend on just a handful of more fundamental functions and tensorfields. This reduction highlights the structures that are relevant for deriving estimates, with the exception of the delicate top-order estimates that are based on modified quantities (which we define in Sect. 6). The main result is Lemma 2.19. We start by introducing some convenient shorthand notation that we use throughout the rest of the article.

Definition 2.25 (**Shorthand notation for the unknowns**). We define the following arrays γ and $\underline{\gamma}$ of scalar functions:

$$\gamma := \left(\Psi, L^1_{(Small)}, L^2_{(Small)} \right), \tag{2.88a}$$

$$\underline{\gamma} := \left(\Psi, \mu - 1, L^1_{(Small)}, L^2_{(Small)} \right). \tag{2.88b}$$

Remark 2.7 (**Schematic functional dependence**). In the remainder of the article, we use the notation $f(\xi_{(1)}, \xi_{(2)}, \cdots, \xi_{(m)})$ to schematically depict an expression (often tensorial and involving contractions) that depends smoothly on the $\ell_{t,u}$-tangent tensorfields $\xi_{(1)}, \xi_{(2)}, \cdots, \xi_{(m)}$. Note that in general, $f(0) \neq 0$.

Lemma 2.19 (**Schematic structure of various tensorfields**). *We have the following schematic relations for scalar functions:*

$$g_{\alpha\beta}, (g^{-1})^{\alpha\beta}, (\underline{g}^{-1})^{\alpha\beta}, \cancel{g}_{\alpha\beta}, (\cancel{g}^{-1})^{\alpha\beta}, G_{\alpha\beta}, G'_{\alpha\beta}, \cancel{\Pi}^\alpha_\beta, L^\alpha, X^\alpha, Y^\alpha = f(\gamma), \tag{2.89a}$$

$$G_{LL}, G_{LX}, G_{XX}, G'_{LL}, G'_{LX}, G'_{XX} = f(\gamma), \tag{2.89b}$$

$$g^{(Small)}_{\alpha\beta}, Y^\alpha_{(Small)}, X^\alpha_{(Small)}, \rho = f(\gamma)\gamma, \tag{2.89c}$$

$$\breve{X}^\alpha = f(\underline{\gamma}). \tag{2.89d}$$

Moreover, we have the following schematic relations for $\ell_{t,u}$-tangent tensorfields:

$$\cancel{g}, \cancel{G}_L, \cancel{G}_X, \cancel{G}, \cancel{G}'_L, \cancel{G}'_X, \cancel{G}' = f(\gamma, \cancel{d}x^1, \cancel{d}x^2), \tag{2.90a}$$

$$Y = f(\gamma, \cancel{g}^{-1}, \cancel{d}x^1, \cancel{d}x^2), \tag{2.90b}$$

$$\zeta^{(Tan-\Psi)}, \cancel{k}^{(Tan-\Psi)} = f(\gamma, \cancel{d}x^1, \cancel{d}x^2) P\Psi, \tag{2.90c}$$

$$\zeta^{(Trans-\Psi)}, \cancel{k}^{(Trans-\Psi)} = f(\gamma, \cancel{d}x^1, \cancel{d}x^2) \breve{X}\Psi, \tag{2.90d}$$

$$\chi = f(\gamma, \cancel{d}x^1, \cancel{d}x^2) P\gamma, \tag{2.90e}$$

$$\mathrm{tr}_{\cancel{g}}\chi = f(\gamma, \cancel{g}^{-1}, \cancel{d}x^1, \cancel{d}x^2) P\gamma. \tag{2.90f}$$

Remark 2.8 (**Clarification regarding the dependence of** f **on** $\cancel{g}^{-1}$). On the RHS of (2.90b) and (2.90f), we view $\cancel{g}^{-1}$ as a type $\binom{2}{0}$ $\ell_{t,u}$-tangent tensorfield. In contrast, on LHS (2.89a), we are viewing the *rectangular components* $(\cancel{g}^{-1})^{\alpha\beta}$ to be scalar functions. Therefore, it is not redundant to include the dependence of f on $\cancel{g}^{-1}$ in the relations (2.90b) and (2.90f).

Proof The relations in (2.89a)–(2.89d) all follow easily from the definitions of the quantities involved, so we prove only one representative relation. Specifically, to obtain the schematic form of $Y^\alpha_{(Small)}$ in (2.89c), we use (2.54b), (2.55), Remark 2.6, and the fact that $Y^0_{(Small)} = 0$.

The relations in (2.90a)–(2.90f) are also easy to derive from the definitions of the quantities involved and some simple observations. We give proofs of a few representative examples. To obtain (2.90b), we let $Y_\flat$ be the $\cancel{g}$ dual of Y so that $Y = \cancel{g}^{-1} \cdot Y_\flat$. It is

easy to see that we have the following identity for $\ell_{t,u}$-tangent one-forms: $Y_\flat = Y_a d\!\!/ x^a$; it can be checked by contracting both sides against elements of $\{L, X, \Theta\}$. We now note that $Y_a = g_{ab}Y^b$. Thus, by (2.89a), we have $Y_a = f(\gamma)$. Combining the above observations, we find that $Y_\flat = f(\gamma, d\!\!/ x^1, d\!\!/ x^2)$, from which the desired relation (2.90b) easily follows. To obtain (2.90e)–(2.90f), we apply similar reasoning based on the identities (2.72a)–(2.72b). □

3 Energy Identities and Basic Ingredients in the L^2 Analysis

In this section, we establish the integral identities that we use in our L^2 analysis.

3.1 Fundamental Energy Identity

To derive energy estimates, we rely on the *energy-momentum tensor* Q, which is the symmetric type $\binom{0}{2}$ tensor

$$Q_{\mu\nu} = Q_{\mu\nu}[\Psi] := \mathscr{D}_\mu \Psi \mathscr{D}_\nu \Psi - \frac{1}{2} g_{\mu\nu}(g^{-1})^{\alpha\beta} \mathscr{D}_\alpha \Psi \mathscr{D}_\beta \Psi. \tag{3.1}$$

In the next lemma, we exhibit the basic divergence property of Q; we omit the proof, which is a simple calculation.

Lemma 3.1 (**Basic divergence property of** Q). *For solutions to* $\mu\Box_g \Psi = \mathfrak{F}$, *we have*

$$\mu\mathscr{D}_\alpha Q^{\alpha\nu} = \mathfrak{F}\mathscr{D}^\nu \Psi. \tag{3.2}$$

In the next lemma, we provide the components of Q relative to the rescaled frame.

Lemma 3.2 (**The frame components of** Q). *The components of the energy-momentum tensor* Q *relative to the rescaled frame can be expressed as follows:*

$$Q_{LL}[\Psi] = (L\Psi)^2, \qquad Q_{L\check{X}}[\Psi] = -\frac{1}{2}\mu(L\Psi)^2 + \frac{1}{2}\mu|d\!\!/\Psi|^2, \tag{3.3a}$$

$$Q_{\check{X}\check{X}}[\Psi] = \frac{1}{2}\mu^2(L\Psi)^2 + (\check{X}\Psi)^2 + \mu(L\Psi)\check{X}\Psi - \frac{1}{2}\mu^2|d\!\!/\Psi|^2, \tag{3.3b}$$

$$\mathcal{Q}_L[\Psi] = (L\Psi)d\!\!/\Psi, \qquad \mathcal{Q}_{\check{X}}[\Psi] = (\check{X}\Psi)d\!\!/\Psi, \tag{3.3c}$$

$$\mathcal{Q}[\Psi] = \frac{1}{2}(L\Psi)^2 g\!\!/ + \mu^{-1}(L\Psi)(\check{X}\Psi)g\!\!/ + \frac{1}{2}|d\!\!/\Psi|^2 g\!\!/. \tag{3.3d}$$

Proof The lemma is a simple consequence of the formula (3.1) and the frame decompositions of g and g^{-1} provided by (2.40a) and (2.40b). □

We derive our energy estimates with the help of the following multiplier vectorfield.

Definition 3.1 (**The timelike multiplier vectorfield** T). We define (see Footnote 30 on pg. 22 regarding the notation)

$$T := (1 + 2\mu)L + 2\breve{X}. \tag{3.4}$$

A simple calculation yields that $g(T, T) = -4\mu(1 + \mu)$. Thus, T is g-timelike whenever $\mu > 0$. This property is important because it leads to coercive energy identities.

In the next lemma, we provide the frame components of $^{(T)}\pi$. These are important for our energy estimates because $^{(T)}\pi$ appears in our fundamental energy-flux identity (see Prop. 3.5).

Lemma 3.3 (**The frame components of** $^{(T)}\pi$). *The components of the deformation tensor $^{(T)}\pi$ (see Def. 2.24) of the multiplier vectorfield (3.4) can be expressed as follows relative to the rescaled frame:*

$$^{(T)}\pi_{LL} = 0, \tag{3.5a}$$

$$^{(T)}\pi_{L\breve{X}} = -\left\{ L\mu + 4\mu L\mu + 2\breve{X}\mu \right\}, \tag{3.5b}$$

$$^{(T)}\pi_{\breve{X}X} = 2(1 + 2\mu)L\mu, \tag{3.5c}$$

$$^{(T)}\slashed{\pi}_L = -2\slashed{d}\mu - 4\left\{ \zeta^{(Trans-\Psi)} + \mu\zeta^{(Tan-\Psi)} \right\}, \tag{3.5d}$$

$$^{(T)}\slashed{\pi}_{\breve{X}} = \slashed{d}\mu + 2(1 + 2\mu)\left\{ \zeta^{(Trans-\Psi)} + \mu\zeta^{(Tan-\Psi)} \right\}, \tag{3.5e}$$

$$^{(T)}\slashed{\pi} = 2\chi + 4\left\{ \slashed{k}^{(Trans-\Psi)} + \mu\slashed{k}^{(Tan-\Psi)} \right\}. \tag{3.5f}$$

The $\ell_{t,u}$ tensorfields χ, $\zeta^{(Trans-\Psi)}$, $\slashed{k}^{(Trans-\Psi)}$, $\zeta^{(Tan-\Psi)}$, and $\slashed{k}^{(Tan-\Psi)}$ from above are as in (2.37), (2.67a), (2.67b), (2.68a), and (2.68b).

Proof The proof is similar to that of Lemma 2.18 but is much simpler because cancellations do not play a role; we therefore omit the details. □

We define our geometric integrals in terms of length, area, and volume forms that remain non-degenerate throughout the evolution, all the way up to the shock.

Definition 3.2 (**Non-degenerate forms and related integrals**). We define the length form $d\lambda_{\slashed{g}}$ on $\ell_{t,u}$, the area form $d\underline{\varpi}$ on Σ_t^u, the area form $d\overline{\varpi}$ on $\mathcal{P}_u^t$, and the volume form $d\varpi$ on $\mathcal{M}_{t,u}$ as follows (relative to the geometric coordinates):

$$d\lambda_{\slashed{g}} = d\lambda_{\slashed{g}(t,u,\vartheta)} := \upsilon(t, u, \vartheta)d\vartheta, \qquad d\underline{\varpi} = d\underline{\varpi}(t, u', \vartheta) := d\lambda_{\slashed{g}}(t, u', \vartheta)du',$$
$$d\overline{\varpi} = d\overline{\varpi}(t', u, \vartheta) := d\lambda_{\slashed{g}}(t', u, \vartheta)dt', \quad d\varpi = d\varpi(t', u', \vartheta) := d\lambda_{\slashed{g}}(t', u', \vartheta)du'dt', \tag{3.6}$$

where υ is the scalar function from Def. 2.19.

If f is a scalar function, then we define

$$\int_{\ell_{t,u}} f \, d\lambda_{\slashed{g}} := \int_{\vartheta \in \mathbb{T}} f(t, u, \vartheta) \, \upsilon(t, u, \vartheta)d\vartheta, \tag{3.7a}$$

$$\int_{\Sigma_t^u} f \, d\underline{\varpi} := \int_{u'=0}^{u} \int_{\vartheta \in \mathbb{T}} f(t, u', \vartheta) \, \upsilon(t, u', \vartheta) d\vartheta \, du', \tag{3.7b}$$

$$\int_{\mathcal{P}_u^t} f \, d\overline{\varpi} := \int_{t'=0}^{t} \int_{\vartheta \in \mathbb{T}} f(t', u, \vartheta) \, \upsilon(t', u, \vartheta) d\vartheta \, dt', \tag{3.7c}$$

$$\int_{\mathcal{M}_{t,u}} f \, d\varpi := \int_{t'=0}^{t} \int_{u'=0}^{u} \int_{\vartheta \in \mathbb{T}} f(t', u', \vartheta) \, \upsilon(t', u', \vartheta) d\vartheta \, du' dt'. \tag{3.7d}$$

Remark 3.1 The canonical forms associated to $\underline{g}$ and g are respectively $\mu d\underline{\varpi}$ and $\mu d\varpi$.

We now define energies and null fluxes, which serve as building blocks for the quantities that we use in our L^2 analysis of solutions.

Definition 3.3 (**Energy and null flux**). In terms of the non-degenerate forms of Def. 3.2, we define the energy functional $\mathbb{E}[\cdot]$ and null flux functional $\mathbb{F}[\cdot]$ as follows:

$$\mathbb{E}[\Psi](t, u) := \int_{\Sigma_t^u} \mu Q_{NT}[\Psi] \, d\underline{\varpi}, \qquad \mathbb{F}[\Psi](t, u) := \int_{\mathcal{P}_u^t} Q_{LT}[\Psi] \, d\overline{\varpi}, \tag{3.8}$$

where N and T are the vectorfields defined in (2.18) and (3.4).

In the next lemma, we reveal the coercive nature of $\mathbb{E}[\Psi]$ and $\mathbb{F}[\Psi]$.

Lemma 3.4 (**Coercivity of the energy and null flux**). *The energy and null flux from Def. 3.3 enjoy the following coerciveness properties:*

$$\mathbb{E}[\Psi](t, u) = \int_{\Sigma_t^u} \frac{1}{2}(1 + 2\mu)\mu(L\Psi)^2 + 2\mu(L\Psi)\check{X}\Psi + 2(\check{X}\Psi)^2$$

$$+ \frac{1}{2}(1 + 2\mu)\mu|\slashed{d}\Psi|^2 \, d\underline{\varpi}, \tag{3.9a}$$

$$\mathbb{F}[\Psi](t, u) = \int_{\mathcal{P}_u^t} (1 + \mu)(L\Psi)^2 + \mu|\slashed{d}\Psi|^2 \, d\overline{\varpi}. \tag{3.9b}$$

Proof The lemma follows from the identities

$$\mu Q_{NT} = \frac{1}{2}(1 + \mu)\mu(L\Psi)^2 + \frac{1}{2}(\mu L\Psi + 2\check{X}\Psi)^2 + \frac{1}{2}(1 + 2\mu)\mu|\slashed{d}\Psi|^2, \tag{3.10}$$

$$Q_{LT} = (1 + \mu)(L\Psi)^2 + \mu|\slashed{d}\Psi|^2, \tag{3.11}$$

which are a simple consequence of Lemma 3.2 and the identities (2.18) and (3.4). $\quad\square$

In the next proposition, we provide the fundamental energy-flux identities that hold for solutions to the inhomogeneous wave equation $\mu \Box_{g(\Psi)} \Psi = \mathfrak{F}$. The term $\mathfrak{F}$ represents the error terms that arise upon commuting the homogeneous equation (1.1a) after it has been multiplied by the factor μ (see Remark 4.1 below for an explanation

of why we include the factor μ). See Figure 2 on pg. 13 for a picture of the spacetime region $\mathcal{M}_{t,u}$ on which we apply the divergence theorem and the relevant boundary surfaces Σ_0^u, Σ_t^u, $\mathcal{P}_0^t$, and $\mathcal{P}_u^t$.

Remark 3.2 In Figure 2, the (unlabeled) front and back boundaries should be identified; they represent the same "periodic timelike surface" $\{\vartheta = \text{const}\}$ and thus they do not make a contribution to the energy identity of Prop. 3.5.

Proposition 3.5 (**Fundamental energy-flux identity**). *For solutions* Ψ *to*

$$\mu \square_{g(\Psi)} \Psi = \mathfrak{F}$$

that vanish along the outer null hyperplane $\mathcal{P}_0$*, we have the following identity involving the energy and flux from Def. 3.3:*

$$\mathbb{E}[\Psi](t,u) + \mathbb{F}[\Psi](t,u)$$
$$= \mathbb{E}[\Psi](0,u) - \int_{\mathcal{M}_{t,u}} \left\{ (1+2\mu)(L\Psi) + 2\check{X}\Psi \right\} \mathfrak{F} \, d\varpi$$
$$- \frac{1}{2} \int_{\mathcal{M}_{t,u}} \mu Q^{\alpha\beta}[\Psi]^{(T)}\pi_{\alpha\beta} \, d\varpi. \tag{3.12}$$

Furthermore, with $f_+ := \max\{f, 0\}$ *and* $f_- := \max\{-f, 0\}$*, we have*

$$^{(T)}\mathfrak{P}[\Psi] := -\frac{1}{2}\mu Q^{\alpha\beta}[\Psi]^{(T)}\pi_{\alpha\beta} = -\frac{1}{2}\mu|d\!\!\!/\Psi|^2 \frac{[L\mu]_-}{\mu} + \sum_{i=1}^5 {}^{(T)}\mathfrak{P}_{(i)}[\Psi], \tag{3.13}$$

where

$$^{(T)}\mathfrak{P}_{(1)}[\Psi] := (L\Psi)^2 \left\{ -\frac{1}{2}L\mu + \check{X}\mu - \frac{1}{2}\mu\mathrm{tr}_{\mathscr{g}}\chi - \mathrm{tr}_{\mathscr{g}}k^{(Trans-\Psi)} - \mu\mathrm{tr}_{\mathscr{g}}k^{(Tan-\Psi)} \right\}, \tag{3.14a}$$

$$^{(T)}\mathfrak{P}_{(2)}[\Psi] := -(L\Psi)(\check{X}\Psi) \left\{ \mathrm{tr}_{\mathscr{g}}\chi + 2\mathrm{tr}_{\mathscr{g}}k^{(Trans-\Psi)} + 2\mu\mathrm{tr}_{\mathscr{g}}k^{(Tan-\Psi)} \right\}, \tag{3.14b}$$

$$^{(T)}\mathfrak{P}_{(3)}[\Psi] := \mu|d\!\!\!/\Psi|^2 \left\{ \frac{1}{2}\frac{[L\mu]_+}{\mu} + \frac{\check{X}\mu}{\mu} + 2L\mu - \frac{1}{2}\mathrm{tr}_{\mathscr{g}}\chi \right.$$
$$\left. - \mathrm{tr}_{\mathscr{g}}k^{(Trans-\Psi)} - \mu\mathrm{tr}_{\mathscr{g}}k^{(Tan-\Psi)} \right\}, \tag{3.14c}$$

$$^{(T)}\mathfrak{P}_{(4)}[\Psi] := (L\Psi)(d\!\!\!/^{\#}\Psi) \cdot \left\{ (1-2\mu)d\!\!\!/\mu + 2\zeta^{(Trans-\Psi)} + 2\mu\zeta^{(Tan-\Psi)} \right\}, \tag{3.14d}$$

$$^{(T)}\mathfrak{P}_{(5)}[\Psi] := -2(\check{X}\Psi)(d\!\!\!/^{\#}\Psi) \cdot \left\{ d\!\!\!/\mu + 2\zeta^{(Trans-\Psi)} + 2\mu\zeta^{(Tan-\Psi)} \right\}. \tag{3.14e}$$

The tensorfields χ*,* $\zeta^{(Trans-\Psi)}$*,* $k^{(Trans-\Psi)}$*,* $\zeta^{(Tan-\Psi)}$*, and* $k^{(Tan-\Psi)}$ *from above are as in* (2.37)*,* (2.67a)*,* (2.67b)*,* (2.68a)*, and* (2.68b)*.*

Proof We define the vectorfield $J^\alpha := Q^{\alpha\beta}[\Psi]T_\beta$, where T is defined in (3.4). We decompose $J = J^t \frac{\partial}{\partial t} + J^u \frac{\partial}{\partial u} + J^\Theta \Theta$, where J^t, J^u, J^Θ are scalar functions and we recall that $\Theta = \frac{\partial}{\partial\vartheta}$. We claim that

$$J^u = -\mu^{-1} Q_{LT}[\Psi], \tag{3.15}$$

$$J^t = \mu J^u - J_X = -Q_{LT}[\Psi] - Q_{XT}[\Psi] = -Q_{NT}[\Psi], \tag{3.16}$$

where N is the vectorfield defined in (2.18). To derive (3.15), we take the inner product of the decomposition equation with L and use (2.23) to find that $g(J, L) = J^u g(L, \frac{\partial}{\partial u}) = J^u g(L, \frac{\partial}{\partial u} - \xi\Theta) = J^u g(L, \check{X}) = -\mu J^u$. Since $g(J, L) = Q_{LT}[\Psi]$, we have obtained the desired identity (3.15). The proof of (3.16) is similar and we omit it. Next, we note the identity

$$\int_{\mathcal{M}_{t,u}} \mu \mathscr{D}_\alpha J^\alpha \, d\varpi = \int_{t'=0}^{t} \int_{u'=0}^{u} \int_{\vartheta \in \mathbb{T}} \frac{\partial}{\partial t} \left(\mu\upsilon J^t\right) + \frac{\partial}{\partial u} \left(\mu\upsilon J^u\right)$$
$$+ \frac{\partial}{\partial\vartheta} \left(\mu\upsilon J^\Theta\right) \, dt' \, du' \, d\vartheta. \tag{3.17}$$

(3.17) follows from the standard identity for the divergence of a vectorfield expressed relative to a coordinate frame (in this case the geometric coordinates) and the formula (2.45), which implies that $|\det g|^{1/2} = \mu\upsilon$ (where the determinant is taken relative to the geometric coordinates). Using Fubini's theorem, carrying out some integrations in (3.17), and noting that the integral of $\frac{\partial}{\partial\vartheta}\left(\mu\upsilon J^\Theta\right)$ over $\mathbb{T}$ vanishes, we deduce

$$\text{RHS (3.1.17)} = \int_{u'=0}^{u} \int_{\vartheta\in\mathbb{T}} \left(\mu\upsilon J^t\right)(t, u', \vartheta) \, du' \, d\vartheta$$
$$- \int_{u'=0}^{u} \int_{\vartheta\in\mathbb{T}} \left(\mu\upsilon J^t\right)(0, u', \vartheta) \, du' \, d\vartheta$$
$$+ \int_{t'=0}^{t} \int_{\vartheta\in\mathbb{T}} \left(\mu\upsilon J^u\right)(t', u, \vartheta) \, dt' \, d\vartheta$$
$$- \int_{t'=0}^{t} \int_{\vartheta\in\mathbb{T}} \left(\mu\upsilon J^u\right)(t', 0, \vartheta) \, dt' \, d\vartheta. \tag{3.18}$$

Inserting (3.15) and (3.16) into (3.18), we obtain all terms in (3.12) except for the two $\mathcal{M}_{t,u}$ integrals on the RHS. The proof of (3.12) will be complete once we show that the integrands under the $\mathcal{M}_{t,u}$ integrals sum to $\mu \mathscr{D}_\alpha(Q^{\alpha\beta}[\Psi]T_\beta)$. This fact follows from (3.2) and the symmetry of Q, which imply that $\mu \mathscr{D}_\alpha(Q^{\alpha\beta}[\Psi]T_\beta) = \frac{1}{2}\mu Q^{\alpha\beta\,(T)}\pi_{\alpha\beta} + \mu(T\Psi)\mathfrak{F}$.

It remains for us to derive (3.13). We first write $Q^{\alpha\beta}[\Psi]^{(T)}\pi_{\alpha\beta} = (g^{-1})^{\alpha\beta}(g^{-1})^{\kappa\lambda} Q_{\alpha\kappa}[\Psi]^{(T)}\pi_{\beta\lambda}$. We then decompose the two g^{-1} factors relative to the frame $\{L, X, \Theta\}$ with the formula (2.40b). Also using Lemmas 3.2 and 3.3, we conclude (3.13) from straightforward calculations. $\qquad\square$

To close our top-order energy estimates, we must perform some additional integrations by parts, going beyond those of Prop. 3.5. We provide the required identities in the next lemma.

Lemma 3.6 (**Identities connected to integration by parts**). *The following identities hold for scalar functions f:*

$$\frac{\partial}{\partial t} \int_{\ell_{t,u}} f \, d\lambda_{\not{g}} = \int_{\ell_{t,u}} Lf + \mathrm{tr}_{\not{g}}\chi f \, d\lambda_{\not{g}}, \tag{3.19a}$$

$$\frac{\partial}{\partial u} \int_{\ell_{t,u}} f \, d\lambda_{\not{g}} = \int_{\ell_{t,u}} \check{X} f + \frac{1}{2}\mathrm{tr}_{\not{g}}{}^{(\check{X})}\!\not{\pi} f \, d\lambda_{\not{g}}, \tag{3.19b}$$

$$\frac{\partial}{\partial t} \int_{\Sigma_t^u} f \, d\varpi = \int_{\Sigma_t^u} Lf + \mathrm{tr}_{\not{g}}\chi f \, d\varpi. \tag{3.19c}$$

Moreover, we have the following integration by parts identities:

$$\int_{\ell_{t,u}} (Yf_1)f_2 \, d\lambda_{\not{g}} = -\int_{\ell_{t,u}} f_1(Yf_2) \, d\lambda_{\not{g}} - \int_{\ell_{t,u}} \overbrace{\mathrm{d\!i\!v}Y}^{\frac{1}{2}\mathrm{tr}_{\not{g}}{}^{(Y)}\!\not{\pi}} f_1 f_2 \, d\lambda_{\not{g}}, \tag{3.20}$$

$$\int_{\mathcal{M}_{t,u}} (Lf_1)f_2 \, d\varpi = -\int_{\mathcal{M}_{t,u}} f_1(Lf_2) \, d\varpi - \int_{\mathcal{M}_{t,u}} \mathrm{tr}_{\not{g}}\chi f_1 f_2 \, d\varpi$$

$$+ \int_{\Sigma_t^u} f_1 f_2 \, d\varpi - \int_{\Sigma_0^u} f_1 f_2 \, d\varpi. \tag{3.21}$$

Finally, the following integration by parts identity holds for scalar functions η:

$$\int_{\mathcal{M}_{t,u}} (1+2\mu)(\check{X}\Psi)(L\mathscr{P}^N\Psi)Y\eta \, d\varpi$$

$$= \int_{\mathcal{M}_{t,u}} (1+2\mu)(\check{X}\Psi)(Y\mathscr{P}^N\Psi)L\eta \, d\varpi$$

$$- \int_{\Sigma_t^u} (1+2\mu)(\check{X}\Psi)(Y\mathscr{P}^N\Psi)\eta \, d\varpi + \int_{\Sigma_0^u} (1+2\mu)(\check{X}\Psi)(Y\mathscr{P}^N\Psi)\eta \, d\varpi$$

$$+ \int_{\mathcal{M}_{t,u}} \mathrm{Error}_1[\mathscr{P}^N\Psi;\eta] \, d\varpi + \int_{\Sigma_t^u} \mathrm{Error}_2[\mathscr{P}^N\Psi;\eta] \, d\varpi$$

$$- \int_{\Sigma_0^u} \mathrm{Error}_2[\mathscr{P}^N\Psi;\eta] \, d\varpi, \tag{3.22}$$

where

$$\mathrm{Error}_1[\mathscr{P}^N\Psi;\eta] := 2(L\mu)(\check{X}\Psi)(Y\mathscr{P}^N\Psi)\eta + (1+2\mu)(L\check{X}\Psi)(Y\mathscr{P}^N\Psi)\eta$$

$$+ (1+2\mu)(\check{X}\Psi)({}^{(Y)}\!\not{\pi}_L^{\#} \cdot \mathrm{d}\!\!\!/\mathscr{P}^N\Psi)\eta + (1+2\mu)(\check{X}\Psi)\mathrm{tr}_{\not{g}}\chi(Y\mathscr{P}^N\Psi)\eta$$

$$+ 2(Y\mu)(\check{X}\Psi)(\mathscr{P}^N\Psi)L\eta + (1+2\mu)(Y\check{X}\Psi)(\mathscr{P}^N\Psi)L\eta$$

$$+ \frac{1}{2}(1+2\mu)(\check{X}\Psi)\mathrm{tr}_{\not{g}}{}^{(Y)}\!\not{\pi}(\mathscr{P}^N\Psi)L\eta$$

$$+ 2(LY\mu)(\check{X}\Psi)(\mathscr{P}^N\Psi)\eta + 2(Y\mu)(L\check{X}\Psi)(\mathscr{P}^N\Psi)\eta$$

$$+ 2(Y\mu)(\check{X}\Psi)\mathrm{tr}_{\not{g}}\chi(\mathscr{P}^N\Psi)\eta + (L\mu)(\check{X}\Psi)\mathrm{tr}_{\not{g}}^{(Y)}\!\!\not{\pi}(\mathscr{P}^N\Psi)\eta$$

$$+ (1+2\mu)(LY\check{X}\Psi)(\mathscr{P}^N\Psi)\eta + (1+2\mu)(\check{X}\Psi)(Y\mathrm{tr}_{\not{g}}\chi)(\mathscr{P}^N\Psi)\eta$$

$$+ (1+2\mu)(Y\check{X}\Psi)\mathrm{tr}_{\not{g}}\chi(\mathscr{P}^N\Psi)\eta + \frac{1}{2}(1+2\mu)(L\check{X}\Psi)\mathrm{tr}_{\not{g}}^{(Y)}\!\!\not{\pi}(\mathscr{P}^N\Psi)\eta$$

$$+ (1+2\mu)(\check{X}\Psi)(\mathrm{div}^{(Y)}\!\!\not{\pi}_L^{\#})(\mathscr{P}^N\Psi)\eta + \frac{1}{2}(1+2\mu)(\check{X}\Psi)\mathrm{tr}_{\not{g}}\chi\mathrm{tr}_{\not{g}}^{(Y)}\!\!\not{\pi}(\mathscr{P}^N\Psi)\eta,$$

(3.23a)

$$\mathrm{Error}_2[\mathscr{P}^N\Psi;\eta] := -2(Y\mu)(\check{X}\Psi)(\mathscr{P}^N\Psi)\eta - (1+2\mu)(Y\check{X}\Psi)(\mathscr{P}^N\Psi)\eta$$

$$- \frac{1}{2}(1+2\mu)(\check{X}\Psi)\mathrm{tr}_{\not{g}}^{(Y)}\!\!\not{\pi}(\mathscr{P}^N\Psi)\eta.$$

(3.23b)

Proof To prove (3.19b), we first fix t and construct a local coordinate $\widetilde{\vartheta}$ on $\Sigma_t^{U_0} = \cup_{u\in[0,U_0]}\ell_{t,u}$ by setting $\widetilde{\vartheta} = \vartheta$ on $\ell_{t,0}$ and then propagating $\widetilde{\vartheta}$ by solving the transport equation $\check{X}\widetilde{\vartheta} = 0$. Since $\check{X}u = 1$, it follows that relative to the coordinates $(u, \widetilde{\vartheta})$ on $\Sigma_t^{U_0}$, we have $[\check{X}, \frac{\partial}{\partial\widetilde{\vartheta}}] = 0$ and $\check{X} = \frac{\partial}{\partial u}$. Relative to $(u, \widetilde{\vartheta})$ coordinates on $\Sigma_t^{U_0}$, we have $\not{g}^{-1} = \widetilde{\upsilon}^{-2}\frac{\partial}{\partial\widetilde{\vartheta}} \otimes \frac{\partial}{\partial\widetilde{\vartheta}}$ and $d\lambda_{\not{g}} = \widetilde{\upsilon}d\widetilde{\vartheta}$, where $\widetilde{\upsilon}^2 = g(\frac{\partial}{\partial\widetilde{\vartheta}}, \frac{\partial}{\partial\widetilde{\vartheta}})$ (see (2.41), (2.42), and (3.6)). Differentiating with $\mathcal{L}_{\check{X}}$ and using (2.58), we find that $-^{(\check{X})}\!\!\not{\pi}^{\#\#} = \mathcal{L}_{\check{X}}\not{g}^{-1} = -2\widetilde{\upsilon}^{-3}\check{X}\widetilde{\upsilon}\frac{\partial}{\partial\widetilde{\vartheta}} \otimes \frac{\partial}{\partial\widetilde{\vartheta}}$. Contracting against $\not{g}$, we obtain the identity $\check{X}\ln\widetilde{\upsilon} = (1/2)\mathrm{tr}_{\not{g}}^{(\check{X})}\!\!\not{\pi}$. We now express the integrand on LHS (3.19b) in $(u, \widetilde{\vartheta})$ coordinates, differentiate under the integral, and use that $\check{X} = \frac{\partial}{\partial u}$ in these coordinates to obtain $\frac{\partial}{\partial u}\int_{\ell_{t,u}} f\, d\lambda_{\not{g}} = \int_{\ell_{t,u}} \left\{\check{X}f + (\check{X}\ln\widetilde{\upsilon})f\right\}\widetilde{\upsilon}d\widetilde{\vartheta}$. Using this identity and the previous expression for $\check{X}\ln\widetilde{\upsilon}$, we conclude (3.19b).

The proof of (3.19a) is similar and relies on the identity $L\ln\upsilon = \mathrm{tr}_{\not{g}}\chi$ (see (2.72c)); we omit the details.

(3.19c) follows from (3.19a) and the fact that $\int_{\Sigma_t^u}\cdots d\varpi = \int_{u'=0}^u \int_{\ell_{t,u'}}\cdots d\lambda_{\not{g}}du'$.

(3.20) follows easily from integrating the identity $(Yf_1)f_2 + (Yf_2)f_1 = Y(f_1f_2) = \mathrm{div}(f_1f_2 Y) - f_1f_2\mathrm{div}Y$ over $\ell_{t,u}$.

(3.21) follows from integrating the identity (3.19c) with $f = f_1f_2$ with respect to time from time 0 to time t.

The identity (3.22) follows from a series of tedious but straightforward integrations by parts that we now describe. We first integrate by parts using (3.21) in order to move the L operator off of $L\mathscr{P}^N\Psi$. This procedure results in the presence of the integral $-\int_{\mathcal{M}_{t,u}}(1+2\mu)(\check{X}\Psi)(\mathscr{P}^N\Psi)LY\eta\,d\varpi$ (among others). We then commute L and Y to obtain the identity $LY\eta = YL\eta + {}^{(Y)}\!\!\not{\pi}_L^{\#}\cdot\not{d}\eta$ (see (2.57)), which we substitute into the previous integral. We then use (3.20) to move all Y derivatives off of all factors of η in all of the error integrals. Finally, we integrate by parts on the $\ell_{t,u}$ to move all $\not{d}$ derivatives off of all factors of η in all of the error integrals. $\qquad\square$

4 The Structure of the Terms in the Commuted Wave Equation

To derive energy estimates for the higher derivatives of Ψ, we commute the wave equation $\mu\Box_{g(\Psi)}\Psi = 0$ with vectorfields $Z \in \mathscr{Z}$. In this section, we reveal the

precise structure of the commutator error terms $[Z, \mu\Box_{g(\Psi)}]\Psi$. By precise structure, we mean that we decompose all terms relative to the rescaled frame $\{L, \breve{X}, \Theta\}$ and keep track of the exact expressions including the constant coefficients; some of these constants affect the number of derivatives we need to close our estimates.

Remark 4.1 We have included the factor of μ in front of the operator $\Box_{g(\Psi)}$ in the wave equation because it leads to important cancellations in the commutation identities.

We start with the following standard commutation identity.

Lemma 4.1 ([11, Lemma 7.1.3]). *If* $\xi_{\alpha_1 \cdots \alpha_n}$ *is any type* $\binom{0}{n}$ *spacetime tensorfield,* V *is any spacetime vectorfield, and* $^{(V)}\pi$ *is its deformation tensor (see Def. 2.24), then*

$$\mathscr{D}_\beta \mathcal{L}_V \xi_{\alpha_1 \cdots \alpha_n} - \mathcal{L}_V \mathscr{D}_\beta \xi_{\alpha_1 \cdots \alpha_n}$$
$$= \frac{1}{2} \sum_{i=1}^n \left\{ \mathscr{D}_{\alpha_i}{}^{(V)}\pi_\beta{}^\kappa + \mathscr{D}_\beta{}^{(V)}\pi_{\alpha_i}{}^\kappa - \mathscr{D}^\kappa {}^{(V)}\pi_{\alpha_i\beta} \right\} \xi_{\alpha_1 \cdots \alpha_{i-1}\kappa\alpha_{i+1}\cdots\alpha_n}. \quad (4.1)$$

We now use Lemma 4.1 to derive an identity for $[\mu\Box_g, Z]$.

Lemma 4.2 (**Vectorfield-covariant wave operator commutation lemma**). *For the vectorfields* $Z \in \mathscr{Z}$ *(see Def. 2.22), which by Lemma 2.18 satisfy* $^{(Z)}\pi_{LL} = 0$ *and* $^{(Z)}\pi_{L\breve{X}} = -Z\mu$, *we have the following commutation identity:*

$$\mu\Box_{g(\Psi)}(Z\Psi) = \mu\mathscr{D}_\alpha \left\{ {}^{(Z)}\pi^{\alpha\beta}\mathscr{D}_\beta\Psi - \frac{1}{2}\mathrm{tr}_g{}^{(Z)}\pi\,\mathscr{D}^\alpha\Psi \right\} + Z(\mu\Box_{g(\Psi)}\Psi)$$
$$+ \frac{1}{2}\mathrm{tr}_g{}^{(Z)}\pi(\mu\Box_{g(\Psi)}\Psi), \quad (4.2)$$

where $\mathrm{tr}_g{}^{(Z)}\pi := (g^{-1})^{\alpha\beta}{}^{(Z)}\pi_{\alpha\beta}$.

Proof We begin by applying Z to $\mu\Box_{g(\Psi)}\Psi$ and using the Leibniz rule for Lie derivatives and the Lie derivative identity $(\mathcal{L}_Z g^{-1})^{\alpha\beta} = -{}^{(Z)}\pi^{\alpha\beta}$ to obtain the identity $Z(\mu\Box_{g(\Psi)}\Psi) = (Z\mu)\Box_{g(\Psi)}\Psi - \mu^{(Z)}\pi^{\alpha\beta}\mathscr{D}_\alpha\mathscr{D}_\beta\Psi + \mu(g^{-1})^{\alpha\beta}\mathcal{L}_Z\mathscr{D}_\alpha\mathscr{D}_\beta\Psi$. Applying (4.1) with $\xi := \mathscr{D}\Psi$, we obtain $\mathscr{D}_\alpha\mathscr{D}_\beta Z\Psi = \mathcal{L}_Z\mathscr{D}_\alpha\mathscr{D}_\beta\Psi + \frac{1}{2}\left\{ \mathscr{D}_\alpha{}^{(Z)}\pi_{\lambda\beta}\mathscr{D}^\lambda\Psi + \mathscr{D}_\beta{}^{(Z)}\pi_{\alpha\lambda}\mathscr{D}^\lambda\Psi - \mathscr{D}_\lambda{}^{(Z)}\pi_{\alpha\beta}\mathscr{D}^\lambda\Psi \right\}$. Contracting the previous identity against $(g^{-1})^{\alpha\beta}$ and using the Leibniz rule for Lie derivatives and the aforementioned identity $(\mathcal{L}_Z g^{-1})^{\alpha\beta} = -{}^{(Z)}\pi^{\alpha\beta}$, we find that

$$\Box_{g(\Psi)}Z\Psi = Z(\Box_{g(\Psi)}\Psi) + {}^{(Z)}\pi^{\alpha\beta}\mathscr{D}_\alpha\mathscr{D}_\beta\Psi + (\mathscr{D}_\alpha{}^{(Z)}\pi^{\alpha\lambda})\mathscr{D}_\lambda\Psi$$
$$- \frac{1}{2}\mathscr{D}_\lambda\left\{(g^{-1})^{\alpha\beta}{}^{(Z)}\pi_{\alpha\beta}\right\}\mathscr{D}^\lambda\Psi$$
$$= Z(\Box_{g(\Psi)}\Psi) + \mathscr{D}_\alpha\left\{ {}^{(Z)}\pi^{\alpha\beta}\mathscr{D}_\beta\Psi - \frac{1}{2}\mathrm{tr}_g{}^{(Z)}\pi\,\mathscr{D}^\alpha\Psi \right\}$$
$$+ \frac{1}{2}\mathrm{tr}_g{}^{(Z)}\pi\Box_{g(\Psi)}\Psi. \quad (4.3)$$

The identity (4.2) now follows easily from (4.3), the identity $\frac{1}{2}\mathrm{tr}_{g}{}^{(Z)}\pi = -\frac{1}{2}{}^{(Z)}\pi_{LL} - \mu^{-1}{}^{(Z)}\pi_{L\check{X}} + \frac{1}{2}\mathrm{tr}_{\not{g}}{}^{(Z)}\not{\pi}$ (see (2.40b)), and the assumed properties ${}^{(Z)}\pi_{LL} = 0$ and ${}^{(Z)}\pi_{L\check{X}} = -Z\mu$. $\qquad\square$

In the next proposition, we decompose the first term on RHS (4.2) relative to the rescaled frame. Our proof of the proposition relies on the following lemma.

Lemma 4.3 (**Spacetime divergence in terms of derivatives of frame components**).
Let $\mathscr{J}$ be a spacetime vectorfield. Let $\mu\mathscr{J} = -\mu\mathscr{J}_L L - \mathscr{J}_{\check{X}}L - \mathscr{J}_L\check{X} + \mu\not{\mathscr{J}}$ be its decomposition relative to the rescaled frame, where $\mathscr{J}_L = \mathscr{J}^\alpha L_\alpha$, $\mathscr{J}_{\check{X}} = \mathscr{J}^\alpha\check{X}_\alpha$, and $\not{\mathscr{J}} = \not{\Pi}\mathscr{J}$. Then

$$\mu\mathscr{D}_\alpha\mathscr{J}^\alpha = -L(\mu\mathscr{J}_L) - L(\mathscr{J}_{\check{X}}) - \check{X}(\mathscr{J}_L) + \mathrm{d}\!/\!v\,(\mu\not{\mathscr{J}}) - \mu\mathrm{tr}_{\not{g}}k\,\mathscr{J}_L - \mathrm{tr}_{\not{g}}\chi\,\mathscr{J}_{\check{X}}, \tag{4.4}$$

where the $\ell_{t,u}$-tangent tensorfields χ and k can be expressed via (2.72a) and (2.66b).

Proof Using (2.40b), we find that

$$\begin{aligned}
\mu\mathscr{D}_\alpha\mathscr{J}^\alpha &= \mu(g^{-1})^{\alpha\beta}\mathscr{D}_\alpha\mathscr{J}_\beta \\
&= -L(\mu\mathscr{J}_L) - L(\mathscr{J}_{\check{X}}) - \check{X}(\mathscr{J}_L) + (\not{g}^{-1})^{\alpha\beta}\mathscr{D}_\alpha(\mu\mathscr{J}_\beta) \\
&\quad + (L\mu)\mathscr{J}_L + \mu(\mathscr{D}_L L^\alpha)\mathscr{J}_\alpha + (\mathscr{D}_L\check{X}^\alpha)\mathscr{J}_\alpha + (\mathscr{D}_{\check{X}}L^\alpha)\mathscr{J}_\alpha - \mathscr{J}\cdot\mathrm{d}\!/\mu.
\end{aligned} \tag{4.5}$$

Next, we use Lemma 2.13 to substitute for $\mathscr{D}_L L$, $\mathscr{D}_L\check{X}$, and $\mathscr{D}_{\check{X}}L$; we find that all terms on the last line of (4.5) cancel. We then use the rescaled frame decomposition formula to express $(\not{g}^{-1})^{\alpha\beta}\mathscr{D}_\alpha(\mu\mathscr{J}_\beta) = \mathrm{d}\!/\!v\,(\mu\not{\mathscr{J}}) - \mu\mathscr{J}_L(\not{g}^{-1})^{\alpha\beta}\mathscr{D}_\alpha L_\beta - \mathscr{J}_{\check{X}}(\not{g}^{-1})^{\alpha\beta}\mathscr{D}_\alpha L_\beta - \mathscr{J}_L(\not{g}^{-1})^{\alpha\beta}\mathscr{D}_\alpha\check{X}_\beta$ and then Lemma 2.13 to deduce the following identities, which we substitute into the previous equation: $(\not{g}^{-1})^{\alpha\beta}\mathscr{D}_\alpha L_\beta = \mathrm{tr}_{\not{g}}\chi$ and $(\not{g}^{-1})^{\alpha\beta}\mathscr{D}_\alpha\check{X}_\beta = \mu\mathrm{tr}_{\not{g}}k - \mu\mathrm{tr}_{\not{g}}\chi$. Straightforward calculations then lead to (4.4). $\qquad\square$

We now decompose the term $\mu\mathscr{D}_\alpha\left\{{}^{(Z)}\pi^{\alpha\beta}\mathscr{D}_\beta\Psi - \frac{1}{2}\mathrm{tr}_{g}{}^{(Z)}\pi\,\mathscr{D}^\alpha\Psi\right\}$ from RHS (4.2) relative to the rescaled frame.

Proposition 4.4 (**Frame decomposition of the divergence of the key inhomogeneous term**). *For vectorfields $Z \in \mathscr{Z}$, which have ${}^{(Z)}\pi_{LL} = 0$ and ${}^{(Z)}\pi_{L\check{X}} = -Z\mu$, we have the following identity for the first term on RHS (4.2):*

$$\begin{aligned}
\mu\mathscr{D}_\alpha\left\{{}^{(Z)}\pi^{\alpha\beta}\mathscr{D}_\beta\Psi - \frac{1}{2}\mathrm{tr}_{g}{}^{(Z)}\pi\,\mathscr{D}^\alpha\Psi\right\} &= \mathscr{K}^{(Z)}_{(\pi-Danger)}[\Psi] \\
&\quad + \mathscr{K}^{(Z)}_{(\pi-Cancel-1)}[\Psi] + \mathscr{K}^{(Z)}_{(\pi-Cancel-2)}[\Psi] \\
&\quad + \mathscr{K}^{(Z)}_{(\pi-Less\ Dangerous)}[\Psi] + \mathscr{K}^{(Z)}_{(\pi-Good)}[\Psi] \\
&\quad + \mathscr{K}^{(Z)}_{(\Psi)}[\Psi] + \mathscr{K}^{(Z)}_{(Low)}[\Psi],
\end{aligned} \tag{4.6}$$

where

$$\mathscr{K}^{(Z)}_{(\pi-Danger)}[\Psi] := -(\text{div}\,^{(Z)}\!\slashed{\pi}^{\#}_L)\check{X}\Psi, \tag{4.7a}$$

$$\mathscr{K}^{(Z)}_{(\pi-Cancel-1)}[\Psi] := \left\{\frac{1}{2}\check{X}\text{tr}_{\slashed{g}}{}^{(Z)}\!\slashed{\pi} - \text{div}\,^{(Z)}\!\slashed{\pi}^{\#}_{\check{X}} - \mu\text{div}\,^{(Z)}\!\slashed{\pi}^{\#}_L\right\}L\Psi, \tag{4.7b}$$

$$\mathscr{K}^{(Z)}_{(\pi-Cancel-2)}[\Psi] := \left\{-\mathcal{L}_{\check{X}}{}^{(Z)}\!\slashed{\pi}^{\#}_L + \slashed{d}^{\#(Z)}\pi_{L\check{X}}\right\}\cdot\slashed{d}\Psi, \tag{4.7c}$$

$$\mathscr{K}^{(Z)}_{(\pi-Less\ Dangerous)}[\Psi] := \frac{1}{2}\mu(\slashed{d}^{\#}\text{tr}_{\slashed{g}}{}^{(Z)}\!\slashed{\pi})\cdot\slashed{d}\Psi, \tag{4.7d}$$

$$\begin{aligned}\mathscr{K}^{(Z)}_{(\pi-Good)}[\Psi] := {}& \frac{1}{2}\mu(L\text{tr}_{\slashed{g}}{}^{(Z)}\!\slashed{\pi})L\Psi + (L^{(Z)}\pi_{L\check{X}})L\Psi + (L^{(Z)}\pi_{\check{X}X})L\Psi \\ & + \frac{1}{2}(L\text{tr}_{\slashed{g}}{}^{(Z)}\!\slashed{\pi})\check{X}\Psi - \mu(\mathcal{L}_L{}^{(Z)}\!\slashed{\pi}^{\#}_L)\cdot\slashed{d}\Psi - (\mathcal{L}_L{}^{(Z)}\!\slashed{\pi}^{\#}_{\check{X}})\cdot\slashed{d}\Psi,\end{aligned} \tag{4.7e}$$

$$\begin{aligned}\mathscr{K}^{(Z)}_{(\Psi)}[\Psi] := {}& \left\{\frac{1}{2}\mu\text{tr}_{\slashed{g}}{}^{(Z)}\!\slashed{\pi} + {}^{(Z)}\pi_{L\check{X}} + {}^{(Z)}\pi_{\check{X}X}\right\}L^2\Psi \\ & + \text{tr}_{\slashed{g}}{}^{(Z)}\!\slashed{\pi}L\check{X}\Psi - 2\mu^{(Z)}\!\slashed{\pi}^{\#}_L\cdot\slashed{d}L\Psi - 2^{(Z)}\!\slashed{\pi}^{\#}_{\check{X}}\cdot\slashed{d}L\Psi \\ & - 2^{(Z)}\!\slashed{\pi}^{\#}_L\cdot\slashed{d}\check{X}\Psi + {}^{(Z)}\pi_{L\check{X}}\slashed{\Delta}\Psi + \frac{1}{2}\mu\text{tr}_{\slashed{g}}{}^{(Z)}\!\slashed{\pi}\slashed{\Delta}\Psi,\end{aligned} \tag{4.8}$$

and

$$\begin{aligned}\mathscr{K}^{(Z)}_{(Low)}&[\Psi] \\ := {}& \left\{\frac{1}{2}(L\mu)\text{tr}_{\slashed{g}}{}^{(Z)}\!\slashed{\pi} + \frac{1}{2}\mu\text{tr}_{\slashed{g}}\slashed{k}\,\text{tr}_{\slashed{g}}{}^{(Z)}\!\slashed{\pi} + \text{tr}_{\slashed{g}}\chi^{(Z)}\pi_{L\check{X}} + \text{tr}_{\slashed{g}}\chi^{(Z)}\pi_{\check{X}X} - {}^{(Z)}\!\slashed{\pi}^{\#}_L\cdot\slashed{d}\mu\right\}L\Psi \\ & + \frac{1}{2}\text{tr}_{\slashed{g}}\chi\text{tr}_{\slashed{g}}{}^{(Z)}\!\slashed{\pi}\check{X}\Psi + \left\{-(L\mu)^{(Z)}\!\slashed{\pi}^{\#}_L - \mu\text{tr}_{\slashed{g}}\slashed{k}{}^{(Z)}\!\slashed{\pi}^{\#}_L - \text{tr}_{\slashed{g}}\chi^{(Z)}\!\slashed{\pi}^{\#}_{\check{X}} + \text{tr}_{\slashed{g}}\slashed{\pi}\slashed{d}^{\#}\mu + \text{tr}_{\slashed{g}}\chi\mu\zeta^{\#}\right\}\cdot\slashed{d}\Psi.\end{aligned} \tag{4.9}$$

In the above expressions, the $\ell_{t,u}$-tangent tensorfields χ, ζ, and $\slashed{k}$, are as in (2.72a), (2.66a), and (2.66b).

Proof We define $\mathscr{J}$ to be the spacetime vectorfield whose divergence is taken on LHS (4.6): $\mathscr{J}^{\alpha} := {}^{(Z)}\pi^{\alpha\beta}\mathscr{D}_{\beta}\Psi - \frac{1}{2}(g^{-1})^{\kappa\lambda(Z)}\pi_{\kappa\lambda}\mathscr{D}^{\alpha}\Psi$. With the help of Lemma 2.4, we compute that

$$\mathscr{J}_L = -\frac{1}{2}\text{tr}_{\slashed{g}}{}^{(Z)}\!\slashed{\pi}L\Psi + {}^{(Z)}\!\slashed{\pi}^{\#}_L\cdot\slashed{d}\Psi, \tag{4.10}$$

$$\mathscr{J}_{\check{X}} = -{}^{(Z)}\pi_{L\check{X}}L\Psi - {}^{(Z)}\pi_{\check{X}X}L\Psi + {}^{(Z)}\!\slashed{\pi}^{\#}_{\check{X}}\cdot\slashed{d}\Psi - \frac{1}{2}\text{tr}_{\slashed{g}}{}^{(Z)}\!\slashed{\pi}\check{X}\Psi, \tag{4.11}$$

$$\mu\mathscr{J} = -\mu^{(Z)}\!\slashed{\pi}^{\#}_L L\Psi - {}^{(Z)}\!\slashed{\pi}^{\#}_{\check{X}}L\Psi - {}^{(Z)}\!\slashed{\pi}^{\#}_L\check{X}\Psi + {}^{(Z)}\pi_{L\check{X}}\slashed{d}^{\#}\Psi + \frac{1}{2}\mu\text{tr}_{\slashed{g}}{}^{(Z)}\!\slashed{\pi}\slashed{d}^{\#}\Psi. \tag{4.12}$$

The proposition then follows from the divergence formula (4.4) and tedious but straightforward calculations. We remark that in our calculations, we use the iden-

tity $[L, \check{X}] = -\d^{\#}\mu - 2\mu\zeta^{\#}$ (see (2.57) and (2.76b)) to replace the term $\frac{1}{2}\mathrm{tr}_{\slashed{g}}{}^{(Z)}\slashed{\pi}\check{X}L\Psi$ arising from (4.10) with $\frac{1}{2}\mathrm{tr}_{\slashed{g}}{}^{(Z)}\slashed{\pi}L\check{X}\Psi + \frac{1}{2}\mathrm{tr}_{\slashed{g}}{}^{(Z)}\slashed{\pi}(\d^{\#}\mu)\cdot\d\Psi + \mathrm{tr}_{\slashed{g}}{}^{(Z)}\slashed{\pi}\mu\zeta^{\#}\cdot\d\Psi.$ $\square$

5 Differential Operator Commutation Identities

In this section, we provide a collection of commutation identities that we use when commuting the equations. The precise numerical constants and the structure of tensor contractions in these identities is not important for our estimates. Thus, we present some of the identities in schematic form.

Definition 5.1 (**Notation for repeated differentiation**). We recall the commutation sets $\mathscr{Z}$ and $\mathscr{P}$ from Def. 2.22. We label the three vectorfields in $\mathscr{Z}$ as follows: $Z_{(1)} = L$, $Z_{(2)} = Y$, $Z_{(3)} = \check{X}$. Note that $\mathscr{P} = \{Z_{(1)}, Z_{(2)}\}$. We define the following vectorfield operators:

- If $\vec{I} = (\iota_1, \iota_2, \cdots, \iota_N)$ is a multi-index of order $|\vec{I}| := N$ with $\iota_1, \iota_2, \cdots, \iota_N \in \{1, 2, 3\}$, then $\mathscr{Z}^{\vec{I}} := Z_{(\iota_1)}Z_{(\iota_2)}\cdots Z_{(\iota_N)}$ denotes the corresponding N^{th} order differential operator. We write $\mathscr{Z}^N$ rather than $\mathscr{Z}^{\vec{I}}$ when we are not concerned with the structure of $\vec{I}$.
- Similarly, $\mathcal{L}_{\mathscr{Z}}^{\vec{I}} := \mathcal{L}_{Z_{(\iota_1)}}\mathcal{L}_{Z_{(\iota_2)}}\cdots\mathcal{L}_{Z_{(\iota_N)}}$ denotes an Nth order $\ell_{t,u}$-projected Lie derivative operator (see Def. 2.13), and we write $\mathcal{L}_{\mathscr{Z}}^N$ when we are not concerned with the structure of $\vec{I}$.
- If $\vec{I} = (\iota_1, \iota_2, \cdots, \iota_N)$, then $\vec{I}_1 + \vec{I}_2 = \vec{I}$ means that $\vec{I}_1 = (\iota_{k_1}, \iota_{k_2}, \cdots, \iota_{k_m})$ and $\vec{I}_2 = (\iota_{k_{m+1}}, \iota_{k_{m+2}}, \cdots, \iota_{k_N})$, where $1 \le m \le N$ and $k_1, k_2, \cdots, k_N$ is a permutation of $1, 2, \cdots, N$.
- Sums such as $\vec{I}_1 + \vec{I}_2 + \cdots + \vec{I}_M = \vec{I}$ have an analogous meaning.
- $\mathcal{P}_u$-tangent operators such as $\mathscr{P}^{\vec{I}}$ are defined analogously, except in this case we clearly have $\iota_1, \iota_2, \cdots, \iota_N \in \{1, 2\}$.

Remark 5.1 (**Schematic depiction of the structure of $\mathscr{Z}^{\vec{I}}$ and $\mathscr{P}^{\vec{I}}$**). In deriving our estimates, we often need only partial information about the structure of the operators $\mathscr{Z}^{\vec{I}}$ and $\mathscr{P}^{\vec{I}}$. Thus, in Subsect. 7.2, we introduce additional shorthand notation that captures the information that we need.

Lemma 5.1 (**Preliminary identities for commuting $Z \in \mathscr{Z}$ with $\slashed{\nabla}$**). *For each $\mathscr{Z}$-multi-index $\vec{I}$ and integer $n \ge 1$, there exist constants $C_{\vec{I}_1, \vec{I}_2, \cdots, \vec{I}_{M+1}, n}$ such that the following commutator identity holds for all type $\binom{0}{n}$ $\ell_{t,u}$-tangent tensorfields ξ:*

$$[\slashed{\nabla}, \mathcal{L}_{\mathscr{Z}}^{\vec{I}}]\xi$$

$$= \sum_{M=1}^{|\vec{I}|} \sum_{\substack{\vec{I}_1 + \cdots + \vec{I}_{M+1} = \vec{I} \\ |\vec{I}_a| \ge 1 \text{ for } 1 \le a \le M}} C_{\vec{I}_1, \vec{I}_2, \cdots, \vec{I}_{M+1}, n} (\slashed{g}^{-1})^M \underbrace{(\mathcal{L}_{\mathscr{Z}}^{\vec{I}_1}\slashed{g})\cdots(\mathcal{L}_{\mathscr{Z}}^{\vec{I}_{M-1}}\slashed{g})}_{absent\ when\ M=1}(\slashed{\nabla}\mathcal{L}_{\mathscr{Z}}^{\vec{I}_M}\slashed{g})(\mathcal{L}_{\mathscr{Z}}^{\vec{I}_{M+1}}\xi).$$

$$(5.1)$$

Moreover, with $\mathrm{d}\!\!\!/\mathrm{i}\mathrm{v}$ *denoting the torus divergence operator from Def.* 2.16, *for each* $\mathscr{Z}$*-multi-index* $\vec{I}$*, there exist constants* $C_{\vec{I}_1,\vec{I}_2,\cdots,\vec{I}_{M+1},i_1,i_2}$ *such that the following commutator identity holds for all symmetric type* $\binom{0}{2}$ $\ell_{t,u}$*-tangent tensorfields* ξ:

$$
[\mathrm{d}\!\!\!/\mathrm{i}\mathrm{v}, \mathcal{L}_{\mathscr{Z}}^{\vec{I}}]\xi = \sum_{i_1+i_2=1} \sum_{M=1}^{|\vec{I}|} \sum_{\substack{\vec{I}_1+\cdots+\vec{I}_{M+1}=\vec{I} \\ |\vec{I}_a|\geq 1 \text{ for } 1\leq a\leq M}}
$$

$$
\times\, C_{\vec{I}_1,\vec{I}_2,\cdots,\vec{I}_{M+1},i_1,i_2}(\mathbf{g}^{-1})^{M+1} \underbrace{(\mathcal{L}_{\mathscr{Z}}^{\vec{I}_1}\mathbf{g})\cdots(\mathcal{L}_{\mathscr{Z}}^{\vec{I}_{M-1}}\mathbf{g})}_{\text{absent when } i_1=M=1}(\nabla\!\!\!\!/^{i_1}\mathcal{L}_{\mathscr{Z}}^{\vec{I}_M}\mathbf{g})(\nabla\!\!\!\!/^{i_2}\mathcal{L}_{\mathscr{Z}}^{\vec{I}_{M+1}}\xi).
$$

$$(5.2)$$

Finally, for each $\mathscr{Z}$*-multi-index* $\vec{I}$ *and each commutation vectorfield* $Z \in \mathscr{Z}$*, there exist constants* $C_{\vec{I}_1,\vec{I}_2,\cdots,\vec{I}_{M+1}}$ *and* $C_{\vec{I}_1,\vec{I}_2,\cdots,\vec{I}_{M+1},i_1,i_2}$ *such that the following commutator identity holds for all scalar-valued functions* f:

$$
[\nabla\!\!\!\!/^2, \mathcal{L}_{\mathscr{Z}}^{\vec{I}}]f
$$

$$
= \sum_{M=1}^{|\vec{I}|} \sum_{\substack{\vec{I}_1+\cdots+\vec{I}_{M+1}=\vec{I} \\ |\vec{I}_a|\geq 1 \text{ for } 1\leq a\leq M}} C_{\vec{I}_1,\vec{I}_2,\cdots,\vec{I}_{M+1}}(\mathbf{g}^{-1})^{M} \underbrace{(\mathcal{L}_{\mathscr{Z}}^{\vec{I}_1}\mathbf{g})\cdots(\mathcal{L}_{\mathscr{Z}}^{\vec{I}_{M-1}}\mathbf{g})}_{\text{absent when } M=1}(\nabla\!\!\!\!/\mathcal{L}_{\mathscr{Z}}^{\vec{I}_M}\mathbf{g})(\mathrm{d}\!\!\!/\mathscr{Z}^{\vec{I}_{M+1}}f),
$$

$$(5.3a)$$

$$
[\triangle\!\!\!\!/, \mathscr{Z}^{\vec{I}}]f = \sum_{i_1+i_2=1} \sum_{M=1}^{|\vec{I}|} \sum_{\substack{\vec{I}_1+\cdots+\vec{I}_{M+1}=\vec{I} \\ |\vec{I}_a|\geq 1 \text{ for } 1\leq a\leq M}}
$$

$$
\times\, C_{\vec{I}_1,\vec{I}_2,\cdots,\vec{I}_{M+1},i_1,i_2}(\mathbf{g}^{-1})^{M+1} \underbrace{(\mathcal{L}_{\mathscr{Z}}^{\vec{I}_1}\mathbf{g})\cdots(\mathcal{L}_{\mathscr{Z}}^{\vec{I}_{M-1}}\mathbf{g})}_{\text{absent when } i_1=M=1}(\nabla\!\!\!\!/^{i_1}\mathcal{L}_{\mathscr{Z}}^{\vec{I}_M}\mathbf{g})(\nabla\!\!\!\!/^{i_2+1}\mathscr{Z}^{\vec{I}_{M+1}}f).
$$

$$(5.3b)$$

In equations (5.1)–(5.3b), *we have omitted all tensorial contractions in order to condense the presentation.*

Proof We claim that for $Z \in \mathscr{Z}$, we have the schematic identity $[\nabla\!\!\!\!/, \mathcal{L}_Z]\xi \sim (\nabla\!\!\!\!/\mathcal{L}_Z\mathbf{g})^{\#} \cdot \xi$, correct up to constants. From this identity and the fact that $\mathcal{L}_Z\mathbf{g}^{-1} = -(\mathcal{L}_Z\mathbf{g})^{\#\#}$ (see (2.58)), a straightforward argument involving induction in $|\vec{I}|$, omitted here, yields (5.1). We now prove the claim in the case that ξ is an $\ell_{t,u}$-tangent one-form. The case of higher-order tensorfields then follows easily from the Leibniz rules for $\nabla\!\!\!\!/$ and $\mathcal{L}_Z$ and we omit those details. Moreover, it is easy to reduce the proof to the case $\xi_{\Theta} = 1$ (that is, $\xi = \mathrm{d}\!\!\!/\vartheta$); we thus assume for the remainder of the proof that $\xi = \mathrm{d}\!\!\!/\vartheta$. We now recall that $\upsilon^2 = \mathbf{g}(\Theta, \Theta)$ (see (2.41)). Note that $\nabla\!\!\!\!/$ is entirely determined by the formula $\nabla\!\!\!\!/_{\Theta}\Theta = \upsilon^{-1}(\Theta\upsilon)\Theta$. We first address the case $Z = L$. By Lemma 2.10 and the fact that $L\vartheta = 0$, we have $\nabla\!\!\!\!/\mathcal{L}_L\xi = \nabla\!\!\!\!/^2(L\vartheta) = 0$. Next, we compute compute that

$\overline{\nabla}^2_{\Theta\Theta}\vartheta := (\overline{\nabla}^2\vartheta)\cdot\Theta\otimes\Theta = \Theta\Theta\vartheta - (\overline{\nabla}_\Theta\Theta)\cdot\slashed{d}\vartheta = -\upsilon^{-1}\Theta\upsilon$. Also using $[L,\Theta] = 0$, we compute that $\slashed{\mathcal{L}}_L\overline{\nabla}^2_{\Theta\Theta}\vartheta := (\slashed{\mathcal{L}}_L\overline{\nabla}^2\vartheta)\cdot\Theta\otimes\Theta = -\upsilon^{-1}\Theta L\upsilon + \upsilon^{-2}(L\upsilon)\Theta\upsilon$. Similarly, we compute that $(\slashed{\mathcal{L}}_L\slashed{g})_{\Theta\Theta} = 2\upsilon L\upsilon$, $(\overline{\nabla}\slashed{\mathcal{L}}_L\slashed{g})_{\Theta\Theta\Theta} = 2\upsilon\Theta L\upsilon - 2(\Theta\upsilon)L\upsilon$, and $(\overline{\nabla}\slashed{\mathcal{L}}_L\slashed{g})^\#\cdot(\xi\otimes\Theta\otimes\Theta) = 2\upsilon^{-1}L\Theta\upsilon - 2\upsilon^{-2}(\Theta\upsilon)L\upsilon$. Combining the above computations, we conclude that $[\overline{\nabla},\slashed{\mathcal{L}}_L]\xi = \frac{1}{2}(\overline{\nabla}\slashed{\mathcal{L}}_L\slashed{g})^\#\cdot\xi$ as desired. To treat the case $Z = \check{X}$, we first fix t and construct a local coordinate $\widetilde{\vartheta}$ on $\Sigma_t^{U_0}$ such that $\check{X} = \frac{\partial}{\partial u}$, as in the proof of Lemma 3.6. The proof then mirrors the proof in the case $Z = L$. We now treat the case $Z = Y$, which is $\ell_{t,u}$-intrinsic. The result follows from Lemma 4.1, which for the $\ell_{t,u}$-tangent vectorfield Y applies with $\mathscr{D}$ replaced by $\overline{\nabla}$ and g replaced by $\slashed{g}$. We have thus proved the claim, which completes the proof of (5.1).

(5.2) then follows as a straightforward consequence of (5.1), the fact that $\slashed{div}\,\xi = \slashed{g}^{-1}\cdot\overline{\nabla}\xi$ for symmetric type $\binom{0}{2}$ $\ell_{t,u}$-tangent tensorfields ξ, and the aforementioned identity $\mathcal{L}_Z\slashed{g}^{-1} = -(\mathcal{L}_Z\slashed{g})^{\#\#}$.

To prove (5.3a), we first use Lemma 2.10 to deduce that $\overline{\nabla}^2\slashed{\mathcal{L}}_Z f = \overline{\nabla}(\slashed{\mathcal{L}}_Z\slashed{d}f) = \mathcal{L}_Z\overline{\nabla}^2 f + [\overline{\nabla},\slashed{\mathcal{L}}_Z]\cdot\slashed{d}f$. The identity (5.3a) now follows from (5.1) with $\xi := \slashed{d}f$ and a straightforward argument involving induction in $|\vec{I}|$ and Lemma 2.10; we omit the details.

(5.3b) follows easily from (5.3a), the identity $\slashed{\Delta} = \slashed{g}^{-1}\cdot\overline{\nabla}^2$, and the aforementioned identity $\mathcal{L}_Z\slashed{g}^{-1} = -(\mathcal{L}_Z\slashed{g})^{\#\#}$. □

Lemma 5.2 (Preliminary Lie derivative commutation identities). *Let $\vec{I} = (\iota_1, \iota_2, \cdots, \iota_N)$ be an Nth-order $\mathscr{Z}$ multi-index, let f be a function, and let ξ be a type $\binom{m}{n}$ $\ell_{t,u}$-tangent tensorfield with $m + n \geq 1$. Let $i_1, i_2, \cdots, i_N$ be any permutation of $1, 2, \cdots, N$ and let $\vec{I}' = (\iota_{i_1}, \iota_{i_2}, \cdots, \iota_{i_N})$. Then there exist constants $C_{\vec{I}_1, \vec{I}_2, \iota_{k_1}, \iota_{k_2}}$ such that*

$$\left\{\mathscr{Z}^{\vec{I}} - \mathscr{Z}^{\vec{I}'}\right\}f$$
$$= \sum_{\substack{\vec{I}_1 + \vec{I}_2 + \iota_{k_1} + \iota_{k_2} = \vec{I} \\ Z_{(\iota_{k_1})}\in\{L,\check{X}\},\ Z_{(\iota_{k_2})}\in\{\check{X},Y\},\ Z_{(\iota_{k_1})}\neq Z_{(\iota_{k_2})}}} C_{\vec{I}_1, \vec{I}_2, \iota_{k_1}, \iota_{k_2}}\slashed{\mathcal{L}}_{\mathscr{Z}}^{\vec{I}_1}(Z_{(\iota_{k_2})})\slashed{\pi}^\#_{Z_{(\iota_{k_1})}}\cdot\slashed{d}\mathscr{Z}^{\vec{I}_2}f,$$

$$\text{(5.4a)}$$

$$\left\{\slashed{\mathcal{L}}_{\mathscr{Z}}^{\vec{I}} - \slashed{\mathcal{L}}_{\mathscr{Z}}^{\vec{I}'}\right\}\xi = \sum_{\substack{\vec{I}_1 + \vec{I}_2 + \iota_{k_1} + \iota_{k_2} = \vec{I} \\ Z_{(\iota_{k_1})}\in\{L,\check{X}\},\ Z_{(\iota_{k_2})}\in\{\check{X},Y\},\ Z_{(\iota_{k_1})}\neq Z_{(\iota_{k_2})}}} C_{\vec{I}_1, \vec{I}_2, \iota_{k_1}, \iota_{k_2}}\slashed{\mathcal{L}}_{\slashed{\mathcal{L}}_{\mathscr{Z}}^{\vec{I}_1}(Z_{(\iota_{k_2})})\slashed{\pi}^\#_{Z_{(\iota_{k_1})}}}\slashed{\mathcal{L}}_{\mathscr{Z}}^{\vec{I}_2}\xi.$$

$$\text{(5.4b)}$$

In (5.4a)–(5.4b), $\vec{I}_1 + \vec{I}_2 + \iota_{k_1} + \iota_{k_2} = \vec{I}$ means that $\vec{I}_1 = (\iota_{k_3}, \iota_{k_4}, \cdots, \iota_{k_m})$, and $\vec{I}_2 = (\iota_{k_{m+1}}, \iota_{k_{m+2}}, \cdots, \iota_{k_N})$, where $k_1, k_2, \cdots, k_N$ is a permutation of $1, 2, \cdots, N$. In particular, $|\vec{I}_1| + |\vec{I}_2| = N - 2$.

Proof The identities (5.4a) and (5.4b) are straightforward to verify using Lemmas 2.9 and 2.10, the facts that $^{(W)}\not{\pi}_Z^{\#} = -^{(Z)}\not{\pi}_W^{\#}$ for $W \in \{\check{X}, Y\}$ and $Z \in \{L, \check{X}\}$ (see Lemma 2.18), and the Lie derivative commutation property (2.32). □

6 Modified Quantities Needed for Top-Order Estimates

As we explained in Subsubsect. 1.4.2, in order to close our top-order energy estimates without incurring derivative loss, we must work with modified quantities. The modified quantities allow us to control the top-order derivatives of $\mathrm{tr}_{\not{g}}\chi$. In this section, we define these "fully modified quantities" and derive transport equations for them. At the top order, we also need "partially modified quantities," which are similar but serve a different purpose: they enable us to avoid the appearance of certain Σ_t^u error integrals in the energy estimates that are too large to be controlled all the way up to the shock. These error integrals arise when we integrate by parts with respect to L using the identity (3.22).

6.1 Curvature Tensors and the Key Ricci Component Identity

The calculations related to the modified quantities are involved. A convenient way to organize them is to rely on the curvature tensors of g.

Definition 6.1 (**Curvature tensors of** g). The Riemann curvature tensor $\mathscr{R}_{\alpha\beta\kappa\lambda}$ of the spacetime metric g is the type $\binom{0}{4}$ spacetime tensorfield defined by

$$g(\mathscr{D}_{UV}^2 W - \mathscr{D}_{VU}^2 W, Z) = -\mathscr{R}(U, V, W, Z), \tag{6.1}$$

where U, V, W, and Z are arbitrary spacetime vectors. In (6.1), $\mathscr{D}_{UV}^2 W := U^{\alpha}V^{\beta}\mathscr{D}_{\alpha}\mathscr{D}_{\beta}W$.

The Ricci curvature tensor $\mathrm{Ric}_{\alpha\beta}$ of g is the following type $\binom{0}{2}$ tensorfield:

$$\mathrm{Ric}_{\alpha\beta} := (g^{-1})^{\kappa\lambda}\mathscr{R}_{\alpha\kappa\beta\lambda}. \tag{6.2}$$

We now provide the lemma that forms the crux of the construction of the modified quantities.

Lemma 6.1 (**The key identity verified by** $\mu\mathrm{Ric}_{LL}$). *Assume that* $\Box_{g(\Psi)}\Psi = 0$. *Then the following identity holds for the Ricci curvature component* $\mathrm{Ric}_{LL} := \mathrm{Ric}_{\alpha\beta}L^{\alpha}L^{\beta}$:

$$\mu\mathrm{Ric}_{LL} = L\left\{-G_{LL}\check{X}\Psi - \frac{1}{2}\mu\mathrm{tr}_{\not{g}}\mathscr{G}L\Psi - \frac{1}{2}\mu G_{LL}L\Psi + \mu\mathscr{G}_L^{\#} \cdot \not{d}\Psi\right\} + \mathfrak{A}, \tag{6.3}$$

where $\mathfrak{A}$ *has the following schematic structure, where* $Z \in \mathscr{Z}$ *and* P *is* $\mathcal{P}_u^t$-*tangent:*

$$\mathfrak{A} = \mathrm{f}(\underline{\gamma}, \not{g}^{-1}, \not{d}x^1, \not{d}x^2, Z\Psi)P\Psi. \tag{6.4}$$

Furthermore, without assuming $\Box_{g(\Psi)}\Psi = 0$, we have

$$\mathrm{Ric}_{LL} = \frac{(L\mu)}{\mu}\mathrm{tr}_{\cancel{g}}\chi + L\left\{-\frac{1}{2}\mathrm{tr}_{\cancel{g}}\mathcal{G}L\Psi - \frac{1}{2}G_{LL}L\Psi + \mathcal{G}_L^{\#}\cdot\cancel{d}\Psi\right\} - \frac{1}{2}G_{LL}\cancel{\Delta}\Psi + \mathfrak{B},$$
(6.5)

where $\mathfrak{B}$ has the following schematic structure:

$$\mathfrak{B} = \mathrm{f}(\gamma, \cancel{g}^{-1}, \cancel{d}x^1, \cancel{d}x^2)(P\Psi)P\gamma.$$
(6.6)

Sketch of a proof We sketch the proof instead of providing complete details since the computations are lengthy and since the identities follow from inserting the schematic relations provided by Lemma 2.19 into the identities derived in [60, Corollary 11.1.13]. We start by sketching the proof of (6.5). First, we note that straightforward but tedious computations imply that relative to the **rectangular** coordinate system, the components of $\mathscr{R}$ can be expressed as

$$\mathscr{R}_{\mu\nu\alpha\beta} \tag{6.7}$$
$$= \frac{1}{2}\left\{G_{\beta\mu}\mathscr{D}_{\alpha\nu}^2\Psi + G_{\alpha\nu}\mathscr{D}_{\beta\mu}^2\Psi - G_{\beta\nu}\mathscr{D}_{\alpha\mu}^2\Psi - G_{\alpha\mu}\mathscr{D}_{\beta\nu}^2\Psi\right\}$$
$$+ \frac{1}{4}G_{\mu\alpha}G_{\nu\beta}(g^{-1})^{\kappa\lambda}(\partial_\kappa\Psi)(\partial_\lambda\Psi) - \frac{1}{4}G_{\mu\beta}G_{\nu\alpha}(g^{-1})^{\kappa\lambda}(\partial_\kappa\Psi)(\partial_\lambda\Psi)$$
$$+ \frac{1}{4}(g^{-1})^{\kappa\lambda}[G_{\lambda(\nu}\partial_{\alpha)}\Psi][G_{\kappa(\mu}\partial_{\beta)}\Psi] - \frac{1}{4}(g^{-1})^{\kappa\lambda}[G_{\lambda(\mu}\partial_{\alpha)}\Psi][G_{\kappa(\nu}\partial_{\beta)}\Psi]$$
$$+ \frac{1}{2}\left\{G'_{\beta\mu}(\partial_\alpha\Psi)(\partial_\nu\Psi) + G'_{\alpha\nu}(\partial_\beta\Psi)(\partial_\mu\Psi) - G'_{\beta\nu}(\partial_\alpha\Psi)(\partial_\mu\Psi) - G'_{\alpha\mu}(\partial_\beta\Psi)(\partial_\nu\Psi)\right\},$$

where $\mathscr{D}^2\Psi$ (which is a symmetric type $\binom{0}{2}$ tensorfield) denotes the second covariant derivative of Ψ. We then contract both sides of (6.7) against $L^\mu L^\alpha(\cancel{g}^{-1})^{\nu\kappa}$, which yields the desired term Ric_{LL} on the LHS. Finally, we use Lemmas 2.13 and 2.19 to express the RHS of the contracted identity in the form written on RHS (6.5).

The main idea behind the proof of (6.3) is to multiply both sides of (6.5) by μ and use the wave equation in the form (2.73a); the wave equation allows us to replace μ times the term $-\frac{1}{2}G_{LL}\cancel{\Delta}\Psi$ from (6.5) with $-\frac{1}{2}L\left\{\mu G_{LL}L\Psi + 2G_{LL}\check{X}\Psi\right\}$ up to error terms involving an admissible number of derivatives. This completes our proof sketch of the lemma. □

6.2 The Definitions of the Modified Quantities and Their Transport Equations

We now define the modified quantities.

Definition 6.2 (**Modified versions of the pure $\mathcal{P}_u$-tangent derivatives of** $\mathrm{tr}_{\cancel{g}}\chi$). Let $\mathscr{P}^N$ be an Nth order pure $\mathcal{P}_u$-tangent commutation vectorfield operator. We define

the fully modified quantity $^{(\mathscr{P}^N)}\mathscr{X}$ as follows:

$$^{(\mathscr{P}^N)}\mathscr{X} := \mu \mathscr{P}^N \mathrm{tr}_{\cancel{g}} \chi + \mathscr{P}^N \mathfrak{X}, \tag{6.8a}$$

$$\mathfrak{X} := -G_{LL}\check{X}\Psi - \frac{1}{2}\mu \mathrm{tr}_{\cancel{g}} \cancel{G} L\Psi - \frac{1}{2}\mu G_{LL}L\Psi + \mu \cancel{G}_L^{\#} \cdot \cancel{d}\Psi. \tag{6.8b}$$

We define the partially modified quantity $^{(\mathscr{P}^N)}\widetilde{\mathscr{X}}$ as follows:

$$^{(\mathscr{P}^N)}\widetilde{\mathscr{X}} := \mathscr{P}^N \mathrm{tr}_{\cancel{g}} \chi + {}^{(\mathscr{P}^N)}\widetilde{\mathfrak{X}}, \tag{6.9a}$$

$$^{(\mathscr{P}^N)}\widetilde{\mathfrak{X}} := -\frac{1}{2}\mathrm{tr}_{\cancel{g}} \cancel{G} L \mathscr{P}^N \Psi - \frac{1}{2}G_{LL}L\mathscr{P}^N\Psi + \cancel{G}_L^{\#} \cdot \cancel{d}\mathscr{P}^N\Psi. \tag{6.9b}$$

We also define the following "0th-order" version of (6.9b):

$$\widetilde{\mathfrak{X}} := -\frac{1}{2}\mathrm{tr}_{\cancel{g}} \cancel{G} L\Psi - \frac{1}{2}G_{LL}L\Psi + \cancel{G}_L^{\#} \cdot \cancel{d}\Psi. \tag{6.10}$$

We now derive the transport equation verified by the fully modified quantities.

Proposition 6.2 (**The transport equation for the fully modified version of** $\mathscr{P}^N \mathrm{tr}_{\cancel{g}} \chi$). *Assume that $\Box_{g(\Psi)}\Psi = 0$. Let $\mathscr{P}^N$ be an Nth-order $\mathcal{P}_u$-tangent commutation vectorfield operator, and let $^{(\mathscr{P}^N)}\mathscr{X}$ and $\mathfrak{X}$ be the corresponding quantities defined in (6.8a) and (6.8b). Then $^{(\mathscr{P}^N)}\mathscr{X}$ verifies the following transport equation:*

$$L^{(\mathscr{P}^N)}\mathscr{X} - \left(2\frac{L\mu}{\mu} - 2\mathrm{tr}_{\cancel{g}}\chi\right){}^{(\mathscr{P}^N)}\mathscr{X}$$

$$= \mu[L, \mathscr{P}^N]\mathrm{tr}_{\cancel{g}}\chi - \left(2\frac{L\mu}{\mu}\right)\mathscr{P}^N\mathfrak{X} + 2\mathrm{tr}_{\cancel{g}}\chi\mathscr{P}^N\mathfrak{X}$$

$$+ [L, \mathscr{P}^N]\mathfrak{X} + [\mu, \mathscr{P}^N]L\mathrm{tr}_{\cancel{g}}\chi + [\mathscr{P}^N, L\mu]\mathrm{tr}_{\cancel{g}}\chi$$

$$- \left\{\mathscr{P}^N\left(\mu(\mathrm{tr}_{\cancel{g}}\chi)^2\right) - 2\mu\mathrm{tr}_{\cancel{g}}\chi\mathscr{P}^N\mathrm{tr}_{\cancel{g}}\chi\right\} - \mathscr{P}^N\mathfrak{A}, \tag{6.11}$$

where $\mathfrak{A}$ is the term on RHS (6.3).

Proof From (2.39a), the identity $[L, \Theta] = 0$, the torsion-free property of $\mathscr{D}$, and Def. 6.1, we deduce $\cancel{\mathcal{L}}_L\chi_{\Theta\Theta} = g(\mathscr{D}_\Theta\mathscr{D}_L L, \Theta) + g(\mathscr{D}_\Theta L, \mathscr{D}_\Theta L) - \mathscr{R}_{L\Theta L\Theta}$. Viewing both sides to be a type $\binom{0}{2}$ $\ell_{t,u}$-tangent tensorfield, we take the $\cancel{g}$ trace, use $\cancel{\mathcal{L}}_L\cancel{g}^{-1} = -2\chi^{\#\#}$ (which follows from definition (2.37) and (2.58)), use Lemma 2.13, and carry out straightforward calculations to derive

$$\mu L\mathrm{tr}_{\cancel{g}}\chi = (L\mu)\mathrm{tr}_{\cancel{g}}\chi - \mu(\mathrm{tr}_{\cancel{g}}\chi)^2 - \mu\mathrm{Ric}_{LL}. \tag{6.12}$$

Then from (6.3) and (6.12), we find that

$$L\left\{\mu\mathrm{tr}_{\cancel{g}}\chi + \mathfrak{X}\right\} = 2(L\mu)\mathrm{tr}_{\cancel{g}}\chi - \mu(\mathrm{tr}_{\cancel{g}}\chi)^2 - \mathfrak{A}. \tag{6.13}$$

Applying $\mathscr{P}^N$ to (6.13) and performing straightforward commutations, we find that

$$L\left\{\mu\mathscr{P}^N\mathrm{tr}_{g}\chi + \mathscr{P}^N\mathfrak{X}\right\} = 2(L\mu)\mathscr{P}^N\mathrm{tr}_{g}\chi - 2\mu\mathrm{tr}_{g}\chi\mathscr{P}^N\mathrm{tr}_{g}\chi + \mu[L,\mathscr{P}^N]\mathrm{tr}_{g}\chi$$
$$+ [L,\mathscr{P}^N]\mathfrak{X} + [\mu,\mathscr{P}^N]L\mathrm{tr}_{g}\chi + [\mathscr{P}^N, L\mu]\mathrm{tr}_{g}\chi$$
$$- \left\{\mathscr{P}^N\left(\mu(\mathrm{tr}_{g}\chi)^2\right) - 2\mu\mathrm{tr}_{g}\chi\mathscr{P}^N\mathrm{tr}_{g}\chi\right\} - \mathscr{P}^N\mathfrak{A}. \tag{6.14}$$

The identity (6.11) now follows easily from (6.14) and the definition of $^{(\mathscr{P}^N)}\mathscr{X}$.   □

We now derive the transport equation verified by the partially modified quantities.

Proposition 6.3 (**The transport equation for the partially modified version of** $\mathscr{P}^{N-1}\mathrm{tr}_{g}\chi$). *Let* $\mathscr{P}^{N-1}$ *be an* $(N-1)^{st}$ *order pure* $\mathcal{P}_u$-*tangent commutation vectorfield operator, and let* $^{(\mathscr{P}^{N-1})}\widetilde{\mathscr{X}}$ *be the corresponding partially modified quantity defined in* (6.9a). *Then* $^{(\mathscr{P}^{N-1})}\widetilde{\mathscr{X}}$ *verifies the following transport equation:*

$$L^{(\mathscr{P}^{N-1})}\widetilde{\mathscr{X}} = \frac{1}{2}G_{LL}\slashed{A}\mathscr{P}^{N-1}\Psi + {}^{(\mathscr{P}^{N-1})}\mathfrak{B}, \tag{6.15}$$

where the inhomogeneous term $^{(\mathscr{P}^{N-1})}\mathfrak{B}$ *is given by*

$$^{(\mathscr{P}^{N-1})}\mathfrak{B} = -\mathscr{P}^{N-1}\mathfrak{B} - \mathscr{P}^{N-1}(\mathrm{tr}_{g}\chi)^2$$
$$+ \frac{1}{2}[\mathscr{P}^{N-1}, G_{LL}]\slashed{A}\Psi + \frac{1}{2}G_{LL}[\mathscr{P}^{N-1}, \slashed{A}]\Psi + [L,\mathscr{P}^{N-1}]\mathrm{tr}_{g}\chi$$
$$+ [L,\mathscr{P}^{N-1}]\widetilde{\mathfrak{X}} + L\left\{{}^{(\mathscr{P}^{N-1})}\widetilde{\mathfrak{X}} - \mathscr{P}^{N-1}\widetilde{\mathfrak{X}}\right\}, \tag{6.16}$$

$\mathfrak{B}$ *is defined in* (6.6), $^{(\mathscr{P}^{N-1})}\widetilde{\mathfrak{X}}$ *is defined in* (6.9b), *and* $\widetilde{\mathfrak{X}}$ *is defined in* (6.10).

Proof From (6.12), we find that

$$L\mathrm{tr}_{g}\chi = \frac{L\mu}{\mu}\mathrm{tr}_{g}\chi - (\mathrm{tr}_{g}\chi)^2 - \mathrm{Ric}_{LL}. \tag{6.17}$$

Then from (6.5) and (6.17), we deduce that

$$L\left\{\mathrm{tr}_{g}\chi + \widetilde{\mathfrak{X}}\right\} = \frac{1}{2}G_{LL}\slashed{A}\Psi - (\mathrm{tr}_{g}\chi)^2 - \mathfrak{B}. \tag{6.18}$$

We note in particular that the dangerous product $\dfrac{L\mu}{\mu}\mathrm{tr}_{g}\chi$ from (6.5) and (6.17) cancels from (6.18). The desired identity (6.16) now follows from applying $\mathscr{P}^{N-1}$ to (6.18) and carrying out straightforward operator commutations.   □

7 Norms, Initial Data, Bootstrap Assumptions, and Smallness Assumptions

In this section, we first introduce the pointwise norms that we use to control solutions. We then describe our assumptions on the size of the initial data. Finally, we state bootstrap assumptions that we use throughout most of the rest of the paper to derive estimates.

7.1 Norms

In our analysis, we primarily estimate scalar functions and $\ell_{t,u}$-tangent tensorfields. We always use the metric $\not{g}$ when taking the pointwise norm of $\ell_{t,u}$-tangent tensorfields, a concept which we make precise in the next definition.

Definition 7.1 (**Pointwise norms**). If $\xi^{\mu_1\cdots\mu_m}_{\nu_1\cdots\nu_n}$ is a type $\binom{m}{n}$ $\ell_{t,u}$ tensor, then we define the norm $|\xi| \geq 0$ by

$$|\xi|^2 := \not{g}_{\mu_1\tilde{\mu}_1} \cdots \not{g}_{\mu_m\tilde{\mu}_m} (\not{g}^{-1})^{\nu_1\tilde{\nu}_1} \cdots (\not{g}^{-1})^{\nu_n\tilde{\nu}_n} \xi^{\mu_1\cdots\mu_m}_{\nu_1\cdots\nu_n} \xi^{\tilde{\mu}_1\cdots\tilde{\mu}_m}_{\tilde{\nu}_1\cdots\tilde{\nu}_n}. \tag{7.1}$$

Our analysis relies on the following L^2 and L^∞ norms.

Definition 7.2 (L^2 **and** L^∞ **norms**). In terms of the non-degenerate forms of Def. 3.2, we define the following norms for $\ell_{t,u}$-tangent tensorfields:

$$\|\xi\|^2_{L^2(\ell_{t,u})} := \int_{\ell_{t,u}} |\xi|^2 \, d\lambda_{\not{g}}, \qquad \|\xi\|^2_{L^2(\Sigma^u_t)} := \int_{\Sigma^u_t} |\xi|^2 \, d\varpi,$$

$$\|\xi\|^2_{L^2(\mathcal{P}^t_u)} := \int_{\mathcal{P}^t_u} |\xi|^2 \, d\overline{\varpi}, \tag{7.2a}$$

$$\|\xi\|_{L^\infty(\ell_{t,u})} := \text{ess sup}_{\vartheta\in\mathbb{T}} |\xi|(t,u,\vartheta),$$

$$\|\xi\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma^u_t)} := \text{ess sup}_{(u',\vartheta)\in[0,u]\times\mathbb{T}} |\xi|(t,u',\vartheta),$$

$$\|\xi\|_{L^\infty(\mathcal{P}^t_u)} := \text{ess sup}_{(t',\vartheta)\in[0,t]\times\mathbb{T}} |\xi|(t',u,\vartheta). \tag{7.2b}$$

Remark 7.1 (**Subset norms**). In our analysis below, we occasionally use norms $\|\cdot\|_{L^2(\Omega)}$ and $\|\cdot\|_{L^\infty(\Omega)}$, where Ω is a subset of Σ^u_t. These norms are defined by replacing Σ^u_t with Ω in (7.2a) and (7.2b).

7.2 Strings of Commutation Vectorfields and Vectorfield Seminorms

The following shorthand notation captures the relevant structure of our vectorfield operators and allows us to depict estimates schematically.

Remark 7.2 Some operators in Def. 7.3 are decorated with a $*$. These operators involve $\mathcal{P}_u$-tangent differentiations that often lead to a gain in smallness in the estimates. More precisely, the operators $\mathscr{P}_*^N$ always lead to a gain in smallness while the operators $\mathscr{Z}_*^{N;M}$ lead to a gain in smallness except perhaps when they are applied to μ (because $L\mu$ and its $\breve{X}$ derivatives are not small).

Definition 7.3 (**Strings of commutation vectorfields and vectorfield seminorms**).

- $\mathscr{Z}^{N;M} f$ denotes an arbitrary string of N commutation vectorfields in $\mathscr{Z}$ (see (2.51)) applied to f, where the string contains *at most M* factors of the $\mathcal{P}_u^t$-transversal vectorfield $\breve{X}$.
- $\mathscr{P}^N f$ denotes an arbitrary string of N commutation vectorfields in $\mathscr{P}$ (see (2.52)) applied to f.
- For $N \geq 1$, $\mathscr{Z}_*^{N;M} f$ denotes an arbitrary string of N commutation vectorfields in $\mathscr{Z}$ applied to f, where the string contains *at least* one $\mathcal{P}_u^t$-tangent factor and *at most M* factors of $\breve{X}$. We also set $\mathscr{Z}_*^{0;0} f := f$.
- For $N \geq 1$, $\mathscr{P}_*^N f$ denotes an arbitrary string of N commutation vectorfields in $\mathscr{P}$ applied to f, where the string contains *at least one factor* of Y or *at least two factors* of L.
- For $\ell_{t,u}$-tangent tensorfields ξ, we similarly define strings of $\ell_{t,u}$-projected Lie derivatives such as $\mathcal{\not{L}}_{\mathscr{Z}}^{N;M} \xi$.

We also define pointwise seminorms constructed out of sums of the above strings of vectorfields:

- $|\mathscr{Z}^{N;M} f|$ simply denotes the magnitude of one of the $\mathscr{Z}^{N;M} f$ as defined above (there is no summation).
- $|\mathscr{Z}^{\leq N;M} f|$ is the *sum* over all terms of the form $|\mathscr{Z}^{N';M} f|$ with $N' \leq N$ and $\mathscr{Z}^{N';M} f$ as defined above. When $N = M = 1$, we sometimes write $|\mathscr{Z}^{\leq 1} f|$ instead of $|\mathscr{Z}^{\leq 1;1} f|$.
- $|\mathscr{Z}^{[1,N];M} f|$ is the sum over all terms of the form $|\mathscr{Z}^{N';M} f|$ with $1 \leq N' \leq N$ and $\mathscr{Z}^{N';M} f$ as defined above.
- Sums such as $|\mathscr{P}_*^{[1,N]} f|$, $|\mathcal{\not{L}}_{\mathscr{Z}}^{\leq N;M} \xi|$, $|Y^{\leq 1} f|$, $|\breve{X}^{[1,N]} f|$, etc., are defined analogously. For example, $|\breve{X}^{[1,N]} f| = |\breve{X} f| + |\breve{X}\breve{X} f| + \cdots + |\overbrace{\breve{X}\breve{X}\cdots\breve{X}}^{N \text{ copies}} f|$. We write $|\mathscr{P}_* f|$ instead of $|\mathscr{P}_*^{[1,1]} f|$.

7.3 Assumptions on the Initial Data and the Behavior of Quantities Along Σ_0

In this subsection, we introduce our Sobolev norm assumptions on the data, which involve several size parameters. We then derive identities and estimates for various quantities on Σ_0. In Subsect. 7.7, we describe our assumptions on the size parameters.

We first recall that $(\Psi|_{\Sigma_0}, \partial_t \Psi|_{\Sigma_0}) := (\mathring{\Psi}, \mathring{\Psi}_0)$ and that we assume $(\mathring{\Psi}, \mathring{\Psi}_0) \in H_e^{19}(\Sigma_0^1) \times H_e^{18}(\Sigma_0^1)$. We assume that the data verify the following size estimates (see Subsect. 7.2 regarding the vectorfield operator notation):

$$\left\|\mathscr{Z}_*^{\leq 17;3}\Psi\right\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_0^1)}, \left\|\mathscr{Z}_*^{\leq 19;3}\Psi\right\|_{L^2(\Sigma_0^1)} \leq \mathring{\epsilon}, \qquad \left\|\check{X}^{[1,3]}\Psi\right\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_0^1)} := \mathring{\delta} > 0. \tag{7.3}$$

Remark 7.3 (**Non-optimal regularity assumptions involving higher transversal derivatives**). The data assumptions (7.3) involving two or more transversal derivatives of Ψ are not optimal relative to our proof; we have stated our assumptions in the form (7.3) only for convenience. For example, in the parts of our proof that involve three transversal derivatives of Ψ (see Prop. 9.2), we use only the data assumptions $\left\|\mathscr{Z}_*^{\leq 4;2}\Psi\right\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_0^1)} \leq \mathring{\epsilon}$, $\left\|L\check{X}\check{X}\check{X}\Psi\right\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_0^1)} \leq \mathring{\epsilon}$, and $\left\|\check{X}\check{X}\check{X}\Psi\right\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_0^1)} \leq \mathring{\delta}$. Similar remarks apply to the initial regularity of the eikonal function quantities, which we exhibit in Lemma 7.3.

In the next definition, we introduce the data-dependent number $\mathring{\delta}_*$, which is of crucial importance. Our main theorem shows that for $\mathring{\epsilon}$ sufficiently small, the time of first shock formation is $(1 + \mathcal{O}(\mathring{\epsilon}))\mathring{\delta}_*^{-1}$.

Definition 7.4 (**The quantity that controls the blowup-time**). We define

$$\mathring{\delta}_* := \frac{1}{2}\sup_{\Sigma_0^1}\left[G_{LL}\check{X}\Psi\right]_-. \tag{7.4}$$

Remark 7.4 Our proof of shock formation relies on the assumptions that $\mathring{\delta}_* > 0$ and that $\mathring{\delta}_*$ is not too small compared to other quantities; see Subsect. 7.7. These assumptions are tied to the fact that we are studying blowup for perturbations of right-moving simple plane symmetric waves, as is depicted in Figure 3.

To prove our main theorem, we make assumptions on the relative sizes of the above parameters; see Subsect. 7.7.

Our next goal is to derive estimates for various quantities along Σ_0^1 that hold whenever the data verify (7.3) and $\mathring{\epsilon}$ is sufficiently small. We start by providing two lemmas that yield some identities that are relevant for that analysis.

Lemma 7.1 (**Identities involving** $\partial_i u$). *The following identity holds:*

$$(\underline{g}^{-1})^{ab}\partial_a u\partial_b u = \mu^{-2}. \tag{7.5}$$

In (7.5), $\underline{g}^{-1}$ is the inverse of the Riemannian metric $\underline{g}$ on $\Sigma_t^{U_0}$ defined by (2.34).
Furthermore, the rectangular spatial derivatives of u verify (for $i = 1, 2$):

$$\mu\partial_i u = X_i. \tag{7.6}$$

Proof Since $-\mu\partial_\alpha u = L_\alpha$ (see (2.11) and (2.15)), (7.6) follows from the first identity in (2.26). To deduce (7.5), we use (7.6) to substitute for $\partial_a u$ and $\partial_b u$ on LHS (7.6) and use the normalization condition $(\underline{g}^{-1})^{ab}X_a X_b = \underline{g}(X, X) = 1$ (see (2.21a)). □

Lemma 7.2 (**Algebraic identities along** Σ_0). *The following identities hold along Σ_0 (for $i = 1, 2$):*

$$\mu = \frac{1}{\sqrt{(\underline{g}^{-1})^{11}}}, \qquad L^i_{(Small)} = \frac{(\underline{g}^{-1})^{i1}}{\sqrt{(\underline{g}^{-1})^{11}}} - \delta^{i1} - (\underline{g}^{-1})^{0i}, \qquad \Xi^i = \frac{(\underline{g}^{-1})^{i1}}{(\underline{g}^{-1})^{11}} - \delta^{i1},$$

(7.7)

where $\underline{g}$ is viewed as the 2×2 matrix of rectangular spatial components of the Riemannian metric on Σ_0 defined by (2.34), $\underline{g}^{-1}$ is the corresponding inverse matrix, and Ξ is the $\ell_{t,u}$-tangent vectorfield from (2.23).

Proof The identity for μ is a simple consequence of (7.5) and the fact that by construction, $u|_{\Sigma_0} = 1 - x^1$ (see (1.5)). Next, using in addition (7.6), we deduce that $X^i = -\mu(\underline{g}^{-1})^{ia}\delta^1_a = -\mu(\underline{g}^{-1})^{i1} = -\frac{(\underline{g}^{-1})^{i1}}{\sqrt{(\underline{g}^{-1})^{11}}}$ along Σ_0. Also using that $L^i = N^i - X^i$ (see (2.18)), $N^i = -(\underline{g}^{-1})^{0i}$ (see (2.25)), and $L^i_{(Small)} = L^i - \delta^i_1$ (see (2.53)), we easily conclude the desired identity for $L^i_{(Small)}$. Next, we recall that by construction, $\vartheta|_{\Sigma_0} = x^2$ (see Def. 2.4). Hence, $\frac{\partial}{\partial u} = -\partial_1$ and $\Theta = \partial_2$ along Σ_0. Also using that $\check{X} = \frac{\partial}{\partial u} - \Xi$ (see (2.23)), (7.6), and $\check{X} = \mu X$, we conclude that $\Xi^i = -\delta^{i1} - \check{X}^i = -\delta^{i1} + \mu\frac{(\underline{g}^{-1})^{i1}}{\sqrt{(\underline{g}^{-1})^{11}}} = -\delta^{i1} + \frac{(\underline{g}^{-1})^{i1}}{(\underline{g}^{-1})^{11}}$ as desired.   □

In the next lemma, we provide estimates verified by the eikonal function quantities μ and $L^i_{(Small)}$ along Σ_0^1. The estimates are a consequence of the assumptions (7.3) on the initial data of Ψ as well as the evolution equations verified by μ and $L^i_{(Small)}$.

Lemma 7.3 (Behavior of the eikonal function quantities along Σ_0^1). *For initial data verifying (7.3), the following L^2 and L^∞ estimates hold along Σ_0^1 whenever $\mathring{\epsilon}$ is sufficiently small, where the implicit constants are allowed to depend on $\mathring{\delta}$:*

$$\left\| \mathscr{Z}_*^{\leq 19;3} L^i_{(Small)} \right\|_{L^2(\Sigma_0^1)} \lesssim \mathring{\epsilon}, \qquad \left\| \check{X}^{[1,3]} L^i_{(Small)} \right\|_{L^2(\Sigma_0^1)} \lesssim 1, \qquad (7.8)$$

$$\left\| \mu - 1 \right\|_{L^2(\Sigma_0^1)}, \ \left\| \mathscr{P}_*^{[1,19]}\mu \right\|_{L^2(\Sigma_0^1)} \lesssim \mathring{\epsilon}, \tag{7.9a}$$

$$\left\| L\check{X}^{[0,2]}\mu \right\|_{L^2(\Sigma_0^1)}, \ \left\| \check{X}^{[0,2]}L\mu \right\|_{L^2(\Sigma_0^1)}, \ \left\| \check{X}L\check{X}\mu \right\|_{L^2(\Sigma_0^1)}, \ \left\| \check{X}^{[1,2]}\mu \right\|_{L^2(\Sigma_0^1)} \lesssim 1, \tag{7.9b}$$

$$\left\| \mathscr{Z}_*^{\leq 17;2} L^i_{(Small)} \right\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_0^1)} \lesssim \mathring{\epsilon}, \qquad \left\| \check{X}^{[1,2]} L^i_{(Small)} \right\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_0^1)} \lesssim 1, \qquad (7.10)$$

$$\left\| \mu - 1 \right\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_0^1)}, \ \left\| \mathscr{P}_*^{[1,17]}\mu \right\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_0^1)} \lesssim \mathring{\epsilon}, \tag{7.11a}$$

$$\left\| L\check{X}^{[0,2]}\mu \right\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_0^1)}, \ \left\| \check{X}^{[0,2]}L\mu \right\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_0^1)}, \ \left\| \check{X}L\check{X}\mu \right\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_0^1)}, \ \left\| \check{X}^{[1,2]}\mu \right\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_0^1)} \lesssim 1. \tag{7.11b}$$

Sketch of proof We only sketch the proofs of the estimates because they have a lengthy component and because we give complete details of related but more complicated estimates in our proofs of Propositions 8.10 and 9.2 below. An easy part of the proof is deriving estimates involving derivatives with respect to the Σ_0-tangent vectorfields $\breve{X}$ and Y; we can use the identities (7.7) to express $(\mu - 1)|_{\Sigma_0}$ and $L^i_{(Small)}|_{\Sigma_0}$ in the form $\mathrm{f}(\Psi)\Psi$ with f smooth. We can then repeatedly differentiate $\mathrm{f}(\Psi)\Psi$ with respect to $\breve{X}$, Y and use the assumptions (7.3) and the standard Sobolev calculus to obtain the desired L^2 and L^∞ estimates. Under the umbrella of the Sobolev calculus, we include the embedding estimate $\|f\|_{L^\infty(\ell_{0,u})} \lesssim \|Yf\|_{L^2(\ell_{0,u})} + \|f\|_{L^2(\ell_{0,u})}$ (valid with a uniform implicit constant for $u \in [0, U_0]$). This Sobolev embedding estimate is easy to derive because along $\ell_{0,u}$, we have $\Theta = \partial_2$, $Y = (1 + \mathcal{O}(\mathring{\epsilon}))\partial_2$, and $d\lambda_{\slashed{g}} = (1 + \mathcal{O}(\mathring{\epsilon})) \, d\vartheta$. Thus, the embedding result follows from the standard one on the torus $\mathbb{T}$ equipped with the standard Euclidean metric.

Another easy part of the proof is obtaining the desired estimates for $L^{\leq 19}\mu$, $L^{\leq 19}L^i_{(Small)}$, and their derivatives up to top order with respect to $\breve{X}$ and Y (where all $\breve{X}$ and Y derivatives occur after the L differentiations). To derive them, we can repeatedly use the evolution equations (2.62) and (2.63) to substitute for $L\mu$ and $LL^i_{(Small)}$ and argue as in the previous paragraph. In obtaining these estimates, the main point (which is easy to see with the help of (2.62) and (2.63)) is that the quantities that we claim are $\lesssim \mathring{\epsilon}$ contain at least one small factor $\mathscr{Z}_*^{\leq 19;3}\Psi$, which by (7.3) yields the desired smallness factor $\mathring{\epsilon}$.

The lengthy part of the proof is deriving estimates for the derivatives of μ and $L^i_{(Small)}$ that involve both L and the Σ_0-tangent operators $\{\breve{X}, Y\}$, where the Σ_0-tangent differentiation acts before L does. A model term is $L\breve{X}L^i_{(Small)}$. The main idea of the argument is to first write $L\breve{X}L^i_{(Small)} = \breve{X}LL^i_{(Small)} + [L, \breve{X}]L^i_{(Small)}$. The advantage of this decomposition is that the arguments given in the previous paragraph imply that $\left\| \breve{X}LL^i_{(Small)} \right\|_{L^2(\Sigma_0^1)} \lesssim \mathring{\epsilon}$. Thus, the main step remaining is to establish commutation estimates showing that, roughly speaking, the commutator operators $[L, \breve{X}]$, $[L, Y]$, and $[\breve{X}, Y]$ lead to products involving at least one (good) $\ell_{t,u}$-tangent differentiation, which provides the smallness factor $\mathring{\epsilon}$ in the relevant expressions. The identities in (2.57) feature $\ell_{t,u}$-tangent right-hand sides and thus imply the availability of the desired structure after one commutation. To derive estimates up to top order, we must also show that a suitable version of this structure survives under higher-order differentiations and commutations. We establish the necessary commutation estimates in Lemmas 8.7, 8.8, and 9.1 below under bootstrap assumptions that are consistent with the evolution of the solution. In the inequalities stated in those lemmas, the bootstrap assumptions are used to gain a factor of $\varepsilon^{1/2}$ in various quadratic terms that appear on the right-hand sides, where ε is a small bootstrap parameter. Along Σ_0, the lemmas can be established without the bootstrap assumptions by using the same arguments given in their proofs. In fact, one can ignore the availability of the smallness factor. After establishing the commutation Lemmas along Σ_0 we can derive the desired estimates using induction in the number of derivatives. For example, to deduce that $\left\| LL\breve{X}\mu \right\|_{L^2(\Sigma_0^1)} \lesssim \mathring{\epsilon}$, we write $LL\breve{X}\mu = \breve{X}LL\mu + [LL, \breve{X}]\mu$. The argument sketched in the previous paragraph

implies that $\left\|\check{X}LL\mu\right\|_{L^2(\Sigma_0^1)} \lesssim \mathring{\epsilon}$. To conclude that $\left\|[LL, \check{X}]\mu\right\|_{L^2(\Sigma_0^1)} \lesssim \mathring{\epsilon}$, we can use the commutator estimate (8.24) to derive the pointwise bound $\left|[LL, \check{X}]\mu\right| \lesssim \left|Y\mathscr{Z}^{\leq 1;1}\mu\right| + \left|\mathscr{P}_*^{[1,2]}\underline{\gamma}\right| + \left|\mathscr{Z}_*^{\leq 2;1}\gamma\right| + \left|\mathscr{P}^{\leq 2}\gamma\right|$. The RHS involves only up-to-order 2 derivatives of quantities that, by induction, would have been shown to be bounded in the norm $\|\cdot\|_{L^2(\Sigma_0^1)}$ by $\lesssim \mathring{\epsilon}$. $\qquad\qquad\square$

7.4 $T_{(Boot)}$, the Positivity of μ, and the Diffeomorphism Property of Υ

We now state some basic bootstrap assumptions. We start by fixing a real number $T_{(Boot)}$ with

$$0 < T_{(Boot)} \leq 2\mathring{\delta}_*^{-1}. \tag{7.12}$$

We assume that on the spacetime domain $\mathcal{M}_{T_{(Boot)}, U_0}$ (see (2.10e)), we have

$$\mu > 0. \tag{$\mathbf{BA}\mu > 0$}$$

Inequality ($\mathbf{BA}\mu > 0$) implies that no shocks are present in $\mathcal{M}_{T_{(Boot)}, U_0}$.
    We also assume that

The change of variables map Υ from Def. 2.20 is a C^1 diffeomorphism from $[0, T_{(Boot)}) \times [0, U_0] \times \mathbb{T}$ onto its image. $\tag{7.13}$

7.5 Fundamental L^∞ Bootstrap Assumptions

Our fundamental bootstrap assumptions for Ψ are that the following inequalities hold on $\mathcal{M}_{T_{(Boot)}, U_0}$ (see Subsect. 7.2 regarding the vectorfield operator notation):

$$\left\|\mathscr{P}^{\leq 11}\Psi\right\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_t^u)} \leq \varepsilon, \tag{$\mathbf{BA}\Psi$}$$

where ε is a small positive bootstrap parameter whose smallness we describe in Subsect. 7.7.

7.6 Auxiliary L^∞ Bootstrap Assumptions

In deriving pointwise estimates, we find it convenient to make the following auxiliary bootstrap assumptions. In Prop. 8.10, we will derive strict improvements of these assumptions.

Auxiliary bootstrap assumptions for small quantities. We assume that the following inequalities hold on $\mathcal{M}_{T_{(Boot)},U_0}$:

$$\left\| \mathscr{Z}_*^{\leq 10;1}\Psi \right\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_t^u)} \leq \varepsilon^{1/2}, \tag{AUX1Ψ}$$

$$\left\| L\mathscr{P}^{[1,9]}\mu \right\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_t^u)}, \; \left\| \mathscr{P}_*^{[1,9]}\mu \right\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_t^u)} \leq \varepsilon^{1/2}, \tag{AUX1μ}$$

$$\left\| \mathscr{Z}_*^{\leq 9;1}L_{(Small)}^i \right\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_t^u)} \leq \varepsilon^{1/2}, \tag{AUX1$L_{(Small)}$}$$

$$\left\| \mathcal{L}_{\mathscr{Z}}^{\leq 8;1}\chi \right\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_t^u)} \leq \varepsilon^{1/2}. \tag{AUX1χ}$$

Auxiliary bootstrap assumptions for quantities that are allowed to be large.

$$\left\| \breve{X}\Psi \right\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_t^u)} \leq \left\| \breve{X}\Psi \right\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_0^u)} + \varepsilon^{1/2}, \tag{AUX2Ψ}$$

$$\|L\mu\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_t^u)} \leq \frac{1}{2}\left\| G_{LL}\breve{X}\Psi \right\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_0^u)} + \varepsilon^{1/2}, \tag{AUX2μ}$$

$$\|\mu\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_t^u)} \leq 1 + 2\mathring{\delta}_*^{-1}\left\| G_{LL}\breve{X}\Psi \right\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_0^u)} + \varepsilon^{1/2}, \tag{AUX3μ}$$

$$\left\| \breve{X}L_{(Small)}^i \right\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_t^u)} \leq \left\| \breve{X}L_{(Small)}^i \right\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_0^u)} + \varepsilon^{1/2}. \tag{AUX2$L_{(Small)}$}$$

7.7 Smallness Assumptions

For the remainder of the article, when we say that "A is small relative to B," we mean that there exists a continuous increasing function $f : (0,\infty) \to (0,\infty)$ such that $A \leq f(B)$. In principle, the functions f could always be chosen to be polynomials with positive coefficients or exponential functions.[56] However, to avoid lengthening the paper, we typically do not specify the form of f.

Throughout the rest of the paper, we make the following relative smallness assumptions. We continually adjust the required smallness in order to close our estimates.

- ε is small relative to $\mathring{\delta}^{-1}$, where $\mathring{\delta}$ is the data-size parameter from (7.3).
- ε is small relative to the data-size parameter $\mathring{\delta}_*$ from (7.4).

The first assumption will allow us to control error terms that, roughly speaking, are of size $\varepsilon\mathring{\delta}^k$ for some integer $k \geq 0$. The second assumption is relevant because the expected blowup-time is approximately $\mathring{\delta}_*^{-1}$, and the assumption will allow us to show that various error products featuring a small factor ε remain small for $t < 2\mathring{\delta}_*^{-1}$, which is plenty of time for us to show that a shock forms.

---

[56] The exponential functions appear, for example, in our energy estimates, during our Gronwall argument; see the proof of Prop. 14.1 given in Subsect. 14.9.

Finally, we assume that

$$\mathring{\varepsilon} \le \varepsilon, \tag{7.14}$$

where $\mathring{\varepsilon}$ is the data smallness parameter from (7.3).

Remark 7.5 $\mathring{\delta}$ and $\mathring{\delta}_*$ do not have to be small.

Remark 7.6 (**The existence of data verifying the size assumptions**). We now sketch why there exists an open set of data $(\Psi|_{\Sigma_0}, \partial_t \Psi|_{\Sigma_0}) = (\mathring{\Psi}, \mathring{\Psi}_0)$ that are compactly supported in Σ_0^1 and that satisfy the above size assumptions involving $\mathring{\varepsilon}$, $\mathring{\delta}^{-1}$, and $\mathring{\delta}_*$. It is enough to show that there exist plane symmetric data $(\mathring{\Psi}, \mathring{\Psi}_0)$ (that is, data depending only on x^1) because the size assumptions are stable under Sobolev-class perturbations (without symmetry), where the relevant Sobolev space is $H_e^{19}(\Sigma_0^1) \times H_e^{18}(\Sigma_0^1)$. Note that in plane symmetry,

Θ and Y are proportional to ∂_2 and all ∂_2 derivatives of all scalar functions defined throughout the article vanish. Moreover, even though L and $\check{X}$ do not necessarily commute, $[L, \check{X}]$ is $\ell_{t,u}$-tangent (see Lemma 2.9) and therefore proportional to ∂_2. Thus, when $[L, \check{X}]$ acts as a differential operator on a scalar function, it annihilates it.

To see that suitable plane symmetric data exist, we first note that since Remark 2.6 and (7.7) imply that $\check{X} = -(1 + \mathcal{O}(\Psi))\partial_1$ along Σ_0 and $L_{(Small)}^i = \mathcal{O}(\Psi)$ along Σ_0^1, a simple argument relative to rectangular coordinates (omitted here) yields that it is possible to find smooth plane symmetric data such that $\|\mathring{\Psi}\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_0^1)}$ is as small as we want relative to $\frac{1}{2} \sup_{\Sigma_0^1} \left[G_{LL} \check{X} \Psi \right]_{-}$ (see definition (7.4)) and relative to $1/\|\check{X}^{[1,3]}\mathring{\Psi}\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_0^1)}$ (see (7.3)); for example, one can consider functions $\mathring{\Psi}$ that have a small amplitude but with $|\partial_1 \mathring{\Psi}|$ relatively large in some very small sub-interval of $[0, 1]$ (that is, with a short-but-steep peak). If $\partial_1 \mathring{\Psi}$ has the correct sign in the sub-interval, this will produce the desired relative largeness of $\frac{1}{2} \sup_{\Sigma_0^1} \left[G_{LL} \check{X} \Psi \right]_{-}$. Moreover, since $L\Psi|_{\Sigma_0^1} = \partial_t \Psi|_{\Sigma_0^1} + L^1 \partial_1 \Psi|_{\Sigma_0^1} = \mathring{\Psi}_0 + L^1 \partial_1 \mathring{\Psi}$, we can choose $\mathring{\Psi}_0$ in terms of $\mathring{\Psi}$ so that $\|\check{X}^{[1,3]} L\Psi\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_0^1)}$ is as small as we want (we could even make $L\Psi|_{\Sigma_0^1} \equiv 0$ by setting $\mathring{\Psi}_0 := -L^1 \partial_1 \mathring{\Psi}$). Moreover, from the above remarks, we conclude that the same smallness holds for all permutations of the operators $\check{X}^{[1,3]} L$ acting on Ψ along Σ_0^1. To obtain the desired smallness of $\|\check{X}^K L^J \Psi\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_0^1)}$ for $1 \le J, K \le 3$, and $J + K \le 17$ and $\|\check{X}^K L^J \Psi\|_{L^2(\Sigma_0^1)}$ for $1 \le J, K \le 3$, and $J + K \le 19$, we can inductively use the evolution equations (2.73b), (2.62), and (2.63) and the relations (7.7), much like we described in the proof sketch of Lemma 7.3 (note that we must simultaneously derive estimates for the derivatives of μ and $L_{(Small)}^i$ in order to obtain the smallness estimates for Ψ). See also Subsect. B.2 for a discussion, based on the method of Riemann invariants, of the existence of plane symmetric data verifying the desired size assumptions in the case of the irrotational relativistic Euler equations.

8 Preliminary Pointwise Estimates

In this section, we use the assumptions on the data and the bootstrap assumptions from Sect. 7 to derive pointwise estimates for the simplest error terms that appear in the commuted wave equation. The arguments are tedious but not too difficult. In Sect. 9, we derive related estimates involving higher transversal derivatives. In Sects. 10, and 11, we use the preliminary estimates to derive related but more difficult estimates.

In the remainder of the article, we schematically express many of our inequalities by stating them in terms of the arrays γ and $\underline{\gamma}$ from Def. 2.25. We also remind the reader that we often use the abbreviations introduced in Subsect. 7.2 to schematically indicate the structure of various derivative operators.

8.1 Differential Operator Comparison Estimates

We start by establishing comparison estimates for various differential operators.

Lemma 8.1 (**The norm of $\ell_{t,u}$-tangent tensors can be measured via Y contractions**). *Let $\xi_{\alpha_1 \cdots \alpha_n}$ be a type $\binom{0}{n}$ $\ell_{t,u}$-tangent tensor with $n \geq 1$. Under the data-size and bootstrap assumptions of Subsects. 7.4–7.6 and the smallness assumptions of Subsect. 7.7, we have*

$$|\xi| = \left\{ 1 + \mathcal{O}(\varepsilon^{1/2}) \right\} |\xi_{YY \cdots Y}|. \tag{8.1}$$

The same result holds if $|\xi_{YY \cdots Y}|$ is replaced with $|\xi_{Y \cdot}|$, $|\xi_{YY \cdot}|$, etc., where $\xi_{Y \cdot}$ is the type $\binom{0}{n-1}$ tensor with components $Y^{\alpha_1} \xi_{\alpha_1 \alpha_2 \cdots \alpha_n}$, and similarly for $\xi_{YY \cdot}$, etc.

Proof (8.1) is easy to derive relative to rectangular coordinates by using the decomposition $(g^{-1})^{ij} = \frac{1}{|Y|^2} Y^i Y^j$ and the estimate $|Y| = 1 + \mathcal{O}(\varepsilon^{1/2})$. This latter estimate follows from the identity $|Y|^2 = g_{ab} Y^a Y^b = (\delta_{ab} + g_{ab}^{(Small)})(\delta_2^a + Y_{(Small)}^a)(\delta_2^b + Y_{(Small)}^b)$, the fact that $g_{ab}^{(Small)} = f(\gamma)\gamma$ with f smooth and similarly for $Y_{(Small)}^a$ (see Lemma 2.19), and the bootstrap assumptions. $\qquad\square$

Lemma 8.2 (**Controlling $\nabla\!\!\!\!/\,$ derivatives in terms of Y derivatives**). *Let f be a scalar function on $\ell_{t,u}$. Under the data-size and bootstrap assumptions of Subsects. 7.4–7.6 and the smallness assumptions of Subsect. 7.7, the following comparison estimates hold on $\mathcal{M}_{T_{(Boot)}, U_0}$:*

$$|d\!\!\!/ f| \leq (1 + C\varepsilon^{1/2}) |Yf|, \qquad |\nabla\!\!\!\!/\,^2 f| \leq (1 + C\varepsilon^{1/2}) |d\!\!\!/(Yf)| + C\varepsilon |d\!\!\!/ f|. \tag{8.2}$$

Proof The first inequality in (8.2) follows directly from Lemma 8.1. To prove the second, we first use Lemma 8.1, the identity $\nabla\!\!\!\!/\,^2_{YY} f = Y \cdot d\!\!\!/(Yf) - \nabla\!\!\!\!/\,_Y Y \cdot d\!\!\!/ f$, and the estimate $|Y| = 1 + \mathcal{O}(\varepsilon^{1/2})$ noted in the proof of Lemma 8.1 to deduce that

$$|\nabla\!\!\!\!/\,^2 f| \leq (1 + C\varepsilon^{1/2}) |\nabla\!\!\!\!/\,^2_{YY} f| \leq (1 + C\varepsilon^{1/2}) |d\!\!\!/(Yf)| + |\nabla\!\!\!\!/\,_Y Y||d\!\!\!/ f|. \tag{8.3}$$

Next, we use Lemma 8.1 and the identity $^{(Y)}\not{\pi}_{YY} = \not{\nabla}_Y(\not{g}(Y,Y)) = Y(g_{ab}Y^aY^b)$ to deduce that

$$\left|\not{\nabla}_Y Y\right| \lesssim \left|g(\not{\nabla}_Y Y, Y)\right| \lesssim \left|^{(Y)}\not{\pi}_{YY}\right| \lesssim \left|Y(g_{ab}Y^aY^b)\right|. \tag{8.4}$$

Since Lemma 2.19 implies that $g_{ab}Y^aY^b = f(\gamma)$ with f smooth, the bootstrap assumptions yield that RHS (8.4) is $\lesssim |Y\gamma| \lesssim \varepsilon^{1/2}$. The desired inequality now follows from this estimate, (8.3), and (8.4). $\qquad\square$

Lemma 8.3 (**Controlling $\not{\mathcal{L}}_V$ and $\not{\nabla}$ derivatives in terms of $\not{\mathcal{L}}_Y$ derivatives**). *Let $\xi_{\alpha_1\cdots\alpha_n}$ be a type $\binom{0}{n}$ $\ell_{t,u}$-tangent tensor with $n \geq 1$ and let V be an $\ell_{t,u}$-tangent vectorfield. Under the data-size and bootstrap assumptions of Subsects. 7.4–7.6 and the smallness assumptions of Subsect. 7.7, the following comparison estimates hold on $\mathcal{M}_{T_{(Boot)},U_0}$:*

$$\left|\not{\mathcal{L}}_V\xi\right| \lesssim |V|\left|\not{\mathcal{L}}_Y\xi\right| + |\xi|\left|\not{\mathcal{L}}_Y V\right| + \varepsilon^{1/2}|\xi||V|, \tag{8.5}$$

$$\left|\not{\nabla}\xi\right| \lesssim |\not{\mathcal{L}}_Y\xi| + \varepsilon^{1/2}|\xi|. \tag{8.6}$$

Proof To prove (8.5), we first note the schematic identity $\not{\mathcal{L}}_V\xi = \not{\nabla}_V\xi + \sum \xi \cdot \not{\nabla}V$, which follows from applying $\not{\Pi}$ to both sides of (2.31), recalling that RHS (2.31) is invariant upon replacing all coordinate partial derivatives ∂ with covariant derivatives $\mathscr{D}$, and recalling that $\not{\nabla} = \not{\Pi}\mathscr{D}$ when acting on $\ell_{t,u}$-tangent tensorfields ξ. Also using Lemma 8.1, we find that

$$\left|\not{\mathcal{L}}_V\xi\right| \lesssim |V||\not{\nabla}_Y\xi| + |\xi||\not{\nabla}_Y V|. \tag{8.7}$$

Next, we note that the torsion-free property of $\not{\nabla}$ implies that $\not{\nabla}_Y V = \not{\mathcal{L}}_Y V + \not{\nabla}_V Y$. Hence, using Lemma 8.1, (8.4), and the estimate $|\not{\nabla}_Y Y| \lesssim \varepsilon^{1/2}$ shown in the proof of Lemma 8.2, we find that

$$|\not{\nabla}_Y V| \lesssim |\not{\mathcal{L}}_Y V| + |V||\not{\nabla}Y| \lesssim |\not{\mathcal{L}}_Y V| + |V||\not{\nabla}_Y Y| \lesssim |\not{\mathcal{L}}_Y V| + \varepsilon^{1/2}|V|. \tag{8.8}$$

Similarly, we have

$$|\not{\nabla}_Y\xi| \lesssim |\not{\mathcal{L}}_Y\xi| + \varepsilon^{1/2}|\xi|. \tag{8.9}$$

The desired estimate (8.5) now follows from (8.7), (8.8), and (8.9).

The estimate (8.6) follows from applying Lemma 8.1 to $\not{\nabla}\xi$ and using (8.9). $\qquad\square$

8.2 Basic Facts and Estimates that We Use Silently

For the reader's convenience, we present here some basic facts and estimates that we silently use throughout the rest of the paper when deriving estimates.

(1) All quantities that we estimate can be controlled in terms of the small quantities $\gamma = \{\Psi, \mu - 1, L^1_{(Small)}, L^2_{(Small)}\}$ and their derivatives (where the $\check{X}$ derivatives do not have to be small, nor does $L\mu$).

(2) We typically use the Leibniz rule for the operators $\mathcal{L}_Z$ and $\overline{\nabla}$ when deriving point-wise estimates for the $\mathcal{L}_Z$ and $\overline{\nabla}$ derivatives of tensor products of the schematic form $\prod_{i=1}^m v_i$, where the v_i are scalar functions or $\ell_{t,u}$-tangent tensors. Our derivative counts are such that all v_i except at most one are uniformly bounded in L^∞ on $\mathcal{M}_{T_{(Boot)},U_0}$. Thus, our pointwise estimates often explicitly feature (on the right-hand sides) only the factor with the most derivatives on it, multiplied by a constant that uniformly bounds the other factors. In some estimates, the right-hand sides also gain a smallness factor, such as $\varepsilon^{1/2}$, generated by the remaining $v'_i s$.

(3) The operators $\mathcal{L}^N_{\mathscr{Z}}$ commute through $d\!\!\!/$, as shown by Lemma 2.10.

(4) As differential operators acting on scalar functions, we have $Y = (1 + \mathcal{O}(\gamma)) d\!\!\!/ = (1 + \mathcal{O}(\varepsilon^{1/2})) d\!\!\!/$, a fact which follows from the proof of Lemma 8.2, (8.14a), and the bootstrap assumptions. Hence, for scalar functions f, we sometimes schematically depict $d\!\!\!/ f$ as $(1 + \mathcal{O}(\gamma)) Pf$ or Pf when the factor $1 + \mathcal{O}(\gamma)$ is not important. Similarly, the proofs of Lemmas 8.2 and 8.3 show that we can depict $\not\!\!\Delta f$ by $f(\mathscr{P}^{\leq 1}\gamma, g\!\!\!/^{-1}) \mathscr{P}^{[1,2]}_* f$ (or $\mathscr{P}^{[1,2]}_* f$ when the factor $f(\mathscr{P}^{\leq 1}\gamma, g\!\!\!/^{-1})$ is not important) and, for type $\binom{0}{n}$ $\ell_{t,u}$-tangent tensorfields ξ, $\overline{\nabla}\xi$ by $f(\mathscr{P}^{\leq 1}\gamma, g\!\!\!/^{-1})\mathcal{L}^{\leq 1}_{\mathscr{P}}\xi$ (or $\mathcal{L}^{\leq 1}_{\mathscr{P}}\xi$ when the factor $f(\mathscr{P}^{\leq 1}\gamma, g\!\!\!/^{-1})$ is not important).

(5) We remind the reader that all constants are allowed to depend on the data-size parameters $\mathring{\delta}$ and $\mathring{\delta}^{-1}_*$.

8.3 Pointwise Estimates for the Rectangular Coordinates and the Rectangular Components of Some Vectorfields

Lemma 8.4 (**Pointwise estimates for** x^i **and the rectangular components of several vectorfields**). *Assume that* $N \leq 18$ *and* $V \in \{L, X, Y\}$. *Let* $x^i = x^i(t, u, \vartheta)$ *denote the rectangular coordinate function and let* $\mathring{x}^i = \mathring{x}^i(u, \vartheta) := x^i(0, u, \vartheta)$. *Under the data-size and bootstrap assumptions of Subsects.* 7.4–7.6 *and the smallness assumptions of Subsect.* 7.7, *the following pointwise estimates hold on* $\mathcal{M}_{T_{(Boot)},U_0}$, *for* $i = 1, 2$ *(see Subsect.* 7.2 *regarding the vectorfield operator notation):*

$$\left|V^i\right| \lesssim 1 + |\gamma|, \tag{8.10a}$$

$$\left|\mathscr{P}^{[1,N]}V^i\right| \lesssim \left|\mathscr{P}^{\leq N}\gamma\right|, \tag{8.10b}$$

$$\left|\mathscr{Z}^{[1,N];1}_* V^i\right| \lesssim \left|\mathscr{Z}^{\leq N;1}_* \gamma\right|, \tag{8.10c}$$

$$\left|\mathscr{Z}^{[1,N];1} V^i\right| \lesssim \left|\mathscr{Z}^{\leq N;1}\gamma\right|, \tag{8.10d}$$

$$\left|\check{X}^i\right| \lesssim 1 + |\underline{\gamma}|, \tag{8.10e}$$

$$\left|\mathscr{P}^{[1,N]}\check{X}^i\right| \lesssim \left|\mathscr{P}^{\leq N}\underline{\gamma}\right|, \tag{8.10f}$$

$$\left|\mathscr{Z}^{[1,N];1}_* \check{X}^i\right| \lesssim \left|\mathscr{Z}^{\leq N;1}_* \underline{\gamma}\right|, \tag{8.10g}$$

$$\left| \mathcal{Z}^{[1,N];1} \check{X}^i \right| \lesssim \left| \mathcal{Z}^{\leq N;1} \underline{\gamma} \right|, \tag{8.10h}$$

$$\left| x^i - \mathring{x}^i \right| \lesssim 1, \tag{8.11a}$$

$$\left| \mathcal{d} x^i \right| \lesssim 1 + |\gamma|, \tag{8.11b}$$

$$\left| \mathcal{d} \mathcal{P}^{[1,N]} x^i \right| \lesssim \left| \mathcal{P}^{\leq N} \gamma \right|, \tag{8.11c}$$

$$\left| \mathcal{d} \mathcal{Z}_*^{[1,N];1} x^i \right| \lesssim \left| \mathcal{Z}_*^{\leq N;1} \gamma \right| + \left| \mathcal{P}_*^{[1,N]} \underline{\gamma} \right|, \tag{8.11d}$$

$$\left| \mathcal{d} \mathcal{Z}^{[1,N];1} x^i \right| \lesssim \left| \mathcal{P}^{\leq N} \gamma \right| + \left| \mathcal{P}_*^{[1,N]} \underline{\gamma} \right|, \tag{8.11e}$$

$$\left| \mathcal{P}^N Y_{(Small)}^i \right| \lesssim \left| \mathcal{P}^{\leq N} \gamma \right|, \tag{8.12a}$$

$$\left| \mathcal{Z}_*^{N;1} Y_{(Small)}^i \right| \lesssim \left| \mathcal{Z}_*^{\leq N;1} \gamma \right|, \tag{8.12b}$$

$$\left| \mathcal{Z}^{N;1} Y_{(Small)}^i \right| \lesssim \left| \mathcal{Z}^{\leq N;1} \gamma \right|. \tag{8.12c}$$

In the case $i = 2$ at fixed u, ϑ, LHS (8.11a) *is to be interpreted as the Euclidean distance traveled by the point x^2 in the flat universal covering space $\mathbb{R}$ of $\mathbb{T}$ along the corresponding integral curve of L over the time interval $[0, t]$.*

Proof See Subsect. 8.2 for some comments on the analysis. Lemma 2.19 implies that for $V \in \{L, X, Y\}$, the component $V^i = V x^i$ verifies $V^i = \mathrm{f}(\gamma)$ with f smooth. Similarly, $Y_{(Small)}^i$ verifies $Y_{(Small)}^i = \mathrm{f}(\gamma)\gamma$ with f smooth and $\check{X} x^i = \check{X}^i$ verifies $\check{X}^i = \mathrm{f}(\gamma)$ with f smooth. The estimates of the lemma therefore follow easily from the bootstrap assumptions, except for the estimates (8.11a)–(8.11e). To obtain (8.11a), we first argue as above to deduce $|L x^i| = |L^i| = |\mathrm{f}(\gamma)| \lesssim 1$. Since $L = \frac{\partial}{\partial t}$, we may integrate along the integral curves of L starting from $t = 0$ and use the previous estimate to conclude (8.11a). To derive (8.11b), we use (8.2) with $f = x^i$ to deduce $|\mathcal{d} x^i| \lesssim |Y x^i| = |Y^i| = |\mathrm{f}(\gamma)| \lesssim 1 + |\gamma|$ as desired. The proofs of (8.11c)–(8.11e) are similar, but we also use Lemma 2.10 to commute vectorfields under $\mathcal{d}$. $\qquad\square$

8.4 Pointwise Estimates for Various $\ell_{t,u}$-Tensorfields

Lemma 8.5 (**Crude pointwise estimates for the Lie derivatives of $\mathcal{g}$ and $\mathcal{g}^{-1}$**). *Assume that $N \leq 18$. Under the data-size and bootstrap assumptions of Subsects. 7.4–7.6 and the smallness assumptions of Subsect. 7.7, the following pointwise estimates hold on $\mathcal{M}_{T_{(Boot)}, U_0}$ (see Subsect. 7.2 regarding the vectorfield operator notation):*

$$\left| \mathcal{L}_{\mathcal{P}}^{N+1} \mathcal{g} \right|, \left| \mathcal{L}_{\mathcal{P}}^{N+1} \mathcal{g}^{-1} \right| \left| \mathcal{L}_{\mathcal{P}}^N \chi \right|, \left| \mathcal{P}^N \mathrm{tr}_{\mathcal{g}} \chi \right| \lesssim \left| \mathcal{P}^{\leq N+1} \gamma \right|, \tag{8.13a}$$

$$\left| \mathcal{L}_{\mathcal{Z}_*}^{N+1;1} \mathcal{g} \right|, \left| \mathcal{L}_{\mathcal{Z}_*}^{N+1;1} \mathcal{g}^{-1} \right|, \left| \mathcal{L}_{\mathcal{Z}}^{N;1} \chi \right|, \left| \mathcal{Z}^{N;1} \mathrm{tr}_{\mathcal{g}} \chi \right| \lesssim \left| \mathcal{Z}_*^{\leq N+1;1} \gamma \right| + \left| \mathcal{P}_*^{[1,N+1]} \underline{\gamma} \right|, \tag{8.13b}$$

$$\left|\mathcal{L}_{\mathscr{Z}}^{N+1;1}\mathfrak{g}\right|, \ \left|\mathcal{L}_{\mathscr{Z}}^{N+1;1}\mathfrak{g}^{-1}\right| \lesssim \left|\mathscr{Z}^{\leq N+1;1}\gamma\right| + \left|\mathscr{P}_{*}^{[1,N+1]}\underline{\gamma}\right|. \tag{8.13c}$$

Proof See Subsect. 8.2 for some comments on the analysis. By Lemma 2.19, we have $\mathfrak{g} = \mathrm{f}(\gamma, \mathfrak{d}x^1, \mathfrak{d}x^2)$. The desired estimates for $\mathcal{L}_{\mathscr{P}}^{N+1}\mathfrak{g}$ thus follow from Lemma 8.4 and the bootstrap assumptions. The desired estimates for $\mathcal{L}_{\mathscr{P}}^{N+1}\mathfrak{g}^{-1}$ then follow from repeated use of the second identity in (2.58) and the estimates for $\mathcal{L}_{\mathscr{P}}^{N+1}\mathfrak{g}$. The estimates for $\mathcal{L}_{\mathscr{P}}^{N}\chi$ and $\mathscr{P}^N\mathrm{tr}_{\mathfrak{g}}\chi$ follow from the estimates for $\mathcal{L}_{\mathscr{P}}^{N+1}\mathfrak{g}$ and $\mathcal{L}_{\mathscr{P}}^{N+1}\mathfrak{g}^{-1}$ since $\chi \sim \mathcal{L}_P\mathfrak{g}$ (see (2.37)) and $\mathrm{tr}_{\mathfrak{g}}\chi \sim \mathfrak{g}^{-1} \cdot \mathcal{L}_P\mathfrak{g}$. □

Lemma 8.6 (**Pointwise estimates for the Lie derivatives of Y and some deformation tensor components**). *Assume that $N \leq 18$. Under the data-size and bootstrap assumptions of Subsects. 7.4–7.6 and the smallness assumptions of Subsect. 7.7, the following pointwise estimates hold on $\mathcal{M}_{T_{(Boot)},U_0}$ (see Subsect. 7.2 regarding the vectorfield operator notation):*

$$|Y| \leq 1 + C\,|\gamma|, \tag{8.14a}$$

$$\left|\mathcal{L}_{\mathscr{P}}^{[1,N]}Y\right| \leq C\left|\mathscr{P}^{\leq N}\gamma\right|, \tag{8.14b}$$

$$\left|\mathcal{L}_{\mathscr{Z}_{*}}^{[1,N];1}Y\right| \leq C\left|\mathscr{Z}_{*}^{\leq N;1}\gamma\right| + C\left|\mathscr{P}_{*}^{[1,N]}\underline{\gamma}\right|, \tag{8.14c}$$

$$\left|\mathcal{L}_{\mathscr{Z}}^{[1,N];1}Y\right| \leq C\left|\mathscr{Z}^{\leq N;1}\gamma\right| + C\left|\mathscr{P}_{*}^{[1,N]}\underline{\gamma}\right|, \tag{8.14d}$$

$$\left|\mathcal{L}_{\mathscr{P}}^{N}{}^{(Y)}\hspace{-0.1em}\not{\pi}_L\right|, \ \left|\mathcal{L}_{\mathscr{P}}^{N}{}^{(Y)}\hspace{-0.1em}\not{\pi}_L^{\#}\right| \lesssim \left|\mathscr{P}^{\leq N+1}\gamma\right|, \tag{8.15a}$$

$$\left|\mathcal{L}_{\mathscr{Z}}^{N;1}{}^{(Y)}\hspace{-0.1em}\not{\pi}_L\right|, \ \left|\mathcal{L}_{\mathscr{Z}}^{N;1}{}^{(Y)}\hspace{-0.1em}\not{\pi}_L^{\#}\right| \lesssim \left|\mathscr{Z}_{*}^{\leq N+1;1}\gamma\right| + \varepsilon^{1/2}\left|\mathscr{Z}^{\leq N;1}\gamma\right| + \varepsilon^{1/2}\left|\mathscr{P}_{*}^{[1,N]}\underline{\gamma}\right|, \tag{8.15b}$$

$$\left|\mathcal{L}_{\mathscr{P}}^{N}{}^{(Y)}\hspace{-0.1em}\not{\pi}_{\check{X}}\right|, \ \left|\mathcal{L}_{\mathscr{P}}^{N}{}^{(Y)}\hspace{-0.1em}\not{\pi}_{\check{X}}^{\#}\right| \lesssim \left|\mathscr{Z}_{*}^{\leq N+1;1}\Psi\right| + \left|\mathscr{P}^{\leq N+1}\gamma\right| + \left|\mathscr{P}_{*}^{[1,N]}\underline{\gamma}\right|, \tag{8.16}$$

$$\left|{}^{(\check{X})}\hspace{-0.1em}\not{\pi}_L\right|, \ \left|{}^{(\check{X})}\hspace{-0.1em}\not{\pi}_L^{\#}\right| \lesssim \left|\mathscr{Z}^{\leq 1}\Psi\right| + |\mathscr{P}_{*}\mu|, \tag{8.17a}$$

$$\left|\mathcal{L}_{\mathscr{P}}^{[1,N]}{}^{(\check{X})}\hspace{-0.1em}\not{\pi}_L\right|, \ \left|\mathcal{L}_{\mathscr{P}}^{[1,N]}{}^{(\check{X})}\hspace{-0.1em}\not{\pi}_L^{\#}\right| \lesssim \left|\mathscr{Z}_{*}^{\leq N+1;1}\Psi\right| + \left|\mathscr{P}^{\leq N+1}\gamma\right| + \left|\mathscr{P}_{*}^{[1,N+1]}\underline{\gamma}\right|, \tag{8.17b}$$

$$\left|\mathcal{L}_{\mathscr{P}}^{N}{}^{(L)}\hspace{-0.1em}\not{\pi}\right|, \ \left|\mathcal{L}_{\mathscr{P}}^{N}{}^{(Y)}\hspace{-0.1em}\not{\pi}\right| \lesssim \left|\mathscr{P}^{\leq N+1}\gamma\right|, \tag{8.18a}$$

$$\left|\mathcal{L}_{\mathscr{Z}}^{N;1}{}^{(L)}\hspace{-0.1em}\not{\pi}\right|, \ \left|\mathcal{L}_{\mathscr{Z}}^{N;1}{}^{(Y)}\hspace{-0.1em}\not{\pi}\right| \lesssim \left|\mathscr{Z}_{*}^{\leq N+1;1}\gamma\right| + \varepsilon^{1/2}\left|\mathscr{Z}^{\leq N;1}\gamma\right| + \varepsilon^{1/2}\left|\mathscr{P}_{*}^{[1,N]}\underline{\gamma}\right|. \tag{8.18b}$$

Proof See Subsect. 8.2 for some comments on the analysis. To prove (8.15a) for ${}^{(Y)}\hspace{-0.1em}\not{\pi}_L^{\#}$, we first note that by Lemma 2.19 and (2.78b), we have ${}^{(Y)}\hspace{-0.1em}\not{\pi}_L^{\#} = \mathrm{f}(\gamma, \mathfrak{g}^{-1}, \mathfrak{d}x^1, \mathfrak{d}x^2)P\gamma$. We now apply $\mathcal{L}_{\mathscr{P}}^{N}$ to the previous relation. We bound the derivatives of $\mathfrak{g}^{-1}$ and $\mathfrak{d}x$ with Lemmas 8.4 and 8.5. Also using the bootstrap assumptions, we conclude the

desired result. A similar argument yields the same estimate for $^{(Y)}\not{\pi}_L$. The proof of (8.15b) is similar and we omit the details.

Since Lemma 2.19 implies that $Y = \mathrm{f}(\gamma, g^{-1}, \not{d}x^1, \not{d}x^2)$, similar reasoning yields (8.14c)–(8.14d).

Inequality (8.14a) follows from the slightly more precise arguments already given in the proof of Lemma 8.1.

The proof of (8.16) is similar and is based on the observation that by Lemma 2.19 and (2.78c), we have

$$^{(Y)}\not{\pi}_{\check{X}}^{\#} = \mathrm{f}(\underline{\gamma}, g^{-1}, \not{d}x^1, \not{d}x^2) P\gamma + \mathrm{f}(\gamma, g^{-1}, \not{d}x^1, \not{d}x^2, \check{X}\Psi)\gamma + \mathrm{f}(\gamma, g^{-1})\not{d}\mu,$$

and a similar schematic relation holds for $^{(Y)}\not{\pi}_{\check{X}}$.

The proofs of (8.17a)–(8.17b) are similar and are based on the observation that by Lemma 2.19, (2.66a), and (2.76b), we have

$$^{(\check{X})}\not{\pi}_L^{\#} = \mathrm{f}(\gamma, g^{-1}, \not{d}x^1, \not{d}x^2)\check{X}\Psi + \mathrm{f}(\underline{\gamma}, g^{-1}, \not{d}x^1, \not{d}x^2) P\Psi + g^{-1}\not{d}\mu,$$

and a similar schematic relation holds for $^{(\check{X})}\not{\pi}_L$.

The proofs of (8.18a)–(8.18b) are similar and are based on the fact that by Lemma 2.19, (2.77c), and (2.78d), we have $^{(L)}\not{\pi}, {}^{(Y)}\not{\pi} = \mathrm{f}(\gamma, g^{-1}, \not{d}x^1, \not{d}x^2) P\gamma$. $\square$

8.5 Commutator Estimates

In this subsection, we establish some commutator estimates.

Lemma 8.7 (**Pure $\mathcal{P}_u$-tangent commutator estimates**). *Assume that $1 \leq N \leq 18$. Let $\vec{I}$ be an order $|\vec{I}| = N + 1$ multi-index for the set $\mathscr{P}$ of $\mathcal{P}_u$-tangent commutation vectorfields (see Def. 5.1), and let $\vec{I}'$ be any permutation of $\vec{I}$. Let f be a scalar function, and let ξ be an $\ell_{t,u}$-tangent one-form or a type $\binom{0}{2}$ $\ell_{t,u}$-tangent tensorfield. Under the data-size and bootstrap assumptions of Subsects. 7.4–7.6 and the smallness assumptions of Subsect. 7.7, the following commutator estimates hold on $\mathcal{M}_{T_{(Boot)},U_0}$ (see Subsect. 7.2 regarding the vectorfield operator notation):*

$$\left| \mathscr{P}^{\vec{I}} f - \mathscr{P}^{\vec{I}'} f \right| \lesssim \varepsilon^{1/2} \left| \mathscr{P}_*^{[1,N]} f \right| + \left| \mathscr{P}_*^{[1,\lfloor N/2 \rfloor]} f \right| \left| \mathscr{P}^{\leq N} \gamma \right|. \tag{8.19a}$$

Moreover, if $1 \leq N \leq 17$ and $\vec{I}$ is as above, then the following commutator estimates hold:

$$\left| [\not{\nabla}^2, \mathscr{P}^N] f \right| \lesssim \varepsilon^{1/2} \left| \mathscr{P}_*^{[1,N]} f \right| + \left| \mathscr{P}_*^{[1,\lceil N/2 \rceil]} f \right| \left| \mathscr{P}^{\leq N+1} \gamma \right|, \tag{8.20a}$$

$$\left| [\not{\Delta}, \mathscr{P}^N] f \right| \lesssim \varepsilon^{1/2} \left| \mathscr{P}_*^{[1,N+1]} f \right| + \left| \mathscr{P}_*^{[1,\lceil N/2 \rceil]} f \right| \left| \mathscr{P}^{\leq N+1} \gamma \right|, \tag{8.20b}$$

$$\left| \mathcal{L}_{\mathscr{P}}^{\vec{I}} \xi - \mathcal{L}_{\mathscr{P}}^{\vec{I}'} \xi \right| \lesssim \varepsilon^{1/2} \left| \mathcal{L}_{\mathscr{P}}^{[1,N]} \xi \right| + \left| \mathcal{L}_{\mathscr{P}}^{\leq \lfloor N/2 \rfloor} \xi \right| \left| \mathscr{P}^{\leq N+1} \gamma \right|, \tag{8.21a}$$

$$\left|[\slashed{\nabla}, \mathcal{L}_{\mathscr{P}}^N]\xi\right| \lesssim \underbrace{\varepsilon^{1/2}\left|\mathcal{L}_{\mathscr{P}}^{\leq[1,N-1]}\xi\right|}_{\text{Absent if } N=1} + \left|\mathcal{L}_{\mathscr{P}}^{\leq\lfloor N/2\rfloor}\xi\right|\left|\mathscr{P}^{\leq N+1}\gamma\right|, \tag{8.21b}$$

$$\left|[\slashed{\text{div}}, \mathcal{L}_{\mathscr{P}}^N]\xi\right| \lesssim \varepsilon^{1/2}\left|\mathcal{L}_{\mathscr{P}}^{[1,N]}\xi\right| + \left|\mathcal{L}_{\mathscr{P}}^{\leq\lfloor N/2\rfloor}\xi\right|\left|\mathscr{P}^{\leq N+1}\gamma\right|. \tag{8.21c}$$

Finally, if $1 \leq N \leq 17$, then we have the following alternate version of (8.20a)*:*

$$\left|[\slashed{\nabla}^2, \mathscr{P}^N]f\right| \lesssim \left|\mathscr{P}^{\leq\lceil N/2\rceil+1}\gamma\right|\left|\mathscr{P}_*^{[1,N]}f\right| + \left|\mathscr{P}_*^{[1,\lceil N/2\rceil]}f\right|\left|\mathscr{P}^{\leq N+1}\gamma\right|. \tag{8.22}$$

Proof See Subsect. 8.2 for some comments on the analysis. We first prove (8.19a). Using (5.4a) and Lemma 2.9, we see that it suffices to bound

$$\sum_{N_1+N_2\leq N-1} \left|\mathcal{L}_{\mathscr{P}}^{N_1}{}^{(Y)}\slashed{\pi}_L^{\#}\right|\left|Y\mathscr{P}^{N_2}f\right|. \tag{8.23}$$

The desired bound of (8.23) by $\lesssim$ RHS (8.19a) now follows easily from (8.15a) and the bootstrap assumptions.

The proof of (8.21a) is similar but relies on (5.4b) in place of (5.4a) and also (8.5) with $V := {}^{(Z_{\iota_{k_2}})}\slashed{\pi}_{Z_{\iota_{k_1}}}^{\#}$ (to handle the first Lie derivative operator on RHS (5.4b)).

The proofs of (8.20a), (8.20b), and (8.22) are similar and are based on the commutation identities (5.3a)–(5.3b), the identity (2.58), and the estimate (8.18a).

The proofs of (8.21b)–(8.21c) are similar and are based on the commutation identities (5.1)–(5.2) □

Lemma 8.8 (**Mixed $\mathcal{P}_u$-transversal-tangent commutator estimates**). *Assume that $1 \leq N \leq 18$. Let $\mathscr{Z}^{\vec{I}}$ be a $\mathscr{Z}$-multi-indexed operator containing **exactly one** $\breve{X}$ factor, and assume that $|\vec{I}| := N+1$. Let $\vec{I}'$ be any permutation of $\vec{I}$. Let f be a scalar function. Under the data-size and bootstrap assumptions of Subsects. 7.4–7.6 and the smallness assumptions of Subsect. 7.7, the following commutator estimates hold on $\mathcal{M}_{T_{(Boot)},U_0}$ (see Subsect. 7.2 regarding the vectorfield operator notation):*

$$\left|\mathscr{Z}^{\vec{I}}f - \mathscr{Z}^{\vec{I}'}f\right| \lesssim \left|\mathscr{P}_*^{[1,N]}f\right| + \varepsilon^{1/2}\left|Y\mathscr{Z}^{\leq N-1;1}f\right|$$
$$+ \left|\mathscr{P}_*^{[1,\lfloor N/2\rfloor]}f\right|\left|\begin{pmatrix}\mathscr{P}_*^{[1,N]}\gamma \\ \mathscr{Z}_*^{\leq N;1}\gamma\end{pmatrix}\right| + \left|Y\mathscr{Z}^{\leq\lfloor N/2\rfloor-1;1}f\right|\left|\mathscr{P}^{\leq N}\gamma\right|. \tag{8.24}$$

Moreover, if $1 \leq N \leq 17$, then the following estimates hold:

$$\left|[\slashed{\nabla}^2, \mathscr{Z}^{N;1}]f\right| \lesssim \left|\mathscr{Z}_*^{\leq N;1}f\right| + \left|\mathscr{P}^{\leq\lceil N/2\rceil}f\right|\left|\begin{pmatrix}\mathscr{P}_*^{[1,N+1]}\gamma \\ \mathscr{Z}_*^{\leq N+1;1}\gamma\end{pmatrix}\right|$$
$$+ \left|\mathscr{Z}_*^{\leq\lceil N/2\rceil}f\right|\left|\mathscr{P}^{\leq N+1}\gamma\right|, \tag{8.25a}$$

$$\left|[\mathbf{\not{\Delta}}, \mathscr{Z}^{N;1}]f\right| \lesssim \left|\mathscr{Z}_*^{\leq N+1;1}f\right| + \left|\mathscr{P}^{\leq\lceil N/2\rceil}f\right|\left|\begin{pmatrix}\mathscr{P}_*^{[1,N+1]}\gamma\\ \mathscr{Z}_*^{\leq N+1;1}\gamma\end{pmatrix}\right|$$

$$+ \left|\mathscr{Z}_*^{\leq\lceil N/2\rceil}f\right|\left|\mathscr{P}^{\leq N+1}\gamma\right|. \tag{8.25b}$$

Proof See Subsect. 8.2 for some comments on the analysis. The proof is similar to that of Lemma 8.7, so we only sketch it by highlighting the few differences worth mentioning. To illustrate the differences, we prove (8.24) in detail. To proceed, we argue as in the proof of (8.23) and use that precisely one factor of $\mathscr{Z}^{\vec{I}}$ is equal to $\check{X}$, thereby deducing that

$$\text{LHS (8.5.6)} \lesssim \sum_{N_1+N_2\leq N-1}\left|\mathcal{L}_{\mathscr{P}}^{N_1(\check{X})}\slashed{\pi}_L^{\#}\right|\left|Y\mathscr{P}^{N_2}f\right| + \sum_{N_1+N_2\leq N-1}\left|\mathcal{L}_{\mathscr{P}}^{N_1(Y)}\slashed{\pi}_{\check{X}}^{\#}\right|\left|Y\mathscr{P}^{N_2}f\right|$$

$$+ \sum_{N_1+N_2\leq N-1}\left|\mathcal{L}_{\mathscr{Z}}^{N_1;1(Y)}\slashed{\pi}_L^{\#}\right|\left|Y\mathscr{P}^{N_2}f\right|$$

$$+ \sum_{N_1+N_2\leq N-1}\left|\mathcal{L}_{\mathscr{P}}^{N_1(Y)}\slashed{\pi}_L^{\#}\right|\left|Y\mathscr{Z}^{N_2;1}f\right|. \tag{8.26}$$

The key point in (8.26) is that all $\ell_{t,u}$-projected Lie derivatives that fall on $^{(\check{X})}\slashed{\pi}_L^{\#}$ or $^{(Y)}\slashed{\pi}_{\check{X}}^{\#}$ are with respect to vectorfields in $\mathscr{P}$. The desired bound (8.24) now follows easily from the estimates (8.15a)–(8.17b) and the bootstrap assumptions. Note that the first term on RHS (8.17a) is not necessarily small and hence, in contrast to (8.19a), we do not gain a smallness factor of $\varepsilon^{1/2}$ in front of the first term on RHS (8.24).

The remaining estimates stated in Lemma 8.8 can be proved by making similar modifications to our proof of Lemma 8.7 and employing the estimates of Lemma 8.6. □

Corollary 8.9 *Assume that $1 \leq N \leq 18$. Under the assumptions of Lemma 8.8, the following pointwise estimates hold on $\mathcal{M}_{T_{(Boot)},U_0}$:*

$$\left|\mathscr{P}^{N-1}\mathbf{\not{\Delta}}\Psi\right| \lesssim \left|\mathscr{P}^{\leq N+1}\Psi\right| + \left|\mathscr{P}^{\leq N}\gamma\right|. \tag{8.27}$$

Proof See Subsect. 8.2 for some comments on the analysis. Writing $\mathscr{P}^{N-1}\mathbf{\not{\Delta}}\Psi = \mathbf{\not{\Delta}}\mathscr{P}^{N-1}\Psi + [\mathscr{P}^{N-1}, \mathbf{\not{\Delta}}]\Psi$, we see that the corollary is a simple consequence of (8.2), (8.20b) with $f = \Psi$, and the bootstrap assumptions. □

8.6 Transport Inequalities and Improvements of the Auxiliary Bootstrap Assumptions

In the next proposition, we use the previous estimates to derive transport inequalities for the eikonal function quantities and improvements of the auxiliary bootstrap assumptions. The transport inequalities form the starting point for our derivation of L^2 estimates for the below-top-order derivatives of the eikonal function quantities

(see Subsect. 14.2). In proving the proposition, we must in particular propagate the smallness of the ề-sized quantities even though some terms in the evolution equations involve δ̊-sized quantities, which are allowed to be large. To this end, we must find and exploit effective partial decoupling between various quantities, which is present because of the special structure of the evolution equations relative to the geometric coordinates and because of the good properties of the commutation vectorfield sets $\mathscr{Z}$ and $\mathscr{P}$.

Proposition 8.10 (**Transport inequalities and improvements of the auxiliary bootstrap assumptions**). *Under the data-size and bootstrap assumptions of Subsects. 7.4–7.6 and the smallness assumptions of Subsect. 7.7, the following estimates hold on $\mathcal{M}_{T_{(Boot)},U_0}$ (see Subsect. 7.2 regarding the vectorfield operator notation):*
Transport inequalities for the eikonal function quantities.

- ***Transport inequalities for*** $\upmu$. *The following pointwise estimate holds:*

$$|L\upmu| \lesssim \left|\mathscr{Z}^{\leq 1}\Psi\right|. \tag{8.28a}$$

Moreover, for $1 \leq N \leq 18$, the following estimates hold:

$$\left|L\mathscr{P}^N\upmu\right|,\ \left|\mathscr{P}^N L\upmu\right| \lesssim \left|\mathscr{Z}_*^{\leq N+1;1}\Psi\right| + \left|\mathscr{P}^{\leq N}\upgamma\right| + \varepsilon\left|\mathscr{P}_*^{[1,N]}\underline{\upgamma}\right|. \tag{8.28b}$$

- ***Transport inequalities for*** $L_{(Small)}^i$ ***and*** $\text{tr}_{\text{ğ}}\upchi$. *For $N \leq 18$, the following estimates hold:*

$$\left|\begin{pmatrix} L\mathscr{P}^N L_{(Small)}^i \\ L\mathscr{P}^{N-1}\text{tr}_{\text{ğ}}\upchi \end{pmatrix}\right|,\ \left|\begin{pmatrix} \mathscr{P}^N LL_{(Small)}^i \\ \mathscr{P}^{N-1}L\text{tr}_{\text{ğ}}\upchi \end{pmatrix}\right| \lesssim \left|\mathscr{P}^{\leq N+1}\Psi\right| + \varepsilon\left|\mathscr{P}^{\leq N}\upgamma\right|, \tag{8.29a}$$

$$\left|\begin{pmatrix} L\mathscr{Z}^{N;1} L_{(Small)}^i \\ L\mathscr{Z}^{N-1;1}\text{tr}_{\text{ğ}}\upchi \end{pmatrix}\right|,\ \left|\begin{pmatrix} \mathscr{Z}^{N;1} LL_{(Small)}^i \\ \mathscr{Z}^{N-1;1}L\text{tr}_{\text{ğ}}\upchi \end{pmatrix}\right| \lesssim \left|\mathscr{Z}_*^{\leq N+1;1}\Psi\right| + \left|\begin{pmatrix} \varepsilon\mathscr{P}_*^{[1,N]}\underline{\upgamma} \\ \mathscr{Z}_*^{\leq N;1}\upgamma \end{pmatrix}\right|. \tag{8.29b}$$

L^∞ estimates for Ψ and the eikonal function quantities.

- ***L^∞ estimates involving at most one transversal derivative of Ψ.*** *The following estimates hold:*

$$\left\|\breve{X}\Psi\right\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_t^u)} \leq \left\|\breve{X}\Psi\right\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_0^u)} + C\varepsilon, \tag{8.30a}$$

$$\left\|\mathscr{Z}_*^{\leq 10;1}\Psi\right\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_t^u)} \leq C\varepsilon. \tag{8.30b}$$

- L^∞ **estimates for** μ. *The following estimates hold:*

$$\|L\mu\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_t^u)} = \frac{1}{2}\left\|G_{LL}\check{X}\Psi\right\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_0^u)} + \mathcal{O}(\varepsilon),$$
(8.31a)

$$\left\|L\mathscr{P}^{[1,9]}\mu\right\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_t^u)}, \ \left\|\mathscr{P}_*^{[1,9]}\mu\right\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_t^u)} \le C\varepsilon,$$
(8.31b)

$$\|\mu - 1\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_t^u)} \le 2\mathring{\delta}_*^{-1}\left\|G_{LL}\check{X}\Psi\right\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_0^u)} + C\varepsilon.$$
(8.32a)

- L^∞ **estimates for** $L_{(Small)}^i$ **and** χ. *The following estimates hold:*

$$\left\|L\mathscr{P}^{\le 10}L_{(Small)}^i\right\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_t^u)}, \ \left\|\mathscr{P}^{\le 10}L_{(Small)}^i\right\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_t^u)} \le C\varepsilon,$$
(8.33a)

$$\left\|L\mathscr{Z}^{\le 9;1}L_{(Small)}^i\right\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_t^u)}, \ \left\|\mathscr{Z}_*^{\le 9;1}L_{(Small)}^i\right\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_t^u)} \le C\varepsilon,$$
(8.33b)

$$\left\|\check{X}L_{(Small)}^i\right\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_t^u)} \le \left\|\check{X}L_{(Small)}^i\right\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_0^u)} + C\varepsilon,$$
(8.33c)

$$\left\|\mathcal{L}_{\mathscr{P}}^{\le 9}\chi\right\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_t^u)}, \ \left\|\mathcal{L}_{\mathscr{P}}^{\le 9}\chi^{\#}\right\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_t^u)}, \ \left\|\mathscr{P}^{\le 9}\mathrm{tr}_{\not{g}}\chi\right\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_t^u)} \le C\varepsilon,$$
(8.34)

$$\left\|\mathcal{L}_{\mathscr{Z}}^{\le 8;1}\chi\right\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_t^u)}, \ \left\|\mathcal{L}_{\mathscr{Z}}^{\le 8;1}\chi^{\#}\right\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_t^u)}, \ \left\|\mathscr{Z}^{\le 8;1}\mathrm{tr}_{\not{g}}\chi\right\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_t^u)} \le C\varepsilon.$$
(8.35)

Remark 8.1 (**The auxiliary bootstrap assumptions of Subsect**. 7.6 **are now redundant**). Since Prop. 8.10 in particular provides an improvement of the auxiliary bootstrap assumptions of Subsect. 7.6, we do not bother to include those bootstrap assumptions in the hypotheses of any of the lemmas or propositions proved in the remainder of the article.

Proof of Prop. 8.10 See Subsect. 8.2 for some comments on the analysis. We must derive the estimates in a viable order. Throughout this proof, we use the estimates of Lemma 7.3 and the assumption (7.14) without explicitly mentioning them each time. We refer to these as "conditions on the data." Similarly, when we say that we use the "bootstrap assumptions," we mean the assumptions on $\mathcal{M}_{T_{(Boot)}, U_0}$ stated in Subsects. 7.4–7.6.

Proof of the estimates (8.29a) for $L\mathscr{P}^N L_{(Small)}^i$ and $\mathscr{P}^N LL_{(Small)}^i$ **and** (8.33a): We prove the estimate (8.29a) for $L\mathscr{P}^N L_{(Small)}^i$ and omit the proof for $\mathscr{P}^N LL_{(Small)}^i$; the

proof of the latter estimate is similar but simpler because it involves fewer commutation estimates. To derive the desired bound, in place of (8.29a), we first show that

$$\left| L \mathscr{P}^N L^i_{(Small)} \right| \lesssim \left| \mathscr{P}^{\leq N+1} \Psi \right| + \varepsilon^{1/2} \left| \mathscr{P}^{\leq N} \gamma \right|. \qquad (8.36)$$

The factors of $\varepsilon^{1/2}$ in (8.36) arise from the auxiliary bootstrap assumptions of Subsect. 7.6. At the end of the proof, we will have shown that the auxiliary bootstrap assumptions have been improved in that they hold with $C\varepsilon$ in place of $\varepsilon^{1/2}$. Using this improvement, we easily conclude (8.29a) for $L \mathscr{P}^N L^i_{(Small)}$ by repeating the proof of (8.36) with $C\varepsilon$ in place of the factor $\varepsilon^{1/2}$. To prove (8.36), we commute equation (2.63) with $\mathscr{P}^N$ and use Lemma 2.19 to derive the schematic equation

$$L \mathscr{P}^N L^i_{(Small)} = [L, \mathscr{P}^N] L^i_{(Small)} + \mathscr{P}^N \left\{ f(\gamma, g^{-1}, dx^1, dx^2) P \Psi \right\}. \qquad (8.37)$$

To bound the second term on RHS (8.37) by RHS (8.36), we use Lemmas 8.4 and 8.5 and the bootstrap assumptions. To bound the remaining term $\left| [L, \mathscr{P}^N] L^i_{(Small)} \right|$, we use the commutator estimate (8.19a) with $f = L^i_{(Small)}$ and the bootstrap assumptions. We have thus proved the desired bound (8.36). Next, to derive the estimate $\left\| L \mathscr{P}^{\leq 10} L^i_{(Small)} \right\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma^u_t)} \lesssim \varepsilon$ stated in (8.33a), we use (8.36) and the bootstrap assumptions. To obtain the estimates $\left\| \mathscr{P}^{\leq 10} L^i_{(Small)} \right\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma^u_t)} \lesssim \varepsilon$ stated in (8.33a), we first use the fundamental theorem of calculus to write

$$\mathscr{P}^{\leq 10} L^i_{(Small)}(t, u, \vartheta) = \mathscr{P}^{\leq 10} L^i_{(Small)}(0, u, \vartheta) + \int_{s=0}^{t} L \mathscr{P}^{\leq 10} L^i_{(Small)}(s, u, \vartheta) \, ds. \qquad (8.38)$$

We then use the conditions on the data to bound $\left| \mathscr{P}^{\leq 10} L^i_{(Small)}(0, u, \vartheta) \right| \lesssim \varepsilon$ and the inequality $\left\| L \mathscr{P}^{\leq 10} L^i_{(Small)} \right\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma^u_t)} \lesssim \varepsilon$ to bound the time integral on RHS (8.38) by $\lesssim T_{(Boot)} \varepsilon \lesssim \varepsilon$, which in total yields the desired result.

Proof of (8.28a): We first use equation (2.62) and Lemma 2.19 to deduce $L\mu = f(\underline{\gamma}) P \Psi + f(\gamma) \check{X} \Psi$. The desired estimate (8.28a) now follows easily from the previous expression and the bootstrap assumptions.

Proof of (8.30a) **and** (8.30b): We first note that in proving (8.30b), we may assume that the operator $\mathscr{Z}^{\leq 10;1}_*$ contains the factor $\check{X}$ since otherwise the estimate is implied by the bootstrap assumption (**BA**Ψ). To proceed, we use equation (2.73a), Lemma 2.19, and the aforementioned fact $L\mu = f(\underline{\gamma}) P \Psi + f(\gamma) \check{X} \Psi$ to rewrite the wave equation as

$$\begin{aligned} L \check{X} \Psi = {} & f(\underline{\gamma}) \Delta \!\!\!/ \, \Psi + f(\gamma, g^{-1}, dx^1, dx^2, P\Psi, \check{X}\Psi) P P \Psi \\ & + f(\gamma, g^{-1}, dx^1, dx^2, P\Psi, \check{X}\Psi) P \gamma. \end{aligned} \qquad (8.39)$$

Commuting (8.39) with $\mathscr{P}^N$, ($0 \leq N \leq 9$), and using Lemmas 8.4 and 8.5 and the bootstrap assumptions, we find that

$$
\begin{aligned}
\left| L\mathscr{P}^N \check{X}\Psi \right| &\leq \left| L\mathscr{P}^N \check{X}\Psi - \mathscr{P}^N L\check{X}\Psi \right| + \left| \mathscr{P}^N L\check{X}\Psi \right| \\
&\lesssim \left| L\mathscr{P}^N \check{X}\Psi - \mathscr{P}^N L\check{X}\Psi \right| + \left| [\slashed{\Delta}, \mathscr{P}^N]\Psi \right| \\
&\quad + \left| \mathscr{P}^{\leq N+2;1}\Psi \right| + \varepsilon^{1/2} \left| \mathscr{Z}_*^{\leq N+1;1}\Psi \right| + \left| \mathscr{P}^{\leq N+1}\gamma \right| + \varepsilon^{1/2} \left| \mathscr{P}_*^{[1,N]}\underline{\gamma} \right|.
\end{aligned}
$$
$$(8.40)$$

Using in addition the commutator estimates (8.24) and (8.20b) with $f = \Psi$, we bound the two commutator terms on the second line of RHS (8.40) by $\lesssim$ the terms on the last line of RHS (8.40). The bootstrap assumptions imply that most terms on the last line of (8.40) are $\lesssim \varepsilon$. The exceptional terms (that is, the ones not included in "most terms") are $\mathscr{P}^{\leq 10}L^i_{(Small)}$ for $i = 1, 2$, but we have already shown that these terms are bounded in the norm $\|\cdot\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_t^u)}$ by $\lesssim \varepsilon$. In total, we find that $\left\| L\mathscr{P}^{\leq 9}\check{X}\Psi \right\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_t^u)} \lesssim \varepsilon$. Integrating along the integral curves of L as in (8.38) and using the conditions on the data, we conclude (8.30a) and also the estimate $\left\| \mathscr{P}^{[1,9]}\check{X}\Psi \right\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_t^u)} \lesssim \varepsilon$. Moreover, we use the commutator estimate (8.24) with $f = \Psi$ and the bootstrap assumptions to commute the factor of $\check{X}$ in $\mathscr{Z}_*^{\leq 10;1}$ so that it hits Ψ first, thereby concluding that $\left\| \mathscr{Z}_*^{\leq 10;1}\Psi \right\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_t^u)} \lesssim \left\| \mathscr{P}^{[1,9]}\check{X}\Psi \right\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_t^u)} + \varepsilon \lesssim \varepsilon$. We have thus proved the desired bound (8.30b).

Proof of (8.31a) **and** (8.32a): To derive (8.31a), we first use equation (2.62) and Lemma 2.19 to write $L\mu = \frac{1}{2}G_{LL}\check{X}\Psi + f(\gamma)P\Psi$. From the previous expression and the bootstrap assumptions, we deduce that $\|L\mu\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_t^u)} = \frac{1}{2}\left\| G_{LL}\check{X}\Psi \right\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_t^u)} + \mathcal{O}(\varepsilon)$. Next, we use Lemma 2.19 to deduce that $G_{LL}\check{X}\Psi = f(\gamma)\check{X}\Psi$. Applying L to the previous expression and using the bounds $\left\| LL^i_{(Small)} \right\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_t^u)}, \left\| L\check{X}\Psi \right\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_t^u)} \lesssim \varepsilon$ proven above and the bootstrap assumptions, we find that $\left\| L(G_{LL}\check{X}\Psi) \right\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_t^u)} \lesssim \varepsilon$. Integrating along the integral curves of L as in (8.38) and using the previous inequality, we find that $\left\| G_{LL}\check{X}\Psi \right\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_t^u)} = \left\| G_{LL}\check{X}\Psi \right\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_0^u)} + \mathcal{O}(\varepsilon)$. Inserting this estimate into the first estimate of this paragraph, we conclude (8.31a). The estimate (8.32a) then follows from integrating along the integral curves of L as in (8.38) and using (8.31a), the conditions on the data, and the assumption $T_{(Boot)} \leq 2\mathring{\delta}_*^{-1}$.

Proof of (8.28b) **and** (8.31b): We now prove (8.28b) for $L\mathscr{P}^N\mu$. The proof for $\mathscr{P}^N L\mu$ is similar but simpler because it involves fewer commutation estimates; we omit these details. To proceed, in place of (8.28b), we first prove that

$$
\left| L\mathscr{P}^N\mu \right| \lesssim \left| \mathscr{Z}_*^{\leq N+1;1}\Psi \right| + \left| \mathscr{P}^{\leq N}\gamma \right| + \varepsilon^{1/2}\left| \mathscr{P}_*^{[1,N]}\underline{\gamma} \right|. \qquad (8.41)
$$

As we described above, at the end of the proof, we will have shown that the auxiliary bootstrap assumptions have been improved in that they hold with $C\varepsilon$ in place of $\varepsilon^{1/2}$ and this improvement implies that (8.41) holds with $C\varepsilon$ in place of $\varepsilon^{1/2}$ as desired. To prove (8.41), we commute the equation $L\mu = f(\underline{\gamma})P\Psi + f(\gamma)\check{X}\Psi$ (see equation (2.62) and Lemma 2.19) with $\mathscr{P}^N$ to deduce the schematic identity

$$L\mathscr{P}^N\mu = [L, \mathscr{P}^N]\mu + \mathscr{P}^N\left\{f(\gamma)\check{X}\Psi + f(\underline{\gamma})P\Psi\right\}. \tag{8.42}$$

To bound the second term on RHS (8.42) by RHS (8.41), we use the already proven bound (8.33a) and the bootstrap assumptions. To bound the term $[L, \mathscr{P}^N]\mu$ on RHS (8.42) by RHS (8.41), we use the commutator estimate (8.19a) with $f = \mu$ and the bootstrap assumptions. To prove the estimate $\left\|L\mathscr{P}^{[1,9]}\mu\right\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_t^u)} \lesssim \varepsilon$ stated in (8.31b), we use (8.41), the already proven bounds (8.33a) and (8.30b), and the bootstrap assumptions. The estimate (8.31b) for $\left\|\mathscr{P}_*^{[1,9]}\mu\right\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_t^u)}$ then follows from integrating along the integral curves of L as in (8.38) and using the estimate $\left\|L\mathscr{P}^{[1,9]}\mu\right\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_t^u)} \lesssim \varepsilon$ and the conditions on the data.

Proof of (8.29b) **for** $L\mathscr{Z}^{N;1}L_{(Small)}^i$ **and** $\mathscr{Z}^{N;1}LL_{(Small)}^i$ **and** (8.33b): We now prove (8.29b) for $L\mathscr{Z}^{N;1}L_{(Small)}^i$. The proof of (8.29b) for $\mathscr{Z}^{N;1}LL_{(Small)}^i$ is similar but simpler because it involves fewer commutation estimates; we omit these details. We may assume that $\mathscr{Z}^{N;1}$ contains a factor $\check{X}$ since otherwise the desired estimate is implied by (8.29a). The proof is similar to the proof of (8.36), the new feature being that we need to exploit the already proven estimates $\left\|\mathscr{P}^{\leq 10}L_{(Small)}^i\right\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_t^u)} \lesssim \varepsilon$ and $\left\|\mathscr{Z}_*^{\leq 10;1}\Psi\right\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_t^u)} \lesssim \varepsilon$. To proceed, we note that (8.37) holds with $\mathscr{Z}^{N;1}$ in place of $\mathscr{P}^N$ on both sides and that the non-commutator term is easy to bound by using arguments similar to the ones we used in proving (8.29a). It remains for us to bound the commutator term $\left|[L, \mathscr{Z}^{N;1}]L_{(Small)}^i\right|$ by $\lesssim$ RHS (8.29b). This estimate follows from the commutator estimate (8.24) with $f = L_{(Small)}^i$, the already proven estimate for $\mathscr{P}^{\leq 10}L_{(Small)}^i$ mentioned above (to bound the factor $\left|\mathscr{P}_*^{[1,\lfloor N/2\rfloor]}f\right|$ from the second line of RHS (8.24) by $\lesssim \varepsilon$), and the bootstrap assumptions. We have thus obtained the desired estimate (8.29b) for $L\mathscr{Z}^{N;1}L_{(Small)}^i$. Next, from from the estimate (8.29b) for $L\mathscr{Z}^{N;1}L_{(Small)}^i$, the already proven estimates $\left\|\mathscr{P}^{\leq 10}L_{(Small)}^i\right\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_t^u)} \lesssim \varepsilon$ and $\left\|\mathscr{Z}_*^{\leq 10;1}\Psi\right\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_t^u)} \lesssim \varepsilon$, and the bootstrap assumptions, we find that $\left\|L\mathscr{Z}^{\leq 9;1}L_{(Small)}^i\right\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_t^u)} \lesssim \varepsilon$. This completes the proof of (8.33b) for the first term $\left\|L\mathscr{Z}^{\leq 9;1}L_{(Small)}^i\right\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_t^u)}$ on the LHS. Integrating along the integral curves of L as in (8.38) and using the estimate (8.33b) for $\left\|L\mathscr{Z}^{\leq 9;1}L_{(Small)}^i\right\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_t^u)}$ as well as the conditions on the data, we conclude the estimate (8.33b) for $\left\|\mathscr{Z}_*^{\leq 9;1}L_{(Small)}^i\right\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_t^u)}$ as well as (8.33c).

Proof of (8.34) **and** (8.35): These two estimates follow from Lemma 8.5, the already proven estimates $\left\| \mathscr{Z}_*^{\leq 10;1} \Psi \right\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_t^u)}$, $\left\| \mathscr{P}^{\leq 10} L_{(Small)}^i \right\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_t^u)}$, $\left\| \mathscr{Z}_*^{\leq 9;1} L_{(Small)}^i \right\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_t^u)} \lesssim \varepsilon$ and the bootstrap assumptions.

Proof of the estimate (8.29a) **for** $\mathscr{P}^{N-1} L \mathrm{tr}_{\not g}\chi$: We first take the $\not g$−trace of equation (2.72a), apply L, and use the schematic identity $\mathcal{L}_L \not g^{-1} = (\not g^{-1})^{-2}\chi = \mathrm{f}(\gamma, \not g^{-1}, \not d x^1, \not d x^2) P\gamma$ to deduce that $L \mathrm{tr}_{\not g}\chi = \mathrm{f}(\gamma, \not g^{-1}, \not d x^1, \not d x^2) PL\gamma + l.o.t.$, where $l.o.t. := \mathrm{f}(\mathscr{P}^{\leq 1}\gamma, \not g^{-1}, \not d x^1, \not d x^2) P\gamma + \mathrm{f}(\gamma, \mathcal{L}_{\mathscr{P}}^{\leq 1} \not g^{-1}, \not d x^1, \not d x^2) P\gamma + \mathrm{f}(\gamma, \not g^{-1}, \not d \mathscr{P}^{\leq 1} x^1, \not d \mathscr{P}^{\leq 1} x^2) P\gamma$. We now apply $\mathscr{P}^{N-1}$ to this identity and use Lemmas 8.4 and 8.5 and the already proven estimates $\left\| \mathscr{Z}_*^{\leq 10;1} \Psi \right\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_t^u)} \lesssim \varepsilon$ and $\left\| \mathscr{Z}_*^{\leq 9;1} L_{(Small)}^i \right\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_t^u)} \lesssim \varepsilon$, which implies that $\left| \mathscr{P}^{N-1} L \mathrm{tr}_{\not g}\chi \right| \lesssim \sum_{i=1}^2 \left| \mathscr{P}^{N+1} L_{(Small)}^i \right| + $ RHS (8.29a), where $\mathscr{P}^{N+1}$ contains a factor of L. We may commute the factor of L to the front using the commutator estimate (8.24) with $f = L_{(Small)}^i$, the already proven estimate for $\mathscr{P}^{\leq 10} L_{(Small)}^i$ mentioned above (to bound the factor $\left| \mathscr{P}_*^{[1, \lfloor N/2 \rfloor]} f \right|$ from the second line of RHS (8.24) by $\lesssim \varepsilon$), and the bootstrap assumptions, which yields $\left| \mathscr{P}^{N+1} L_{(Small)}^i \right| \lesssim \left| L \mathscr{P}^N L_{(Small)}^i \right| + $ RHS (8.29a). Moreover, we have already shown that $\left| L \mathscr{P}^N L_{(Small)}^i \right| \lesssim$ RHS (8.29a). We have thus proved the estimate for $\left| \mathscr{P}^{N-1} L \mathrm{tr}_{\not g}\chi \right|$ stated in (8.29a). To obtain the same estimate for $\left| L \mathscr{P}^{N-1} \mathrm{tr}_{\not g}\chi \right|$, we use the commutator estimate (8.19a) with $f = \mathrm{tr}_{\not g}\chi$, (8.13a), the already proven estimates $\left\| \mathscr{Z}_*^{\leq 10;1} \Psi \right\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_t^u)} \lesssim \varepsilon$ and $\left\| \mathscr{Z}_*^{\leq 9;1} L_{(Small)}^i \right\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_t^u)} \lesssim \varepsilon$ to deduce that $\left| L \mathscr{P}^{N-1} \mathrm{tr}_{\not g}\chi \right| \lesssim \left| \mathscr{P}^{N-1} L \mathrm{tr}_{\not g}\chi \right| + \varepsilon \left| \mathscr{P}^{\leq N}\gamma \right|$. The desired bound (8.29a) for $\left| L \mathscr{P}^{N-1} \mathrm{tr}_{\not g}\chi \right|$ now follows from this estimate and the one we established for $\left| \mathscr{P}^{N-1} L \mathrm{tr}_{\not g}\chi \right|$ just above.

Proof sketch of the estimate (8.29b) **for** $L \mathscr{Z}^{N-1;1} \mathrm{tr}_{\not g}\chi$ **and** $\mathscr{Z}^{N-1;1} L \mathrm{tr}_{\not g}\chi$: The proof is much like the proof of the estimates for $\mathscr{P}^{N-1} L \mathrm{tr}_{\not g}\chi$ and $L \mathscr{P}^{N-1} \mathrm{tr}_{\not g}\chi$ given in the previous paragraph. The only notable change is that we must use the commutator estimate (8.24) with $f = \mathrm{tr}_{\not g}\chi$ (in place of the one (8.19a) used in the previous paragraph) in order to obtain the estimate for $L \mathscr{Z}^{N-1;1} \mathrm{tr}_{\not g}\chi$ from the one for $\mathscr{Z}^{N-1;1} L \mathrm{tr}_{\not g}\chi$.

We remark that all factors leading to the gain of the factor ε on RHS (8.29b) have already been bounded in $\| \cdot \|_{L^\infty}$ by $\lesssim \varepsilon$. $\qquad\qquad\square$

The following corollary is an immediate consequence of the fact that we have improved the auxiliary bootstrap assumptions by showing that they hold with $\varepsilon^{1/2}$ replaced by $C\varepsilon$.

Corollary 8.11 ($\varepsilon^{1/2}$ **can be replaced by** $C\varepsilon$). *All prior inequalities whose right-hand sides feature an explicit factor of $\varepsilon^{1/2}$ remain true with $\varepsilon^{1/2}$ replaced by $C\varepsilon$.*

9 L^∞ Estimates Involving Higher Transversal Derivatives

Our energy estimates are difficult to derive when μ is small because some products in the energy identities contain the dangerous factor $1/\mu$. In order to control the degeneracy, we rely on the estimate $\|\breve{X}\breve{X}\mu\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_t^u)} \lesssim 1$. In particular, we use this estimate in proving inequality (10.13) (see the estimate (10.32)), *which is essential for showing that the low-order energies do not blow up as* $\mu \to 0$. We derive the bound $\|\breve{X}\breve{X}\mu\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_t^u)} \lesssim 1$ by commuting the evolution equation (2.62) for μ with up to two factors of $\breve{X}$. Since RHS (2.62) depends on $\breve{X}\Psi$ and $L^i_{(Small)}$, in order to derive the desired bound, we must obtain estimates for $\|\breve{X}\breve{X}\breve{X}\Psi\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_t^u)}$, $\|\breve{X}\breve{X}L^i_{(Small)}\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_t^u)}$, etc. We provide the necessary estimates in Sect. 9. The main result   is Prop. 9.2.

9.1 Auxiliary Bootstrap Assumptions

To facilitate the analysis, we introduce the following auxiliary bootstrap assumptions. In Prop. 9.2, we derive strict improvements of the assumptions based on our assumptions (7.3) on the data.

Auxiliary bootstrap assumptions for small quantities. We assume that the following inequalities hold on $\mathcal{M}_{T_{(Boot)},U_0}$ (see Subsect. 7.2 regarding the vectorfield operator notation):

$$\left\|\mathscr{Z}^{\leq 4;2}_* \Psi\right\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_t^u)} \leq \varepsilon^{1/2}, \tag{BA$'$1Ψ}$$

$$\left\|\breve{X}Y\mu\right\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_t^u)}, \ \left\|\breve{X}LL\mu\right\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_t^u)}, \ \left\|\breve{X}YY\mu\right\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_t^u)}, \ \left\|\breve{X}LY\mu\right\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_t^u)} \leq \varepsilon^{1/2}, \tag{BA$'$1μ}$$

and

(**BA$'$1μ**) also holds for all permutations of the vectorfield operators on LHS (**BA$'$1μ**),
$$\tag{BA$''$1μ}$$

$$\left\|\mathscr{Z}^{\leq 3;2}_* L^i_{(Small)}\right\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_t^u)} \leq \varepsilon^{1/2}. \tag{BA$'$1$L_{(Small)}$}$$

Auxiliary bootstrap assumptions for quantities that are allowed to be large. We assume that the following inequalities hold on $\mathcal{M}_{T_{(Boot)},U_0}$:

$$\left\|\breve{X}^M\Psi\right\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_t^u)} \leq \left\|\breve{X}^M\Psi\right\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_0^u)} + \varepsilon^{1/2}, \qquad (2 \leq M \leq 3), \tag{BA$'$2Ψ}$$

$$\left\| L \check{X}^{M} \mu \right\|_{L^{\infty}(\Sigma_t^u)} \leq \frac{1}{2} \left\| \check{X}^{M} \left\{ G_{LL} \check{X} \Psi \right\} \right\|_{L^{\infty}(\Sigma_0^u)} + \varepsilon^{1/2}, \qquad (1 \leq M \leq 2),$$
$$\textbf{(BA}'2\mu\textbf{)}$$

$$\left\| \check{X}^{M} \mu \right\|_{L^{\infty}(\Sigma_t^u)} \leq \left\| \check{X}^{M} \mu \right\|_{L^{\infty}(\Sigma_0^u)} + 2 \mathring{\delta}_*^{-1} \left\| \check{X}^{M} \left\{ G_{LL} \check{X} \Psi \right\} \right\|_{L^{\infty}(\Sigma_0^u)} + \varepsilon^{1/2},$$
$$(1 \leq M \leq 2), \qquad\qquad\qquad\qquad\qquad\qquad\qquad \textbf{(BA}'3\mu\textbf{)}$$

$$\left\| \check{X} \check{X} L_{(Small)}^{i} \right\|_{L^{\infty}(\Sigma_t^u)} \leq \left\| \check{X} \check{X} L_{(Small)}^{i} \right\|_{L^{\infty}(\Sigma_0^u)} + \varepsilon^{1/2}. \qquad \textbf{(BA}'2L_{(Small)}\textbf{)}$$

9.2 Commutator Estimates Involving Two Transversal Derivatives

In this subsection, we provide some basic commutation estimates that complement those of Subsect. 8.5.

Lemma 9.1 (**Mixed** $\mathcal{P}_u$**-transversal-tangent commutator estimates involving two** $\check{X}$ **derivatives**). *Let* $\mathscr{Z}^{\vec{I}}$ *be a* $\mathscr{Z}$*-multi-indexed operator containing exactly two* $\check{X}$ *factors, and assume that* $3 \leq |\vec{I}| := N + 1 \leq 4$. *Let* $\vec{I}'$ *be any permutation of* $\vec{I}$. *Under the data-size and bootstrap assumptions of Subsects. 7.4–7.5 and Subsect. 9.1 and the smallness assumptions of Subsect. 7.7, the following commutator estimates hold for functions* f *on* $\mathcal{M}_{T_{(Boot)}, U_0}$ *(see Subsect. 7.2 regarding the vectorfield operator notation):*

$$\left| \mathscr{Z}^{\vec{I}} f - \mathscr{Z}^{\vec{I}'} f \right| \lesssim \left| Y \mathscr{Z}^{\leq N-1;1} f \right| + \underbrace{\varepsilon \left| Y \mathscr{Z}^{\leq N-1;2} f \right|}_{Absent\ if\ N=2}. \qquad (9.1)$$

Moreover, we have

$$\left| [\slashed{\Delta}, \check{X} \check{X}] f \right| \lesssim \left| Y \mathscr{Z}^{\leq 2;1} f \right|. \qquad (9.2)$$

Proof See Subsect. 8.2 for some comments on the analysis. To prove (9.1), we split the terms on RHS (5.4a) into the case where at most one $\check{X}$ derivative falls on f and the case where both $\check{X}$ derivatives fall on f. In the former case, at most two derivatives fall on the deformation tensors, while in the latter case, at most one derivative (which must be $\mathcal{P}_u$-tangent) falls on them. We thus find that

$$\text{LHS (9.1)} \lesssim \left\{ \left| \mathcal{L}_{\mathscr{Z}}^{\leq 2;2(Y)} \slashed{\pi}_L^{\#} \right| + \left| \mathcal{L}_{\mathscr{Z}}^{\leq 2;1(\check{X})} \slashed{\pi}_L^{\#} \right| + \left| \mathcal{L}_{\mathscr{Z}}^{\leq 2;1(Y)} \slashed{\pi}_{\check{X}}^{\#} \right| \right\} \left| Y \mathscr{Z}^{\leq N-1;1} f \right|$$
$$+ \left\{ \left| \mathcal{L}_{\mathscr{P}}^{\leq 1(Y)} \slashed{\pi}_L^{\#} \right| + \left| \mathcal{L}_{\mathscr{P}}^{\leq 1(Y)} \slashed{\pi}_{\check{X}}^{\#} \right| \right\} \left| Y \mathscr{Z}^{\leq N-1;2} f \right|. \qquad (9.3)$$

From the identities (2.76b), (2.78b), and (2.78c) and Lemma 2.19, we deduce that the terms in braces on the first line of RHS (9.3) are $\lesssim \left| \mathcal{L}_{\mathscr{Z}}^{\leq 2;2} f(\mathscr{P}^{\leq 1}\gamma, \slashed{g}^{-1}, \slashed{d}x^1, \slashed{d}x^2) \right| + \left| \mathcal{L}_{\mathscr{Z}}^{\leq 2;1} f(\mathscr{P}^{\leq 1}\underline{\gamma}, \slashed{g}^{-1}, \slashed{d}x^1, \slashed{d}x^2, \mathscr{Z}^{\leq 1}\Psi) \right|$. We now show that both terms from the previous inequality are $\lesssim 1$, which yields the desired bound (this is a simple estimate, where the main point that requires demonstration is that all terms in the braces are sufficiently regular such that we have control of their relevant derivatives in L^∞). To handle the first term from the previous inequality, we first commute $\mathcal{L}_{\mathscr{Z}}^{\leq 2;2}$ under $\slashed{d}$ and use that $Zx^i = Z^i = f(\gamma)$ for $Z \in \mathscr{Z}$ to bound factors involving the derivatives of $\slashed{d}x$ by $\lesssim \left| \mathscr{Z}^{\leq 2;1}\gamma \right|$. Moreover, using (2.58) and the fact that $\slashed{g} = f(\gamma, \slashed{d}x^1, \slashed{d}x^2)$, we deduce that $\left| \mathcal{L}_{\mathscr{Z}}^{\leq 2;2} \slashed{g}^{-1} \right| \lesssim \left| \mathscr{Z}^{\leq 2;2}\gamma \right| + \left| \mathscr{Z}^{\leq 2;1}\underline{\gamma} \right|$. We thus find that $\left| \mathcal{L}_{\mathscr{Z}}^{\leq 2;2} f(\mathscr{P}^{\leq 1}\gamma, \slashed{g}^{-1}, \slashed{d}x^1, \slashed{d}x^2) \right| \lesssim \left| \mathscr{Z}^{\leq 3;2}\gamma \right| + \left| \mathscr{Z}^{\leq 2;1}\underline{\gamma} \right|$. From the L^∞ estimates of Prop. 8.10 and the bootstrap assumptions of Subsect. 9.1, we deduce that the RHS of the previous inequality is $\lesssim 1$ as desired. Similar reasoning yields that $\left| \mathcal{L}_{\mathscr{Z}}^{\leq 2;1} f(\mathscr{P}^{\leq 1}\underline{\gamma}, \slashed{g}^{-1}, \slashed{d}x^1, \slashed{d}x^2, \mathscr{Z}^{\leq 1}\Psi) \right| \lesssim 1$, which completes the proof of the bound for the terms in braces on the first line of RHS (9.3). To handle the terms in braces on the second line of RHS (9.3), we use Lemma 8.6 and the L^∞ estimates of Prop. 8.10 to bound them by $\lesssim \varepsilon$. We have thus proved (9.1).

The proof of (9.2) is similar and relies on the commutation identity (5.3b) and the estimates of Lemma 8.5; we omit the details. □

9.3 The Main Estimates Involving Higher-Order Transversal Derivatives

In the next proposition, we provide the main estimates of Sect. 9. In particular, the proposition yields strict improvements of the bootstrap assumptions of Subsect. 9.1.

Proposition 9.2 (L^∞ **estimates involving higher-order transversal derivatives**). *Under the data-size and bootstrap assumptions of Subsects. 7.4–7.5 and Subsect. 9.1 and the smallness assumptions of Subsect. 7.7, the following estimates hold on* $\mathcal{M}_{T_{(Boot)}, U_0}$ *(see Subsect. 7.2 regarding the vectorfield operator notation):* L^∞ *estimates involving two or three transversal derivatives of* Ψ.

$$\left\| L\mathscr{Z}_*^{\leq 4;2}\Psi \right\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_t^u)} \leq C\varepsilon, \tag{9.4a}$$

$$\left\| \mathscr{Z}_*^{\leq 4;2}\Psi \right\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_t^u)} \leq C\varepsilon, \tag{9.4b}$$

$$\left\| \breve{X}\breve{X}\Psi \right\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_t^u)} \leq \left\| \breve{X}\breve{X}\Psi \right\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_0^u)} + C\varepsilon, \tag{9.4c}$$

$$\left\| L\breve{X}\breve{X}\breve{X}\Psi \right\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_t^u)} \leq C\varepsilon, \tag{9.4d}$$

$$\left\| \breve{X}\breve{X}\breve{X}\Psi \right\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_t^u)} \leq \left\| \breve{X}\breve{X}\breve{X}\Psi \right\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_0^u)} + C\varepsilon. \tag{9.4e}$$

L^∞ estimates involving one or two transversal derivatives of μ.

$$\left\| L\check{X}\mu \right\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_t^u)} \le \frac{1}{2} \left\| \check{X}\left(G_{LL}\check{X}\Psi\right) \right\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_0^u)} + C\varepsilon, \tag{9.5a}$$

$$\left\| \check{X}\mu \right\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_t^u)} \le \left\| \check{X}\mu \right\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_0^u)} + \mathring{\delta}_*^{-1} \left\| \check{X}\left(G_{LL}\check{X}\Psi\right) \right\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_0^u)} + C\varepsilon, \tag{9.5b}$$

$$\left\| L\check{X}Y\mu \right\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_t^u)}, \; \left\| L\check{X}LL\mu \right\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_t^u)}, \; \left\| L\check{X}YY\mu \right\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_t^u)}, \; \left\| L\check{X}LY\mu \right\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_t^u)} \le C\varepsilon, \tag{9.5c}$$

$$\left\| \check{X}Y\mu \right\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_t^u)}, \; \left\| \check{X}LL\mu \right\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_t^u)}, \; \left\| \check{X}YY\mu \right\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_t^u)}, \; \left\| \check{X}LY\mu \right\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_t^u)} \le C\varepsilon, \tag{9.5d}$$

(9.3.2c) − (9.3.2d) *also hold for all permutations of the vectorfield operators on the LHS,* $\tag{9.5e}$

$$\left\| L\check{X}\check{X}\mu \right\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_t^u)} \le \frac{1}{2} \left\| \check{X}\check{X}\left(G_{LL}\check{X}\Psi\right) \right\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_0^u)} + C\varepsilon, \tag{9.5f}$$

$$\left\| \check{X}\check{X}\mu \right\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_t^u)} \le \left\| \check{X}\check{X}\mu \right\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_0^u)} + \mathring{\delta}_*^{-1} \left\| \check{X}\check{X}\left(G_{LL}\check{X}\Psi\right) \right\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_0^u)} + C\varepsilon. \tag{9.5g}$$

L^∞ estimates involving one or two transversal derivatives of $L^i_{(Small)}$.

$$\left\| \mathscr{Z}_*^{\le 3;2} L^i_{(Small)} \right\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_t^u)} \le C\varepsilon, \tag{9.6a}$$

$$\left\| \check{X}\check{X}L^i_{(Small)} \right\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_t^u)} \le \left\| \check{X}\check{X}L^i_{(Small)} \right\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_0^u)} + C\varepsilon. \tag{9.6b}$$

Sharp pointwise estimates involving the critical factor G_{LL}. *Moreover, if* $0 \le M \le 2$ *and* $0 \le s \le t < T_{(Boot)}$, *then we have the following estimates:*

$$\left| \check{X}^M G_{LL}(t, u, \vartheta) - \check{X}^M G_{LL}(s, u, \vartheta) \right| \le C\varepsilon(t - s), \tag{9.7}$$

$$\left| \check{X}^M \left\{ G_{LL}\check{X}\Psi \right\}(t, u, \vartheta) - \check{X}^M \left\{ G_{LL}\check{X}\Psi \right\}(s, u, \vartheta) \right| \le C\varepsilon(t - s). \tag{9.8}$$

Furthermore, with $L_{(Flat)} = \partial_t + \partial_1$, *we have*

$$L\mu(t, u, \vartheta) = \frac{1}{2} G_{L_{(Flat)}L_{(Flat)}}(\Psi = 0)\check{X}\Psi(t, u, \vartheta) + \mathcal{O}(\varepsilon), \tag{9.9}$$

where $G_{L_{(Flat)}L_{(Flat)}}(\Psi = 0)$ *is a non-zero constant.*

Remark 9.1 (**The auxiliary bootstrap assumptions of Subsect**. 9.1 **are now redundant**). Since Prop. 9.2 in particular provides an improvement of the auxiliary bootstrap assumptions of Subsect. 9.1, we do not bother to include those bootstrap assumptions in the hypotheses of any of the lemmas or propositions proved in the remainder of the article.

Proof of Prop. 9.2 See Subsect. 8.2 for some comments on the analysis. We must derive the estimates in a viable order. Throughout this proof, we use the estimates of Lemma 7.3 and the assumption (7.14) without explicitly mentioning them each time. We refer to these as "conditions on the data." Similarly, when we say that we use "the bootstrap assumptions," we mean the assumptions stated in Subsect. 9.1.

Proof of (9.4a)–(9.4c): We may assume that the operator $\mathscr{Z}_*^{\leq 4;2}$ contains two factors of $\breve{X}$, since otherwise the desired estimates are implied by (8.30b). To proceed, we commute the wave equation (8.39) with $\breve{X}\mathscr{P}^M$, $(0 \leq M \leq 2)$, and use Lemmas 8.4 and 8.5, the L^∞ estimates of Prop. 8.10, and the bootstrap assumptions to deduce that

$$\left| L\breve{X}\mathscr{P}^M\breve{X}\Psi \right| \lesssim \left| \mathscr{Z}_*^{\leq M+3;1}\Psi \right| + \left| \mathscr{Z}_*^{\leq M+2;1}\gamma \right| + \left| [\slashed{\Delta}, \breve{X}\mathscr{P}^M]\Psi \right| + \left| [L, \breve{X}\mathscr{P}^M]\breve{X}\Psi \right|.$$
(9.10)

The L^∞ estimates of Prop. 8.10 imply that the first two terms on RHS (9.10) are $\lesssim \varepsilon$. Moreover, using in addition the commutator estimate (8.25b) with $f = \Psi$, we see that $\left| [\slashed{\Delta}, \breve{X}\mathscr{P}^M]\Psi \right|$ is $\lesssim$ the first term on RHS (9.10) and hence $\lesssim \varepsilon$ as well.

To bound $[L, \breve{X}\mathscr{P}^M]\breve{X}\Psi$, we use the commutator estimate (8.24) with $f = \breve{X}\Psi$, Cor. 8.11, and the L^∞ estimates of Prop. 8.10 to deduce $\left| [L, \breve{X}\mathscr{P}^M]\breve{X}\Psi \right| \lesssim \left| \mathscr{Z}_*^{\leq M+2;1}\Psi \right| + \varepsilon \left| \mathscr{Z}_*^{\leq M+2;2}\Psi \right|$. The estimates of Prop. 8.10 and the bootstrap assumptions imply that $\left| \mathscr{Z}_*^{\leq M+2;1}\Psi \right| \lesssim \varepsilon$, while the bootstrap assumptions imply that $\varepsilon \left| \mathscr{Z}_*^{\leq M+2;2}\Psi \right| \lesssim \varepsilon$. Combining these estimates, we deduce that $\left| L\breve{X}\mathscr{P}^M\breve{X}\Psi \right| \lesssim \varepsilon$. Integrating along the integral curves of L as in (8.38) and using the previous estimate, we find that $\left\| \breve{X}\mathscr{P}^M\breve{X}\Psi \right\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_t^u)} \leq \left\| \breve{X}\mathscr{P}^M\breve{X}\Psi \right\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_0^u)} + C\varepsilon$. Using the previous estimate and the conditions on the data, and using (9.1) with $f = \Psi$, the L^∞ estimates of Prop. 8.10, and the bootstrap assumptions to reorder the factors in the operator $\breve{X}\mathscr{P}^M\breve{X}$ as desired (up to error terms bounded in $\| \cdot \|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_t^u)}$ by $\lesssim \varepsilon$), we conclude the desired estimates (9.4b) and (9.4c). Finally, we similarly reorder the factors in $L\breve{X}\mathscr{P}^M\breve{X}\Psi$ and use the estimates $\left| L\breve{X}\mathscr{P}^M\breve{X}\Psi \right| \lesssim \varepsilon$ and (9.4b) to obtain (9.4a).

Proof of (9.7)–(9.8) **in the cases** $0 \leq M \leq 1$: It suffices to prove

$$\left| L\breve{X}^M G_{LL} \right|, \ \left| L\breve{X}^M \left\{ G_{LL}\breve{X}\Psi \right\} \right| \lesssim \varepsilon,$$
(9.11)

for once we have shown (9.11), we can obtain the desired estimates by integrating along the integral curves of L from time s to t (in analogy with (8.38)) and using the estimates (9.11). To proceed, we first use Lemma 2.19 to deduce that $G_{LL} = \mathrm{f}(\gamma)$ and $G_{LL}\breve{X}\Psi = \mathrm{f}(\gamma)\breve{X}\Psi$. Hence, to obtain (9.11) when $M = 0$, we differentiate these two identities with L and use the L^∞ estimates of Prop. 8.10 and the bootstrap assumptions. The proof is similar in the case $M = 1$, but we must also use the estimate

$\left\| L \check{X} \check{X} \Psi \right\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_t^u)} \lesssim \varepsilon$, which is a consequence of the previously established estimate (9.4b).

Proof of (9.9): We first use (2.62), the fact that $G_{LL}, G_{LX} = $ f(γ) (see Lemma 2.19), and the L^∞ estimates of Prop. 8.10 to deduce that $L\mu(t, u, \vartheta) = \frac{1}{2}[G_{LL}\check{X}\Psi](t, u, \vartheta) + \mathcal{O}(\varepsilon)$. Since $L^0 = L^0_{(Flat)} = 1$, $L^i = L^i_{(Flat)} + L^i_{(Small)}$, and $G_{\alpha\beta} = G_{\alpha\beta}(\Psi = 0) + \mathcal{O}(\Psi)$, we can use the L^∞ estimates of Prop. 8.10 to deduce that $G_{LL}(t, u, \vartheta) = G_{L_{(Flat)}L_{(Flat)}}(\Psi = 0) + \mathcal{O}(\varepsilon)$. Combining this estimate with the previous one and using (8.30a), we conclude (9.9).

Proof of (9.5a)–(9.5e): Let $1 \le K \le 3$ be an integer. We commute equation (2.62) with $\mathscr{Z}^{K;1}$ and use the aforementioned relations $G_{LL}, G_{LX} = $ f(γ), the L^∞ estimates of Prop. 8.10, and the bootstrap assumptions to deduce

$$\left| L\mathscr{Z}^{K;1}\mu \right| \le \frac{1}{2}\left| \mathscr{Z}^{K;1}\left\{ G_{LL}\check{X}\Psi \right\} \right| + \left| \mathscr{Z}_*^{\le K+1;1}\Psi \right| + \left| [L, \mathscr{Z}^{K;1}]\mu \right|. \quad (9.12)$$

We now show that the last two terms on RHS (9.12) are $\lesssim \varepsilon$. We already proved $\left| \mathscr{Z}_*^{\le K+1;1}\Psi \right| \lesssim \varepsilon$ in Prop. 8.10. To bound $[L, \mathscr{Z}^{K;1}]\mu$, we use the commutator estimate (8.24) with $f = \mu$, the L^∞ estimates of Prop. 8.10, and Cor. 8.11 to deduce that $\left| [L, \mathscr{Z}^{K;1}]\mu \right| \lesssim \left| \mathscr{P}_*^{[1,K]}\mu \right| + \varepsilon \left| Y \mathscr{Z}^{\le K-1;1}\mu \right|$. The L^∞ estimates of Prop. 8.10 imply that $\left| \mathscr{P}_*^{[1,K]}\mu \right| \lesssim \varepsilon$, while the bootstrap assumptions imply that $\varepsilon \left| Y\mathscr{Z}^{\le K-1;1}\mu \right| \lesssim \varepsilon$ as well. We have thus shown that

$$\left\| L\mathscr{Z}^{K;1}\mu \right\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_t^u)} \le \frac{1}{2}\left\| \mathscr{Z}^{K;1}\left\{ G_{LL}\check{X}\Psi \right\} \right\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_t^u)} + C\varepsilon. \quad (9.13)$$

We split the remainder of the proof into two cases, starting with the case $\mathscr{Z}^{K;1} = \check{X}$. Using the bound (9.8) with $s = 0$ and $M = 1$ (established above), we can replace the norm $\| \cdot \|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_t^u)}$ on RHS (9.13) with the norm $\| \cdot \|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_0^u)}$ plus an error term that is bounded in the norm $\| \cdot \|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_t^u)}$ by $\le C\varepsilon$, which yields (9.5a). Integrating along the integral curves of L as in (8.38), using the resulting estimate for $\left\| L\mathscr{Z}^{K;1}\mu \right\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_t^u)}$, and using the assumption $T_{(Boot)} \le 2\mathring{\delta}_*^{-1}$, we conclude (9.5b). In the remaining case, $\mathscr{Z}^{K;1}$ is not the operator $\check{X}$. That is, $K > 1$ and $\mathscr{Z}^{K;1}$ must contain a $\mathcal{P}_u$-tangent factor, which is equivalent to $\mathscr{Z}^{K;1} = \mathscr{Z}_*^{K;1}$. Recalling that $G_{LL}\check{X}\Psi = $ f$(\gamma)\check{X}\Psi$ and using the estimates of Prop. 8.10, the bootstrap assumptions, and (9.4b), we find that $\left\| \mathscr{Z}_*^{K;1}\left\{ G_{LL}\check{X}\Psi \right\} \right\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_t^u)} \lesssim \varepsilon$. Thus, in this case, we have shown that RHS (9.13) $\lesssim \varepsilon$ as desired. Integrating along the integral curves of L as in (8.38) and using the estimate $\left\| L\mathscr{Z}_*^{K;1}\mu \right\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_t^u)} \lesssim \varepsilon$ just obtained, we conclude that $\left\| \mathscr{Z}_*^{K;1}\mu \right\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_t^u)} \le \left\| \mathscr{Z}_*^{K;1}\mu \right\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_0^u)} + C\varepsilon$. All bounds in (9.5c)–(9.5e) now follow from the previous estimate and the conditions on the data except for the estimate (9.5e) concerning the permutations of the vectorfields in (9.5c). To obtain the remaining estimate (9.5e), we

use the commutation estimate (8.24) with $f = \mu$, the L^∞ estimates of Prop. 8.10, the estimate (9.5d), and the bootstrap assumptions.

Proof of (9.6a) **and** (9.6b): We may assume that the operator $\mathscr{Z}_*^{\leq 3;2}$ in (9.6a) contains two factors of $\breve{X}$ since otherwise the desired estimate is implied by (8.33b). To proceed, we express (2.71) in the schematic form $\breve{X}L^i_{(Small)} = \mathrm{f}(\gamma, g^{-1}, \slashed{d}x^1, \slashed{d}x^2)\breve{X}\Psi + \mathrm{f}(\gamma, g^{-1}, \slashed{d}x^1, \slashed{d}x^2)P\Psi + \mathrm{f}(g^{-1}, \slashed{d}x^1, \slashed{d}x^2)\slashed{d}\mu$. We now apply $P\breve{X}$ to this identity, where $P \in \mathscr{P}$. Using Lemmas 8.4 and 8.5, the L^∞ estimates of Prop. 8.10, the already proven estimates (9.4b), (9.5d), and (9.5e), and the bootstrap assumptions, we deduce that

$$\left| P\breve{X}\breve{X}L^i_{(Small)} \right| \lesssim \left| \mathscr{Z}_*^{\leq 3;2}\Psi \right| + \left| \mathscr{Z}_*^{\leq 3;1}\gamma \right| + \left| Y\mathscr{Z}_*^{\leq 2;1}\mu \right| + \left| \mathscr{P}_*^{[1,2]}\mu \right| \lesssim \varepsilon. \quad (9.14)$$

Also using the commutator estimate (9.1) with $f = L^i_{(Small)}$ to reorder the factors of the operator $P\breve{X}\breve{X}$ as desired up to error terms bounded in the norm $\| \cdot \|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_t^u)}$ by $\lesssim \varepsilon$, we conclude (9.6a). Moreover, a special case of (9.6a) is the bound $\left| L\breve{X}\breve{X}L^i_{(Small)} \right| \lesssim \varepsilon$. Integrating along the integral curves of L as in (8.38) and using the previous estimate, we conclude (9.6b).

Proof of (9.4d) **and** (9.4e): We commute equation (8.39) with $\breve{X}\breve{X}$ and argue as in the proof of (9.10) to deduce that

$$\left| L\breve{X}\breve{X}\breve{X}\Psi \right| \lesssim \left| \mathscr{Z}_*^{\leq 4;2}\Psi \right| + \left| \mathscr{Z}_*^{\leq 3;2}\gamma \right| + \left| [\slashed{\Delta}, \breve{X}\breve{X}]\Psi \right| + \left| L\breve{X}\breve{X}\breve{X}\Psi - \breve{X}\breve{X}L\breve{X}\Psi \right|. \quad (9.15)$$

We clarify that the proof of (9.15) requires the bounds $\left| \mathcal{L}_{\breve{X}}\mathcal{L}_{\breve{X}}g^{-1} \right|, \left| \mathcal{L}_{\breve{X}}\mathcal{L}_{\breve{X}}\slashed{d}x \right| \lesssim 1$, which we obtained in the proof of Lemma 9.1. Next, we note that the already proven estimates (9.4b) and (9.6a) imply that $\left| \mathscr{Z}_*^{\leq 4;2}\Psi \right|, \left| \mathscr{Z}_*^{\leq 3;2}\gamma \right| \lesssim \varepsilon$. Next, we use (9.2) with $f = \Psi$ to bound the commutator term $\left| [\slashed{\Delta}, \breve{X}\breve{X}]\Psi \right|$ by $\lesssim$ the first term on RHS (9.15) (and hence it is $\lesssim \varepsilon$ too). Next, we use (9.1) with $f = \breve{X}\Psi$ and $N = 2$ to deduce that $\left| L\breve{X}\breve{X}\breve{X}\Psi - \breve{X}\breve{X}L\breve{X}\Psi \right| \lesssim \left| \mathscr{Z}_*^{\leq 4;2}\Psi \right|$. As we have mentioned, we already have shown that $\left| \mathscr{Z}_*^{\leq 4;2}\Psi \right| \lesssim \varepsilon$. Combining these estimates, we deduce that $\left| L\breve{X}\breve{X}\breve{X}\Psi \right| \lesssim \varepsilon$, which implies (9.4d). Integrating along the integral curves of L as in (8.38) and using the previous estimate, we conclude the desired estimate (9.4e).

Proof of (9.7)–(9.8) **in the case** $M = 2$: The proof is very similar to the proof given above in the cases $M = 0, 1$, so we only highlight the main new ingredients needed in the case $M = 2$: we must use the estimates $\left| L\breve{X}\breve{X}\breve{X}\Psi \right| \lesssim \varepsilon$ and $\left| L\breve{X}\breve{X}L^i_{(Small)} \right| \lesssim \varepsilon$ established in (9.4d) and (9.6a) in order to deduce (9.11) in the case $M = 2$.

Proof of (9.5f)–(9.5g): We commute equation (2.62) with $\check{X}\check{X}$ and argue as in the proof of (9.12) to obtain

$$\left| L\check{X}\check{X}\upmu \right| \leq \frac{1}{2}\left| \check{X}\check{X}\left\{ G_{LL}\check{X}\Psi \right\} \right| + \left| \mathscr{Z}_*^{\leq 3;2}\Psi \right| + \left| L\check{X}\check{X}\upmu - \check{X}\check{X}L\upmu \right|. \qquad (9.16)$$

Using the commutator estimate (9.1) with $f = \upmu$, the L^∞ estimates of Prop. 8.10, and the already proven bound (9.5d), we deduce that $\left| L\check{X}\check{X}\upmu - \check{X}\check{X}L\upmu \right| \lesssim \left| Y\mathscr{Z}^{\leq 1}\upmu \right| \lesssim \varepsilon$.
Next, we use (9.4b) to deduce that $\left| \mathscr{Z}_*^{\leq 3;2}\Psi \right| \lesssim \varepsilon$. Thus, we have shown that the last two terms on RHS (9.16) are $\lesssim \varepsilon$. The remainder of the proof of (9.5f)–(9.5g) now proceeds as in the proof of (9.5a)–(9.5b), thanks to the availability of the already proven estimates (9.7)–(9.8) in the case $M = 2$. □

10 Sharp Estimates for $\upmu$

In this section, we derive sharp pointwise estimates for $\upmu$ and its derivatives that are far more detailed than those of Sects. 8 and 9. We use these estimates in Sect. 14 when we derive a priori energy estimates. To close the energy estimates, we must have precise knowledge of how $\upmu$ vanishes, which is the main information derived in Sect. 10.

Many results derived in this section are based on a posteriori estimates in which the behavior of a quantity at times $0 \leq s \leq t$ is tied to the behavior of other quantities at the "late time" t, where $t < T_{(Boot)}$. For this reason, some of our analysis refers to quantities $q = q(s, u, \vartheta; t)$ that are functions of the geometric coordinates (s, u, ϑ) and the "late time parameter" t. When we state and derive estimates for such quantities, s is the "moving" time variable verifying $0 \leq s \leq t$.

10.1 Auxiliary Quantities for Analyzing $\upmu$ and First Estimates

We start by defining some quantities that play a role in our analysis of $\upmu$.

Definition 10.1 (**Auxiliary quantities used to analyze** $\upmu$). We define the following quantities, where we assume that $0 \leq s \leq t$ for those quantities that depend on both s and t :

$$M(s, u, \vartheta; t) := \int_{s'=s}^{s'=t} \left\{ L\upmu(t, u, \vartheta) - L\upmu(s', u, \vartheta) \right\} ds', \qquad (10.1a)$$

$$\mathring{\upmu}(u, \vartheta) := \upmu(s = 0, u, \vartheta), \qquad (10.1b)$$

$$\widetilde{M}(s, u, \vartheta; t) := \frac{M(s, u, \vartheta; t)}{\mathring{\upmu}(u, \vartheta) - M(0, u, \vartheta; t)}, \qquad (10.1c)$$

$$\upmu_{(Approx)}(s, u, \vartheta; t) := 1 + \frac{L\upmu(t, u, \vartheta)}{\mathring{\upmu}(u, \vartheta) - M(0, u, \vartheta; t)}s + \widetilde{M}(s, u, \vartheta; t). \qquad (10.1d)$$

The following quantity captures the worst-case smallness of $\upmu$ along Σ_t^u. We use it to capture the degeneracy of our high-order energy estimates.

Definition 10.2 (**Definition of** $\mu_\star$).

$$\mu_\star(t, u) := \min\{1, \min_{\Sigma_t^u} \mu\}. \tag{10.2}$$

Remark 10.1 It is redundant to take the min with 1 in (10.2) because $\mu \equiv 1$ along $\mathcal{P}_0$; we have done this only to emphasize that $\mu_\star(t, u) \leq 1$.

We now provide some basic estimates for the auxiliary quantities.

Lemma 10.1 (**First estimates for the auxiliary quantities**). *Under the data-size and bootstrap assumptions of Subsects. 7.4–7.5 and the smallness assumptions of Subsect. 7.7, the following estimates hold for* $(t, u, \vartheta) \in [0, T_{(Boot)}) \times [0, U_0] \times \mathbb{T}$ *and* $0 \leq s \leq t$:

$$\mathring{\mu}(u, \vartheta) = 1 + \mathcal{O}(\varepsilon), \tag{10.3}$$

$$\mathring{\mu}(u, \vartheta) = 1 + M(0, u, \vartheta; t) + \mathcal{O}(\varepsilon). \tag{10.4}$$

In addition, the following pointwise estimates hold:

$$|L\mu(t, u, \vartheta) - L\mu(s, u, \vartheta)| \lesssim \varepsilon(t - s), \tag{10.5}$$

$$|M(s, u, \vartheta; t)|, |\widetilde{M}(s, u, \vartheta; t)| \lesssim \varepsilon(t - s)^2, \tag{10.6}$$

$$\mu(s, u, \vartheta) = (1 + \mathcal{O}(\varepsilon))\mu_{(Approx)}(s, u, \vartheta; t). \tag{10.7}$$

Proof (10.3) follows from (7.11a) and (7.14). To prove (10.5), we note that (8.31b) implies that $|LL\mu| \lesssim \varepsilon$. Integrating this estimate along the integral curves of L from time s to time t, we conclude (10.5). The estimate (10.4) and the estimate (10.6) for M then follow from definition (10.1a) and the estimate (10.5). (10.6) for $\widetilde{M}$ follows from definition (10.1c), the estimate (10.6) for M, and (10.4).

To prove (10.7), we first note the following identity, which is a straightforward consequence of Def. 10.1:

$$\mu(s, u, \vartheta) = \left\{\mathring{\mu}(u, \vartheta) - M(0, u, \vartheta; t)\right\} \mu_{(Approx)}(s, u, \vartheta; t). \tag{10.8}$$

The desired estimate (10.7) now follows from (10.8) and (10.4). □

To derive sharp estimates for μ, it is convenient to distinguish between regions where μ is shrinking and regions where it is not. This motivates the following definition.

Definition 10.3 (**Regions of distinct** μ **behavior**). For each $t \in [0, T_{(Boot)})$, $s \in [0, t]$, and $u \in [0, U_0]$, we partition

$$[0, u] \times \mathbb{T} = {}^{(+)}\mathcal{V}_t^u \cup {}^{(-)}\mathcal{V}_t^u, \tag{10.9a}$$

$$\Sigma_s^u = {}^{(+)}\Sigma_{s;t}^u \cup {}^{(-)}\Sigma_{s;t}^u, \tag{10.9b}$$

where

$$^{(+)}\mathcal{V}_t^u := \left\{ (u', \vartheta) \in [0, u] \times \mathbb{T} \mid \frac{L\mu(t, u', \vartheta)}{\mathring{\mu}(u', \vartheta) - M(0, u', \vartheta; t)} \geq 0 \right\}, \qquad (10.10a)$$

$$^{(-)}\mathcal{V}_t^u := \left\{ (u', \vartheta) \in [0, u] \times \mathbb{T} \mid \frac{L\mu(t, u', \vartheta)}{\mathring{\mu}(u', \vartheta) - M(0, u', \vartheta; t)} < 0 \right\}, \qquad (10.10b)$$

$$^{(+)}\Sigma_{s;t}^u := \left\{ (s, u', \vartheta) \in \Sigma_s^u \mid (u', \vartheta) \in {}^{(+)}\mathcal{V}_t^u \right\}, \qquad (10.10c)$$

$$^{(-)}\Sigma_{s;t}^u := \left\{ (s, u', \vartheta) \in \Sigma_s^u \mid (u', \vartheta) \in {}^{(-)}\mathcal{V}_t^u \right\}. \qquad (10.10d)$$

Remark 10.2 (**Positive denominators**) The estimate (10.4) implies that the denominator $\mathring{\mu}(u', \vartheta) - M(0, u', \vartheta; t)$ in (10.10a)–(10.10b) remains strictly positive all the way up to the shock in the solution regime under consideration. We include the denominator in the definitions (10.10a)–(10.10b) because it helps to clarify the connection between the sets $^{(+)}\mathcal{V}_t^u$, $^{(-)}\mathcal{V}_t^u$ and the parameter κ defined in (10.14).

10.2 Sharp Pointwise Estimates for μ and Its Derivatives

In the next proposition, we derive sharp pointwise estimates for μ and its derivatives.

Proposition 10.2 (**Sharp pointwise estimates for** μ, Lμ, **and** $\check{X}\mu$). *Under the data-size and bootstrap assumptions of Subsects. 7.4–7.5 and the smallness assumptions of Subsect. 7.7, the following estimates hold for* $(t, u, \vartheta) \in [0, T_{(Boot)}) \times [0, U_0] \times \mathbb{T}$ *and* $0 \leq s \leq t$.

Upper bound for $\dfrac{[L\mu]_+}{\mu}$.

$$\left\| \frac{[L\mu]_+}{\mu} \right\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_s^u)} \leq C. \qquad (10.11)$$

Small μ ***implies*** Lμ ***is negative***.

$$\mu(s, u, \vartheta) \leq \frac{1}{4} \implies L\mu(s, u, \vartheta) \leq -\frac{1}{4}\mathring{\delta}_*. \qquad (10.12)$$

Upper bound for $\dfrac{[\check{X}\mu]_+}{\mu}$.

$$\left\| \frac{[\check{X}\mu]_+}{\mu} \right\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_s^u)} \leq \frac{C}{\sqrt{T_{(Boot)} - s}}. \qquad (10.13)$$

Sharp spatially uniform estimates. *Consider a time interval* $s \in [0, t]$ *and define the* $(t, u\text{-dependent})$ *constant* κ *by*

$$\kappa := -\min_{(u', \vartheta) \in [0, u] \times \mathbb{T}} \frac{L\mu(t, u', \vartheta)}{\mathring{\mu}(u', \vartheta) - M(0, u', \vartheta; t)}. \tag{10.14}$$

Note that $\kappa \geq 0$ *in view of the estimate* (10.4) *and the fact that* $L\mu$ *vanishes along the flat null hyperplane* $\mathcal{P}_0$. *Then*

$$\mu_\star(s, u) = \{1 + \mathcal{O}(\varepsilon)\}\{1 - \kappa s\}, \tag{10.15a}$$

$$\|[L\mu]_-\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_s^u)} = \begin{cases} \{1 + \mathcal{O}(\varepsilon^{1/2})\}\,\kappa, & \text{if } \kappa \geq \sqrt{\varepsilon}, \\ \mathcal{O}(\varepsilon^{1/2}), & \text{if } \kappa \leq \sqrt{\varepsilon}. \end{cases} \tag{10.15b}$$

We also have

$$\kappa \leq \{1 + \mathcal{O}(\varepsilon)\}\,\mathring{\delta}_*. \tag{10.16a}$$

Moreover, when $u = 1$, *we have*

$$\kappa = \{1 + \mathcal{O}(\varepsilon)\}\,\mathring{\delta}_*. \tag{10.16b}$$

Sharp estimates when $(u', \vartheta) \in {}^{(+)}\mathcal{V}_t^u$. *We recall that the set* ${}^{(+)}\mathcal{V}_t^u$ *is defined in* (10.10a).

If $0 \leq s_1 \leq s_2 \leq t$, *then the following estimate holds:*

$$\sup_{(u', \vartheta) \in {}^{(+)}\mathcal{V}_t^u} \frac{\mu(s_2, u', \vartheta)}{\mu(s_1, u', \vartheta)} \leq C. \tag{10.17}$$

In addition, if $s \in [0, t]$ *and* ${}^{(+)}\Sigma_{s;t}^u$ *is as defined in* (10.10c), *then we have*

$$\inf_{{}^{(+)}\Sigma_{s;t}^u} \mu \geq 1 - C\varepsilon. \tag{10.18}$$

In addition, if $s \in [0, t]$ *and* ${}^{(+)}\Sigma_{s;t}^u$ *is as defined in* (10.10c), *then we have*

$$\left\| \frac{[L\mu]_-}{\mu} \right\|_{L^\infty({}^{(+)}\Sigma_{s;t}^u)} \leq C\varepsilon. \tag{10.19}$$

Sharp estimates when $(u', \vartheta) \in {}^{(-)}\mathcal{V}_t^u$. *Assume that the set* ${}^{(-)}\mathcal{V}_t^u$ *defined in* (10.10b) *is non-empty, and consider a time interval* $s \in [0, t]$. *Let* $\kappa > 0$ *be as in* (10.14). *Then the following estimate holds:*

$$\sup_{\substack{0 \leq s_1 \leq s_2 \leq t \\ (u', \vartheta) \in {}^{(-)}\mathcal{V}_t^u}} \frac{\mu(s_2, u', \vartheta)}{\mu(s_1, u', \vartheta)} \leq 1 + C\varepsilon. \tag{10.20}$$

Furthermore, if $s \in [0, t]$ *and* $^{(-)}\Sigma_{s;t}^{u}$ *is as defined in* (10.10d), *then the following estimate holds:*

$$\|[L\mu]_{+}\|_{L^{\infty}(^{(-)}\Sigma_{s;t}^{u})} \leq C\varepsilon. \tag{10.21}$$

Finally, there exists a constant $C > 0$ *such that if* $0 \leq s \leq t$, *then*

$$\|[L\mu]_{-}\|_{L^{\infty}(^{(-)}\Sigma_{s;t}^{u})} \leq \begin{cases} \{1 + C\varepsilon^{1/2}\}\kappa, & \text{if } \kappa \geq \sqrt{\varepsilon}, \\ C\varepsilon^{1/2}, & \text{if } \kappa \leq \sqrt{\varepsilon}. \end{cases} \tag{10.22}$$

Approximate time-monotonicity of $\mu_{\star}^{-1}(s, u)$. *There exists a constant* $C > 0$ *such that if* $0 \leq s_1 \leq s_2 \leq t$, *then*

$$\mu_{\star}^{-1}(s_1, u) \leq (1 + C\varepsilon)\mu_{\star}^{-1}(s_2, u). \tag{10.23}$$

Proof See Subsect. 8.2 for some comments on the analysis.

Proof of (10.11): Clearly it suffices for us to prove that for $(s, u, \vartheta) \in [0, t] \times [0, U_0] \times \mathbb{T}$, we have $[L\mu(s, u, \vartheta)]_{+}/\mu(s, u, \vartheta) \leq C$. We may assume that $[L\mu(s, u, \vartheta)]_{+} > 0$ since otherwise the desired estimate is trivial. Then by (10.5), for $0 \leq s' \leq s \leq t < T_{(Boot)} \leq 2\mathring{\delta}_{\star}^{-1}$, we have that $L\mu(s', u, \vartheta) \geq L\mu(s, u, \vartheta) - C\varepsilon(s - s') \geq -C\varepsilon$. Integrating this estimate with respect to s' starting from $s' = 0$ and using (10.3), we find that $\mu(s, u, \vartheta) \geq 1 - C\varepsilon s \geq 1 - C\varepsilon$ and thus $1/\mu(s, u, \vartheta) \leq 1 + C\varepsilon$. Also using the bound $|L\mu(s, u, \vartheta)| \leq C$ (that is, (8.31a)), we conclude the desired estimate.

Proof of (10.12): By (10.5), for $0 \leq s \leq t < T_{(Boot)} \leq 2\mathring{\delta}_{\star}^{-1}$, we have that $L\mu(s, u, \vartheta) = L\mu(0, u, \vartheta) + \mathcal{O}(\varepsilon)$. Integrating this estimate with respect to s starting from $s = 0$ and using (10.3), we find that $\mu(s, u, \vartheta) = 1 + \mathcal{O}(\varepsilon) + sL\mu(0, u, \vartheta)$. It follows that whenever $\mu(s, u, \vartheta) < 1/4$, we have $L\mu(0, u, \vartheta) < -\frac{1}{2}\mathring{\delta}_{\star}(3/4 + \mathcal{O}(\varepsilon)) = -\frac{3}{8}\mathring{\delta}_{\star} + \mathcal{O}(\varepsilon)$. Again using (10.5) to deduce that $L\mu(s, u, \vartheta) = L\mu(0, u, \vartheta) + \mathcal{O}(\varepsilon)$, we arrive at the desired estimate (10.12).

Proof of (10.16a) **and** (10.16b): We prove only (10.16b) since (10.16a) follows from nearly identical arguments. Above we showed that for $0 \leq t < T_{(Boot)} \leq 2\mathring{\delta}_{\star}^{-1}$, we have $L\mu(t, u, \vartheta) = L\mu(0, u, \vartheta) + \mathcal{O}(\varepsilon)$. Moreover, equation (2.62) and Lemma 2.19 imply that $L\mu = \frac{1}{2}G_{LL}\breve{X}\Psi + f(\gamma)P\Psi$. From this relation and the L^{∞} estimates of Prop. 8.10, we deduce that $L\mu(0, u, \vartheta) = \frac{1}{2}[G_{LL}\breve{X}\Psi](0, u, \vartheta) + \mathcal{O}(\varepsilon)$. In addition, from (10.4), we deduce that $\mathring{\mu}(u, \vartheta) - M(0, u, \vartheta; t) = 1 + \mathcal{O}(\varepsilon)$. Combining these estimates and appealing to definitions (7.4) and (10.14), we conclude (10.16b).

Proof of (10.15a) **and** (10.23): We first prove (10.15a). We start by establishing the following preliminary estimate for the crucial quantity $\kappa = \kappa(t, u)$ (see (10.14)):

$$t\kappa < 1. \tag{10.24}$$

Using (10.1d), (10.8), (10.4), and (10.6), we deduce that the following estimate holds for $(s, u', \vartheta) \in [0, t] \times [0, u] \times \mathbb{T}$:

$$\mu(s, u', \vartheta) = (1 + \mathcal{O}(\varepsilon)) \left\{ 1 + \frac{L\mu(t, u', \vartheta)}{\mathring{\mu}(u', \vartheta) - M(0, u', \vartheta; t)} s + \mathcal{O}(\varepsilon)(t - s)^2 \right\}. \tag{10.25}$$

Setting $s = t$ in equation (10.25), taking the min of both sides over $(u', \vartheta) \in [0, u] \times \mathbb{T}$, and appealing to definitions (10.2) and (10.14), we deduce that $\mu_\star(t, u) = (1 + \mathcal{O}(\varepsilon))(1 - \kappa t)$. Since $\mu_\star(t, u) > 0$ by (**BA**$\mu > 0$), we conclude (10.24).

Having established the preliminary estimate, we now take the min of both sides over $(u', \vartheta) \in [0, u] \times \mathbb{T}$, and appeal to definitions (10.2) and (10.14) to obtain:

$$\min_{(u', \vartheta) \in [0, u] \times \mathbb{T}} \mu(s, u', \vartheta) = (1 + \mathcal{O}(\varepsilon)) \left\{ 1 - \kappa s + \mathcal{O}(\varepsilon)(t - s)^2 \right\}. \tag{10.26}$$

We will show that the terms in braces on RHS (10.26) verify

$$1 - \kappa s + \mathcal{O}(\varepsilon)(t - s)^2 = (1 + \mathrm{f}(s, u; t)) \left\{ 1 - \kappa s \right\}, \tag{10.27}$$

where

$$\mathrm{f}(s, u; t) = \mathcal{O}(\varepsilon). \tag{10.28}$$

The desired estimate (10.15a) then follows easily from (10.26)–(10.28) and definition (10.2). To prove (10.28), we first use (10.27) to solve for $\mathrm{f}(s, u; t)$:

$$\mathrm{f}(s, u; t) = \frac{\mathcal{O}(\varepsilon)(t - s)^2}{1 - \kappa s} = \frac{\mathcal{O}(\varepsilon)(t - s)^2}{1 - \kappa t + \kappa(t - s)}. \tag{10.29}$$

We start by considering the case $\kappa \leq (1/4)\mathring{\delta}_\star$. Since $0 \leq s \leq t < T_{(Boot)} \leq 2\mathring{\delta}_\star^{-1}$, the denominator in the middle expression in (10.29) is $\geq 1/2$, and the desired estimate (10.28) follows easily whenever ε is sufficiently small. In remaining case, we have $\kappa > (1/4)\mathring{\delta}_\star$. Using (10.24), we deduce that RHS (10.29) $\leq \frac{1}{\kappa}\mathcal{O}(\varepsilon)(t - s) \leq C\varepsilon\mathring{\delta}_\star^{-2} \lesssim \varepsilon$ as desired.

Inequality (10.23) then follows as a simple consequence of (10.15a).

Proof of (10.15b) **and** (10.22): To prove (10.15b), we first use (10.5) to deduce that for $0 \leq s \leq t < T_{(Boot)} \leq 2\mathring{\delta}_\star^{-1}$ and $(u', \vartheta) \in [0, u] \times \mathbb{T}$, we have $L\mu(s, u', \vartheta) = L\mu(t, u', \vartheta) + \mathcal{O}(\varepsilon)$. Appealing to definition (10.14) and using the estimate (10.4), we find that $\|[L\mu]_-\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_s^u)} = \kappa + \mathcal{O}(\varepsilon)$. If $\sqrt{\varepsilon} \leq \kappa$, we see that as long as ε is sufficiently small, we have the desired bound $\kappa + \mathcal{O}(\varepsilon) = (1 + \mathcal{O}(\varepsilon^{1/2}))\kappa$. On the other hand, if $\kappa \leq \sqrt{\varepsilon}$, then similar reasoning yields that $\|[L\mu]_-\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_s^u)} = \kappa + \mathcal{O}(\varepsilon) = \mathcal{O}(\sqrt{\varepsilon})$ as desired. We have thus proved (10.15b).

The proof of (10.22) is similar and we omit the details.

Proof of (10.13): We fix times s and t with $0 \leq s \leq t < T_{(Boot)}$ and a point $p \in \Sigma_s^u$ with geometric coordinates $(s, \widetilde{u}, \widetilde{\vartheta})$. Let $\iota : [0, u] \rightarrow \Sigma_s^u$ be the integral curve of $\check{X}$ that passes through p and that is parametrized by the values u' of the eikonal function. We set $F(u') := \mu \circ \iota(u')$ and $\dot{F}(u') := \dfrac{d}{du'} F(u') = (\check{X}\mu) \circ \iota(u')$. We must bound $\dfrac{[\check{X}\mu]_+}{\mu}\big|_p = \dfrac{[\dot{F}(\widetilde{u})]_+}{F(\widetilde{u})}$. We split the proof into three cases that exhaust all possibilities. In the first case, we assume that $\dot{F}(\widetilde{u}) = \check{X}\mu|_p \leq 0$. Then $[\dot{F}(\widetilde{u})]_+/F(\widetilde{u}) = 0 \leq$ RHS (10.13) as desired. In the second case, we assume that $\dot{F}(u') \geq 0$ for $u' \in [0, \widetilde{u}]$. Then since $F(0) = 1$ (because the solution is trivial in the exterior of the flat null hyperplane $\mathcal{P}_0$), we have that $F(u') \geq F(0) = 1$ for $u' \in [0, \widetilde{u}]$. Also using the bounds $\|\mu\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_s^u)}, \|\check{X}\mu\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_s^u)} \leq C$ (that is, (8.32a) and (9.5b)), we deduce that $[\dot{F}(\widetilde{u})]_+/F(\widetilde{u}) \leq C \leq$ RHS (10.13) as desired. In the final case, we have $\dot{F}(\widetilde{u}) = \check{X}\mu|_p > 0$ and there exists a largest number $u_* \in (0, \widetilde{u})$ such that $\dot{F}(u_*) = 0$ (and hence $\dot{F}(u') > 0$ for $u' \in (u_*, \widetilde{u}]$). We will use the following estimate for $\mu_{(Min)}(s, u') := \min_{(u'', \vartheta) \in [0, u'] \times \mathbb{T}} \mu(s, u'', \vartheta)$, which holds for all $0 \leq s \leq t < T_{(Boot)}$ and $u' \in [0, u]$:

$$\mu_{(Min)}(s, u') \geq \max\left\{(1 - C\varepsilon)\kappa(t - s), (1 - C\varepsilon)(1 - \kappa s)\right\}, \qquad (10.30)$$

where $\kappa = \kappa(t, u)$ is defined in (10.14). We prove (10.30) below in the last paragraph of the proof.

To proceed, we set $H := \sup_{\mathcal{M}_{T_{(Boot)}, U_0}} \check{X}\check{X}\mu$. By the mean value theorem, we have $H > 0$ (since $\dot{F}(\widetilde{u}) > 0$ and $\dot{F}(u_*) = 0$). Moreover, by (9.5g), we have $H \leq C$. In the next paragraph, we will use the mean value theorem to prove that *at the point p of interest*, we have

$$\mu - \mu_{(Min)} \geq \frac{1}{4} \frac{[\check{X}\mu]_+^2}{H}. \qquad (10.31)$$

Rearranging (10.31), we find that $[\check{X}\mu]_+ \leq 2H^{1/2}\sqrt{\mu - \mu_{(Min)}}$ and thus the following bound holds at p:

$$\frac{[\check{X}\mu]_+}{\mu} \leq 2H^{1/2} \frac{\sqrt{\mu - \mu_{(Min)}}}{\mu}. \qquad (10.32)$$

We now view RHS (10.32) as a function of the real variable μ (with all other parameters fixed) on the domain $[\mu_{(Min)}, \infty)$. A simple calculus exercise yields that RHS (10.32) $\leq H^{1/2}/\sqrt{\mu_{(Min)}}$. Combining this estimate with (10.30) and using the aforementioned bound $H \leq C$, we deduce that $\dfrac{[\check{X}\mu]_+}{\mu}\big|_p \leq C \min\left\{1/(\kappa^{1/2}(t - s)^{1/2}), 1/(1 - \kappa s)^{1/2}\right\}$. If $\kappa \leq (1/4)\mathring{\delta}_*$, then $1 - \kappa s \geq 1 - (1/4)\mathring{\delta}_* T_{(Boot)} \geq 1/2$, and the desired bound

$\frac{[\check{X}\mu]_+}{\mu}|_p \le C \le C/T_{(Boot)}^{1/2} \le C/(T_{(Boot)} - s)^{1/2} \le$ RHS (10.13) follows easily from the second term in the min. If $\kappa \ge (1/4)\mathring{\delta}_*$, then $1/\kappa \le C$, and using the first term in the min, we deduce that $\frac{[\check{X}\mu]_+}{\mu}|_p \le C/(t - s)^{1/2}$. Since this estimate holds for all $t < T_{(Boot)}$ with a uniform constant C, we conclude (10.13) in this case.

To prove the bound (10.31) used above, we set $u_1 := \widetilde{u} - (1/2)\dot{F}(\widetilde{u})/H$ and use the mean value theorem to deduce that for $u' \in [u_1, \widetilde{u}]$, we have $\dot{F}(\widetilde{u}) - \dot{F}(u') \le H(\widetilde{u} - u') \le (1/2)\dot{F}(\widetilde{u})$. Thus, we have

$$\dot{F}(u') \ge \frac{1}{2}\dot{F}(\widetilde{u}), \quad \text{for } u' \in [u_1, \widetilde{u}]. \tag{10.33}$$

Again using the mean value theorem and also (10.33), we deduce that $F(\widetilde{u}) - F(u_1) \ge (1/2)\dot{F}(\widetilde{u})(\widetilde{u} - u_1) = (1/4)\dot{F}^2(\widetilde{u})/H$. Noting that the definition of $\mu_{(Min)}$ implies that $F(u_1) \ge \mu_{(Min)}(s, \widetilde{u})$, we conclude the desired estimate (10.31).

It remains for us to prove (10.30). Reasoning as in the proof of (10.25)–(10.28) and using (10.24), we find that for $0 \le s \le t < T_{(Boot)}$ and $u' \in [0, u]$, we have $\mu_{(Min)}(s, u') \ge (1 - C\varepsilon)\{1 - \kappa s\} \ge (1 - C\varepsilon)\kappa(t - s)$. From these two inequalities, we conclude the desired bound (10.30).

Proof of (10.20): A straightforward modification of the proof of (10.15a), based on equation (10.25) and on replacing κ in (10.26)–(10.27) with $L\mu(t, u', \vartheta)$ (without taking the min on the LHS of the analog of (10.26)), yields that for $0 \le s \le t < T_{(Boot)}$ and $(u', \vartheta) \in {}^{(-)}\mathcal{V}_t^u$, we have $\mu(s, u', \vartheta) = \{1 + \mathcal{O}(\varepsilon)\}\{1 - |L\mu(t, u', \vartheta)| s\}$. The estimate (10.20) then follows as a simple consequence.

Proof of (10.17), (10.18), **and** (10.19): By (10.5), if $(u', \vartheta) \in {}^{(+)}\mathcal{V}_t^u$ and $0 \le s \le t < T_{(Boot)}$, then $[L\mu]_-(s, u, \vartheta) \le C\varepsilon$ and $L\mu(s, u, \vartheta) \ge -C\varepsilon$. Integrating the latter estimate with respect to s from 0 to t and using (10.3), we find that if $0 \le s < T_{(Boot)}$ and $(u', \vartheta) \in {}^{(+)}\mathcal{V}_t^u$, then $\mu(s, u', \vartheta) \ge 1 - C\varepsilon(1 + s) \ge 1 - C\varepsilon$. Moreover, from (8.32a), we have the crude bound $\mu(s, u', \vartheta) \le C$. The desired bounds (10.17), (10.18), and (10.19) now readily follow from these estimates.

Proof of (10.21): By (10.5), if $(u', \vartheta) \in {}^{(-)}\mathcal{V}_t^u$ and $0 \le s \le t < T_{(Boot)}$, then $[L\mu]_+(s, u', \vartheta) = [L\mu]_+(t, u', \vartheta) + \mathcal{O}(\varepsilon) = \mathcal{O}(\varepsilon)$. The desired bound (10.21) thus follows. $\square$

10.3 Sharp Time-Integral Estimates Involving μ

In Prop. 10.3, we use the sharp pointwise estimates of Prop. 10.2 to derive sharp estimates for time integrals involving powers of $\mu_\star^{-1}$. The time-integral estimates are a primary ingredient in the Gronwall-type argument that we use to derive a priori energy estimates (see Prop. 14.1), which are degenerate with respect to powers of $\mu_\star^{-1}$ at the high orders (see inequality (14.1a)). The estimates of Prop. 10.3 directly influence the degree of $\mu_\star^{-1}$-degeneracy found in our high-order energy estimates.

Proposition 10.3 (Fundamental estimates for time integrals involving μ^{-1}). *Let $\mu_\star(t, u)$ be as defined in* (10.2). *Let*

$$B > 1$$

be a real number. Under the data-size and bootstrap assumptions of Subsects. 7.4–
7.5 *and the smallness assumptions of Subsect.* 7.7, *the following estimates hold for $(t, u) \in [0, T_{(Boot)}) \times [0, U_0]$:*
Estimates relevant for borderline top-order spacetime integrals. *There exists a constant $C > 0$ such that if $B\sqrt{\varepsilon} \le 1$, then*

$$\int_{s=0}^{t} \frac{\|[L\mu]_-\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_s^u)}}{\mu_\star^B(s, u)} \, ds \le \frac{1 + C\sqrt{\varepsilon}}{B - 1} \mu_\star^{1-B}(t, u). \tag{10.34}$$

Estimates relevant for borderline top-order hypersurface integrals. *There exists a constant $C > 0$ such that*

$$\|L\mu\|_{L^\infty((-)\Sigma_{t;t}^u)} \int_{s=0}^{t} \frac{1}{\mu_\star^B(s, u)} \, ds \le \frac{1 + C\sqrt{\varepsilon}}{B - 1} \mu_\star^{1-B}(t, u). \tag{10.35}$$

Estimates relevant for less dangerous top-order spacetime integrals. *There exists a constant $C > 0$ such that if $B\sqrt{\varepsilon} \le 1$, then*

$$\int_{s=0}^{t} \frac{1}{\mu_\star^B(s, u)} \, ds \le C \left\{ 2^B + \frac{1}{B - 1} \right\} \mu_\star^{1-B}(t, u). \tag{10.36}$$

Estimates for integrals that lead to only $\ln \mu_\star^{-1}$ degeneracy. *There exists a constant $C > 0$ such that*

$$\int_{s=0}^{t} \frac{\|[L\mu]_-\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_s^u)}}{\mu_\star(s, u)} \, ds \le (1 + C\sqrt{\varepsilon}) \ln \mu_\star^{-1}(t, u) + C\sqrt{\varepsilon}. \tag{10.37}$$

In addition, there exists a constant $C > 0$ such that

$$\int_{s=0}^{t} \frac{1}{\mu_\star(s, u)} \, ds \le C \left\{ \ln \mu_\star^{-1}(t, u) + 1 \right\}. \tag{10.38}$$

Estimates for integrals that break the $\mu_\star^{-1}$ degeneracy. *There exists a constant $C > 0$ such that*

$$\int_{s=0}^{t} \frac{1}{\mu_\star^{9/10}(s, u)} \, ds \le C. \tag{10.39}$$

Proof **Proof of** (10.34), (10.35), **and** (10.37): To prove (10.34), we first consider the case $\kappa \geq \sqrt{\varepsilon}$ in (10.15b). Using (10.15a) and (10.15b), we deduce that

$$
\int_{s=0}^{t} \frac{\|[L\mu]_-\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_s^u)}}{\mu_\star^B(s,u)}\, ds = (1 + \mathcal{O}(\varepsilon^{1/2})) \int_{s=0}^{t} \frac{\kappa}{(1 - \kappa s)^B}\, ds
$$
$$
\leq \frac{1 + \mathcal{O}(\varepsilon^{1/2})}{B - 1} \frac{1}{(1 - \kappa t)^{B-1}} = \frac{1 + \mathcal{O}(\varepsilon^{1/2})}{B - 1} \mu_\star^{1-B}(t, u)
$$
(10.40)

as desired. We now consider the case $\kappa \leq \sqrt{\varepsilon}$ in (10.15b). Using (10.15a) and (10.15b) and the fact that $0 \leq s \leq t < T_{(Boot)} \leq 2\mathring{\delta}_*^{-1}$, we see that for ε sufficiently small relative to $\mathring{\delta}_*$, we have

$$
\int_{s=0}^{t} \frac{\|[L\mu]_-\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_s^u)}}{\mu_\star^B(s,u)}\, ds \leq C\varepsilon^{1/2} \int_{s=0}^{t} \frac{1}{(1 - \kappa s)^B}\, ds
$$
$$
\leq C\varepsilon^{1/2} \frac{1}{(1 - \kappa t)^{B-1}} \leq \frac{1}{B - 1} \mu_\star^{1-B}(t, u) \qquad (10.41)
$$

as desired. We have thus proved (10.34). The estimate (10.37) can be proved in a similar fashion; we omit the details.

Inequality (10.35) can be proved in a similar fashion with the help of the estimate (10.22); we omit the details.

Proof of (10.36), (10.38), **and** (10.39): To prove (10.36), we first use (10.15a) to deduce

$$
\int_{s=0}^{t} \frac{1}{\mu_\star^B(s,u)}\, ds \leq C \int_{s=0}^{t} \frac{1}{(1 - \kappa s)^B}\, ds. \qquad (10.42)
$$

We first assume that $\kappa \leq (1/4)\mathring{\delta}_*$. Then since $0 \leq t < T_{(Boot)} < 2\mathring{\delta}_*^{-1}$, we see from (10.15a) that $\mu_\star(s, u) \geq (1/4)$ for $0 \leq s \leq t$ and that RHS (10.42) $\leq C2^B t \leq C2^B \mathring{\delta}_*^{-1} \leq C2^B \leq C2^B \mu_\star^{1-B}(t, u)$ as desired. In the remaining case, we have $\kappa > (1/4)\mathring{\delta}_*$, and we can use (10.15a) and the estimate $1/\kappa \leq C$ to bound RHS (10.42) by

$$
\leq \frac{C}{\kappa} \frac{1}{B - 1} \frac{1}{(1 - \kappa t)^{B-1}} \leq \frac{C}{B - 1} \mu_\star^{1-B}(t, u) \qquad (10.43)
$$

as desired.

Inequalities (10.38) and (10.39) can be proved in a similar fashion; we omit the details, aside from remarking that the last step of the proof of (10.39) relies on the trivial estimate $(1 - \kappa t)^{1/10} \leq 1$. □

11 Pointwise Estimates for the Error Integrands

Recall that if $\mathscr{P}^N$ is an Nth-order $\mathcal{P}_u$-tangent vectorfield operator, then $\mathscr{P}^N \Psi$ solves an inhomogeneous wave equation of the form $\mu \Box_g (\mathscr{P}^N \Psi) = \mathfrak{F}$. In this section,

we start by identifying the difficult error terms in $\mathfrak{F}$; see Subsect. 11.1. The difficult terms are products that contain a factor involving certain top derivatives of the eikonal function; we have to work hard to control these products in the energy estimates. The remaining terms have a structure that we call "$Harmless^{\leq N}$" (see Def. 11.1) and are easy to control. Next, we derive pointwise estimates for the difficult products. After deriving some preliminary estimates, we provide the main result in this direction in Prop. 11.10. Finally, in Subsect. 11.6, we derive pointwise estimates for the error terms $\sum_{i=1}^{5} {}^{(T)}\mathfrak{P}_{(i)}$ on RHS (3.13), which are generated by the deformation tensor of the multiplier vectorfield T.

The following definition encapsulates error term factors that are easy to bound in the energy estimates. Most factors that arise in our analysis are of this form.

Definition 11.1 (**Harmless terms**). A $Harmless^{\leq N}$ term is any term such that under the data-size and bootstrap assumptions of Subsects. 7.4–7.5 and the smallness assumptions of Subsect. 7.7, the following bound holds on $\mathcal{M}_{T_{(Boot)},U_0}$ (see Subsect. 7.2 regarding the vectorfield operator notation):

$$\left| Harmless^{\leq N} \right| \lesssim \left| \mathscr{Z}_*^{\leq N+1;1} \Psi \right| + \left| \mathscr{Z}_*^{\leq N;1} \gamma \right| + \left| \mathscr{P}_*^{[1,N]} \underline{\gamma} \right|. \tag{11.1}$$

In the next lemma, we provide L^∞ estimates for $Harmless^{\leq 9}$ terms.

Lemma 11.1 (L^∞ **estimate for** $Harmless^{\leq 9}$ **terms**). *Under the data-size and bootstrap assumptions of Subsects. 7.4–7.5 and the smallness assumptions of Subsect. 7.7, the following pointwise estimates hold for the terms $Harmless^{\leq 9}$ from Def. 11.1 on $\mathcal{M}_{T_{(Boot)},U_0}$:*

$$\left| Harmless^{\leq 9} \right| \lesssim \varepsilon. \tag{11.2}$$

Proof The estimate (11.2) follows directly from the L^∞ estimates of Prop. 8.10. $\square$

11.1 Identification of the Key Difficult Error Term Factors

In the next proposition, we identify the products that are difficult to control in the energy estimates.

Proposition 11.2 (**Identification of the key difficult error term factors**). *For* $1 \leq N \leq 18$ *in* (11.3a) *and* $N \leq 18$ *in* (11.3b)*, we have the following estimates:*

$$\mu \Box_g (Y^{N-1} L \Psi) = (\displaystyle{\not}{d}^{\#} \Psi) \cdot (\mu \displaystyle{\not}{d} Y^{N-1} \mathrm{tr}_{\not g} \chi) + Harmless^{\leq N}, \tag{11.3a}$$

$$\mu \Box_g (Y^N \Psi) = (\check{X} \Psi) Y^N \mathrm{tr}_{\not g} \chi + \rho (\displaystyle{\not}{d}^{\#} \Psi) \cdot (\mu \displaystyle{\not}{d} Y^{N-1} \mathrm{tr}_{\not g} \chi) + Harmless^{\leq N}. \tag{11.3b}$$

Furthermore, if $2 \leq N \leq 18$ *and* $\mathscr{P}^N$ *is any* N^{th} *order* $\mathcal{P}_u$*-tangent operator except for* $Y^{N-1} L$ *or* Y^N*, then*

$$\mu \Box_g (\mathscr{P}^N \Psi) = Harmless^{\leq N}. \tag{11.3c}$$

We provide the proof of Prop. 11.2 in Subsect. 11.4. In Subsects. 11.2–11.3, we establish some preliminary identities and estimates. As in Sect. 6, we use the Riemann curvature tensor of g to aid our calculations.

11.2 Preliminary Lemmas Connected to Commutation

We start with a lemma that provides an identity for the curvature component $\mathrm{tr}_{g\!\!\!/}\mathscr{R}_{\check{X}\cdot L\cdot}$. It is an analog of Lemma 6.1.

Lemma 11.3 (**An expression for** $\mathrm{tr}_{g\!\!\!/}\mathscr{R}_{\check{X}\cdot L\cdot}$). *Let* $\mathscr{R}_{\alpha\beta\kappa\lambda}$ *be the Riemann curvature tensor from Def. 6.1. Then the curvature component* $\mathrm{tr}_{g\!\!\!/}\mathscr{R}_{\check{X}\cdot L\cdot} := (g\!\!\!/^{-1}) \cdot \mathscr{R}_{\check{X}\cdot L\cdot}$ *can be expressed as follows, where all terms are exact except for* $\mathrm{f}(\cdots)$:

$$
\mathrm{tr}_{g\!\!\!/}\mathscr{R}_{\check{X}\cdot L\cdot} = \frac{1}{2}\left\{ \mu G\!\!\!/_{X}^{\#} \cdot d\!\!\!/L\Psi + G\!\!\!/_{L}^{\#} \cdot d\!\!\!/\check{X}\Psi - \mathrm{tr}_{g\!\!\!/}G\!\!\!/ L\check{X}\Psi - \mu G_{LX}\triangle\!\!\!\!/\,\Psi \right\}
$$
$$
+ \frac{1}{4}\mu^{-1}G\!\!\!/_{L}^{\#} \cdot G\!\!\!/_{L}\,(\check{X}\Psi)^2 - \frac{1}{2}\mu^{-1}G\!\!\!/_{L}^{\#} \cdot (d\!\!\!/\mu)\check{X}\Psi
$$
$$
+ \frac{1}{2}\left\{ G_{LX}\mathrm{tr}_{g\!\!\!/}\chi\check{X}\Psi + \mu\mathrm{tr}_{g\!\!\!/}\chi G\!\!\!/_{L}^{\#} \cdot d\!\!\!/\Psi - \mu\mathrm{tr}_{g\!\!\!/}\chi G\!\!\!/_{X}^{\#} \cdot d\!\!\!/\Psi \right\}
$$
$$
+ \mathrm{f}(\underline{\gamma}, g^{-1}, d\!\!\!/x^1, d\!\!\!/x^2, Z\Psi)P\Psi. \tag{11.4}
$$

Proof Lemma 11.3 follows from inserting the schematic relations provided by Lemma 2.19 into the identities derived in [60, Lemma 15.1.3]. We therefore do not provide a detailed proof here. We remark that the main ideas behind the proof are the same as those of Lemma 6.1. In particular, the main idea is to contract the curvature tensor $\mathscr{R}_{\mu\nu\alpha\beta}$, given by (6.7), against $\check{X}^{\mu}L^{\alpha}(g^{-1})^{\nu\kappa}$ and to use Lemmas 2.13 and 2.19 to express the RHS of the contracted identity in the form written on RHS (11.4). $\square$

We now use Lemma 11.3 to derive an identity for $\check{X}\mathrm{tr}_{g\!\!\!/}\chi$.

Lemma 11.4 (**An expression for** $\check{X}\mathrm{tr}_{g\!\!\!/}\chi$ **in terms of other variables**). $\check{X}\mathrm{tr}_{g\!\!\!/}\chi$ *can be expressed as follows, where the term* $\triangle\!\!\!\!/\,\mu$ *on RHS (11.5) is exactly depicted and the terms* $\mathrm{f}(\cdots)$ *are schematically depicted:*

$$
\check{X}\mathrm{tr}_{g\!\!\!/}\chi = \triangle\!\!\!\!/\,\mu + \mathrm{f}(\gamma, g^{-1}, d\!\!\!/x^1, d\!\!\!/x^2)P\check{X}\Psi + \mathrm{f}(\gamma, g^{-1}, d\!\!\!/x^1, d\!\!\!/x^2)PP\Psi \tag{11.5}
$$
$$
+ \mathrm{f}(\underline{\gamma}, \check{X}\Psi, P\underline{\gamma}, g^{-1}, d\!\!\!/x^1, d\!\!\!/x^2) \cdot (\overline{P}\gamma, \nabla\!\!\!\!/^2 x^1, \nabla\!\!\!\!/^2 x^2).
$$

Proof We start with the following analog of (6.12). The proof is similar but is slightly more computationally intensive due in part to the fact that $[\check{X}, \Theta] \neq 0$ (see [60, Lemma 15.1.4] for detailed computations):

$$
\check{X}\mathrm{tr}_{g\!\!\!/}\chi = \triangle\!\!\!\!/\,\mu + \mathrm{tr}_{g\!\!\!/}\nabla\!\!\!\!/(\mu\zeta) - \mathrm{tr}_{g\!\!\!/}\mathscr{R}_{\check{X}\cdot L\cdot}
$$
$$
+ \mu\zeta^{\#} \cdot \zeta + \zeta^{\#} \cdot d\!\!\!/\mu - \mathrm{tr}_{g\!\!\!/}{}^{(\check{X})}\!\!\not{\pi}\mathrm{tr}_{g\!\!\!/}\chi - (L\mu)\mathrm{tr}_{g\!\!\!/}\chi - \mu(\mathrm{tr}_{g\!\!\!/}\chi)^2 + \mathrm{tr}_{g\!\!\!/}\chi(\mu\mathrm{tr}_{g\!\!\!/}k). \tag{11.6}
$$

We now substitute RHS (11.4) for the third term on RHS (11.6) and use (2.72b), (2.62), (2.66a), and (2.66b) to substitute for $\mathrm{tr}_{g\!\!\!/}\chi$, $L\mu$, ζ, and $k\!\!\!/$ on RHS (11.6). The

only important observation is that the two μ^{-1}-singular products on the second line of RHS (11.4) (generated by the term $-\text{tr}_{\not{g}} \mathscr{R}_{\check{X}\cdot L}$ on RHS (11.6)) are, in view of the expression (2.67a) for $\zeta^{(Trans-\Psi)\#}$, exactly canceled by the corresponding terms $\mu^{-1}\zeta^{(Trans-\Psi)\#} \cdot \zeta^{(Trans-\Psi)}$ and $\mu^{-1}\zeta^{(Trans-\Psi)\#} \cdot \not{d}\mu$ (generated, in view of equation (2.66a), by the products $\mu\zeta^{\#} \cdot \zeta$ and $\zeta^{\#} \cdot \not{d}\mu$ on RHS (11.6)).

Also using Lemma 2.19, we arrive at the desired expression (11.5).   □

We now derive higher-order analogs of Lemma 11.4.

Lemma 11.5 (**Identification of the only non-$Harmless^{\leq N}$ term in $\mathscr{P}^{N-1}\check{X}\text{tr}_{\not{g}}\chi$**). *Assume that $1 \leq N \leq 18$. Under the data-size and bootstrap assumptions of Subsects. 7.4–7.5 and the smallness assumptions of Subsect. 7.7, the following estimate holds on $\mathcal{M}_{T_{(Boot)},U_0}$ (see Subsect. 7.2 regarding the vectorfield operator notation):*

$$\left| \mathscr{P}^{N-1}\check{X}\text{tr}_{\not{g}}\chi - \not{\triangle}\mathscr{P}^{N-1}\mu \right| \lesssim \left| \mathscr{Z}_*^{\leq N+1;1}\Psi \right| + \left| \mathscr{P}^{\leq N}\underline{\gamma} \right| + \varepsilon \left| \mathscr{P}_*^{[1,N]}\underline{\gamma} \right|. \quad (11.7)$$

Proof We start by applying $\mathscr{P}^{N-1}$ to (11.5). We then decompose the first term as $\mathscr{P}^{N-1}\not{\triangle}\mu = \not{\triangle}\mathscr{P}^{N-1}\mu + [\mathscr{P}^{N-1}, \not{\triangle}]\mu$. We put the principal term $\not{\triangle}\mathscr{P}^{N-1}\mu$ on LHS (11.7), while to bound $\left|[\mathscr{P}^{N-1}, \not{\triangle}]\mu\right|$ by $\lesssim$ RHS (11.7), we use the commutator estimate (8.20b) with $N - 1$ in the role of N and $f = \mu$, the L^∞ estimates of Prop. 8.10, and Cor. 8.11. To deduce that the $\mathscr{P}^{N-1}$ derivative of the remaining terms on RHS (11.5), with the exception of terms involving $\overline{\nabla}^2 x^1$ and $\overline{\nabla}^2 x^2$, are bounded in magnitude by $\lesssim$ RHS (11.7), we use Lemmas 8.4 and 8.5 and the L^∞ estimates of Prop. 8.10. We now bound the $\mathscr{P}^{N-1}$ derivative of the terms on RHS (11.5) involving derivatives of $\overline{\nabla}^2 x^1$ and $\overline{\nabla}^2 x^2$. We first show that $\left|\overline{\nabla}^2 x^i\right| \lesssim \left|\mathscr{P}^{\leq 1}\underline{\gamma}\right|$. To this end, we note that inequality (8.3) and the argument given just below it imply that $\left|\overline{\nabla}^2 x^i\right| \lesssim \left|\not{d}Y x^i\right| + \left|\not{d}x^i\right| |Y\underline{\gamma}|$. The desired bound now follows from the previous inequality, Lemma 8.4, and the L^∞ estimates of Prop. 8.10. We now show that for $1 \leq M \leq N - 1$, we have $\left|\mathcal{L}_{\mathscr{P}}^M \overline{\nabla}^2 x^i\right| \lesssim \left|\mathscr{P}^{\leq M+1}\underline{\gamma}\right|$. To this end, we first decompose $\mathcal{L}_{\mathscr{P}}^M \overline{\nabla}^2 x^i = \overline{\nabla}^2 \mathscr{P}^M x^i + [\mathcal{L}_{\mathscr{P}}^M, \overline{\nabla}^2] x^i$. Next, using (8.2), we deduce $\left|\overline{\nabla}^2 \mathscr{P}^M x^i\right| \lesssim \left|\not{d}\mathscr{P}^{[1,M+1]} x^i\right|$. Using Lemma 8.4, we bound the RHS of the previous inequality by $\lesssim \left|\mathscr{P}^{\leq M+1}\underline{\gamma}\right|$ as desired. To deduce that $\left|[\mathcal{L}_{\mathscr{P}}^M, \overline{\nabla}^2] x^i\right| \lesssim \left|\mathscr{P}^{\leq M+1}\underline{\gamma}\right|$, we also use the commutator estimate (8.22) with $f = x^i$ and the L^∞ estimates of Prop. 8.10. We have thus shown that for $0 \leq M \leq N - 1$, we have $\left|\mathcal{L}_{\mathscr{P}}^M \overline{\nabla}^2 x^i\right| \lesssim \left|\mathscr{P}^{\leq M+1}\underline{\gamma}\right|$ Combining the previous inequality with the L^∞ estimates of Prop. 8.10, we find that the $\mathscr{P}^{N-1}$ derivative of the products on RHS (11.5) involving a factor $\overline{\nabla}^2 x^i$ are bounded in magnitude by $\lesssim$ RHS (11.7). We have thus proved the lemma.   □

11.3 The Important Terms in the Derivatives of $^{(L)}\pi$ and $^{(Y)}\pi$

The most difficult terms in our energy estimates depend on the "top-order non$-L-$involving derivatives" of the eikonal function quantities, which appear in some frame components of the top derivatives of the deformation tensors $^{(L)}\pi$ and $^{(Y)}\pi$. In the next lemma, we identify the difficult terms.

Lemma 11.6 (**Identification of the important top-order terms in $^{(L)}\pi$ and $^{(Y)}\pi$**). *Assume that $1 \le N \le 18$. Under the data-size and bootstrap assumptions of Subsects. 7.4–7.5 and the smallness assumptions of Subsect. 7.7, the following estimates hold on $\mathcal{M}_{T_{(Boot)}, U_0}$ (see Subsect. 7.2 regarding the vectorfield operator notation):*
Important top-order terms in $^{(L)}\pi$. *We have*

$$\left| \mathscr{P}^{N-1} \check{X} \mathrm{tr}_{\slashed{g}}{}^{(L)}\slashed{\pi} - 2 \slashed{\Delta} \mathscr{P}^{N-1}\mu \right| \lesssim \left| \mathscr{Z}_*^{\le N+1;1}\Psi \right| + \left| \mathscr{L}_*^{\le N;1}\gamma \right| + \varepsilon \left| \mathscr{P}_*^{[1,N]}\underline{\gamma} \right|,$$
(11.8a)

$$\left| \mathcal{L}_{\mathscr{P}}^{N-1} \slashed{d}^{\#(L)}\pi_{L\check{X}} \right|, \; \left| \mathscr{P}^{N-1} \mathrm{d\!\!\!/v}\, ^{(L)}\slashed{\pi}_{\check{X}}^{\#} - \slashed{\Delta} \mathscr{P}^{N-1}\mu \right|, \; \left| \mathcal{L}_{\mathscr{P}}^{N-1} \slashed{d}^{\#}\mathrm{tr}_{\slashed{g}}{}^{(L)}\slashed{\pi} - 2\slashed{d}^{\#}\mathscr{P}^{N-1}\mathrm{tr}_{\slashed{g}}\chi \right|$$
$$\lesssim \left| \mathscr{Z}_*^{\le N+1;1}\Psi \right| + \left| \mathscr{Z}_*^{\le N;1}\gamma \right| + \varepsilon \left| \mathscr{P}_*^{[1,N]}\underline{\gamma} \right|.$$
(11.8b)

Important top-order terms in $^{(Y)}\pi$. *We have*

$$\left| \mathcal{L}_{\mathscr{P}}^{N-1} \mathcal{L}_{\check{X}}{}^{(Y)}\slashed{\pi}_L^{\#} + (\slashed{\Delta}\mathscr{P}^{N-1}\mu)Y \right|, \; \left| \mathscr{P}^{N-1}\check{X}\mathrm{tr}_{\slashed{g}}{}^{(Y)}\slashed{\pi} - 2\rho\slashed{\Delta}\mathscr{P}^{N-1}\mu \right|$$
$$\lesssim \left| \mathscr{Z}_*^{\le N+1;1}\Psi \right| + \left| \mathscr{Z}_*^{\le N;1}\gamma \right| + \varepsilon \left| \mathscr{P}_*^{[1,N]}\underline{\gamma} \right|,$$
(11.9a)

$$\left| \mathscr{P}^{N-1}\mathrm{d\!\!\!/v}\, ^{(Y)}\slashed{\pi}_L^{\#} + Y\,\mathscr{P}^{N-1}\mathrm{tr}_{\slashed{g}}\chi \right|, \; \left| \mathscr{P}^{N-1}\mathrm{d\!\!\!/v}\, ^{(Y)}\slashed{\pi}_{\check{X}}^{\#} - \left\{ \mu Y\,\mathscr{P}^{N-1}\mathrm{tr}_{\slashed{g}}\chi + \rho\slashed{\Delta}\mathscr{P}^{N-1}\mu \right\} \right|,$$
$$\left| \mathcal{L}_{\mathscr{P}}^{N-1}\slashed{d}^{\#(Y)}\pi_{L\check{X}} + (\slashed{\Delta}\mathscr{P}^{N-1}\mu)Y \right|, \; \left| \mathcal{L}_{\mathscr{P}}^{N-1}\slashed{d}^{\#}\mathrm{tr}_{\slashed{g}}{}^{(Y)}\slashed{\pi} - 2\rho\slashed{d}^{\#}\mathscr{P}^{N-1}\mathrm{tr}_{\slashed{g}}\chi \right|$$
$$\lesssim \left| \mathscr{Z}_*^{\le N+1;1}\Psi \right| + \left| \mathscr{Z}_*^{\le N;1}\gamma \right| + \varepsilon \left| \mathscr{P}_*^{[1,N]}\underline{\gamma} \right|.$$
(11.9b)

Above, within a given inequality, the symbol $\mathscr{P}^{N-1}$ on the LHS always denotes the same order $N-1$ $\mathcal{P}_u$-tangent vectorfield operator.

Proof See Subsect. 8.2 for some comments on the analysis. We first prove the estimate (11.9a) for $\left| \mathcal{L}_{\mathscr{P}}^{N-1}\mathcal{L}_{\check{X}}{}^{(Y)}\slashed{\pi}_L^{\#} + (\slashed{\Delta}\mathscr{P}^{N-1}\mu)Y \right|$. We apply $\mathcal{L}_{\mathscr{P}}^{N-1}\mathcal{L}_{\check{X}}$ to the $\slashed{g}$−dual of (2.78b). Note that $\chi = \mathrm{tr}_{\slashed{g}}\chi\slashed{g}$. The principal top-order term is generated when all derivatives fall on $\mathrm{tr}_{\slashed{g}}\chi$ in the product $-\mathrm{tr}_{\slashed{g}}\chi Y$. The top-order product of interest is therefore $-(\mathscr{P}^{N-1}\check{X}\mathrm{tr}_{\slashed{g}}\chi)Y$. Using (11.7), Lemma 8.6, and the L^∞ estimates of Prop. 8.10, we see that this top-order product is equal to $-(\slashed{\Delta}\mathscr{P}^{N-1}\mu)Y$ (whose negative is found on LHS (11.9a)) plus an error term that is $\lesssim$ RHS (11.9a) as desired. Also using Lemma 8.5, we deduce that the remaining terms in the Leibniz expansion of $-\mathcal{L}_{\mathscr{P}}^{N-1}\mathcal{L}_{\check{X}}(\mathrm{tr}_{\slashed{g}}\chi Y)$ are $\lesssim$ RHS (11.9a). Using Lemma 2.19, we see that the remaining terms on the $\slashed{g}$−dual of RHS (2.78b) are of the form $\mathrm{f}(\gamma, \slashed{g}^{-1}, \slashed{d}x^1, \slashed{d}x^2)P\Psi$.

Hence, their $\mathcal{L}_{\mathscr{P}}^{N-1}\mathcal{L}_{\check{X}} = \mathcal{L}_{\mathscr{Z}}^{N;1}$ derivatives can be bounded by $\lesssim$ RHS (11.9a) via the estimates of Lemmas 8.4 and 8.5 and the L^∞ estimates of Prop. 8.10. We have thus proved the desired estimate. The proof of (11.9a) for $\left| \mathscr{P}^{N-1}\check{X}\mathrm{tr}_{\slashed{g}}{}^{(Y)}\slashed{\pi} - 2\rho\slashed{\Delta}\mathscr{P}^{N-1}\mu \right|$ follows similarly from the identity (2.78d) for $^{(Y)}\slashed{\pi}$, and the proof of (11.8a) follows similarly from the identity (2.77c) for $^{(L)}\slashed{\pi}$; we omit the details.

To prove (11.9b) for $\left|\mathscr{P}^{N-1}\text{d\!\!/v}\,^{(Y)}\tilde{\pi}_L^{\#} + Y\mathscr{P}^{N-1}\text{tr}_{\cancel{g}}\chi\right|$, we first use the commutator estimate (8.21c) with $\xi = {}^{(Y)}\tilde{\pi}_L$ and $N-1$ in the role of N, the estimate (8.15a), and the L^{∞} estimates of Prop. 8.10 to commute the operator $\mathcal{L}_{\mathscr{P}}^{N-1}$ through d\!\!/v in the term $\mathscr{P}^{N-1}\text{d\!\!/v}\,^{(Y)}\tilde{\pi}_L^{\#} = \mathcal{L}_{\mathscr{P}}^{N-1}\text{d\!\!/v}\,^{(Y)}\tilde{\pi}_L$, thus obtaining that $\mathscr{P}^{N-1}\text{d\!\!/v}\,^{(Y)}\tilde{\pi}_L^{\#} = \text{d\!\!/v}\,\mathcal{L}_{\mathscr{P}}^{N-1\,(Y)}\tilde{\pi}_L$ up to error terms that are bounded in magnitude by $\lesssim$ RHS (11.9b). It remains for us to analyze the terms that arise from applying d\!\!/v $\mathcal{L}_{\mathscr{P}}^{N-1} = \cancel{g}^{-1} \cdot \nabla\!\!\!/\mathcal{L}_{\mathscr{P}}^{N-1}$ to RHS (2.78b). As in the previous paragraph, the principal top-order term is generated when all derivatives fall on $\text{tr}_{\cancel{g}}\chi$ in the product $-\chi \cdot Y = -\text{tr}_{\cancel{g}}\chi Y_{\flat} = -\text{tr}_{\cancel{g}}\chi\cancel{g} \cdot Y$. The top-order product of interest (whose negative is found on LHS (11.9b)), is therefore $-(\cancel{d}\mathscr{P}^{N-1}\text{tr}_{\cancel{g}}\chi) \cdot Y = -Y\mathscr{P}^{N-1}\text{tr}_{\cancel{g}}\chi$. Moreover, we see that the remaining terms in the Leibniz expansion of $-\text{d\!\!/v}\,\mathcal{L}_{\mathscr{P}}^{N-1}(\text{tr}_{\cancel{g}}\chi Y_{\flat})$ are $\lesssim$

$$\sum_{\substack{N_1+N_2+N_3\leq N \\ N_1\leq N-1}} \left|\mathscr{P}^{N_1}\text{tr}_{\cancel{g}}\chi\right|\left|\mathcal{L}_{\mathscr{P}}^{N_2}\cancel{g}\right|\left|\mathcal{L}_{\mathscr{P}}^{N_3}Y\right|.$$ We now bound these terms by $\lesssim$

RHS (11.9b) via the estimates of Lemmas 8.5 and 8.6 and the L^{∞} estimates of Prop. 8.10. Using Lemma 2.19, we see that the remaining terms on RHS (2.78b) are of the form $\text{f}(\gamma, \cancel{d}x^1, \cancel{d}x^2)P\Psi$.

To bound their d\!\!/v $\mathcal{L}_{\mathscr{P}}^{N-1}$ derivatives by $\lesssim$ RHS (11.9b), we use the same arguments given in the previous paragraph with the minor new addition that we also need the bound $\left|\nabla\!\!\!/^2\mathscr{P}^{N-1}x^i\right| \lesssim \left|\mathscr{P}^{\leq N}\gamma\right|$, which we obtained in the proof of Lemma 11.5.

We have thus obtained the desired result. The proof of (11.9b) for $\left|\mathscr{P}^{N-1}\text{d\!\!/v}\,^{(Y)}\tilde{\pi}_{\check{X}}^{\#} - \left\{\mu Y\mathscr{P}^{N-1}\text{tr}_{\cancel{g}}\chi + \rho\triangle\!\!\!\!/\,\mathscr{P}^{N-1}\mu\right\}\right|$ follows similarly from the identity (2.78c) for $^{(Y)}\tilde{\pi}_{\check{X}}$, the fact that $\rho = \text{f}(\gamma)\gamma$ (see Lemma 2.19), the estimate (8.16), and Cor. 8.11; we omit the details, noting only that Cor. 8.11 allows us to replace the factor $\varepsilon^{1/2}$ on RHS (8.21c) with $C\varepsilon$. The proof of (11.8b) for $\left|\mathscr{P}^{N-1}\text{d\!\!/v}\,^{(L)}\tilde{\pi}_{\check{X}}^{\#} - \triangle\!\!\!\!/\,\mathscr{P}^{N-1}\mu\right|$ follows similarly from the identity (2.77b) for $^{(L)}\tilde{\pi}_{\check{X}}$, the estimates (8.17a)–(8.17b), and Cor. 8.11; we omit the details, noting only that Cor. 8.11 allows us to replace the factor $\varepsilon^{1/2}$ on RHS (8.21c) with $C\varepsilon$. The proof of (11.8b) for $\left|\mathcal{L}_{\mathscr{P}}^{N-1}\cancel{d}^{\#(L)}\pi_{L\check{X}}\right|$ is based on the identity (2.77a) for $^{(L)}\pi_{L\check{X}}$ and the estimate (8.28b) and is similar but simpler; we omit the details. The proof of (11.8b) for $\left|\mathcal{L}_{\mathscr{P}}^{N-1}\cancel{d}^{\#}\text{tr}_{\cancel{g}}\,^{(L)}\tilde{\pi} - 2\cancel{d}^{\#}\mathscr{P}^{N-1}\text{tr}_{\cancel{g}}\chi\right|$ is similar and is based on the identity (2.77c) for $^{(L)}\tilde{\pi}$; we omit the details. The proof of (11.9b) for $\left|\mathcal{L}_{\mathscr{P}}^{N-1}\cancel{d}^{\#(Y)}\pi_{L\check{X}} + (\triangle\!\!\!\!/\,\mathscr{P}^{N-1}\mu)Y\right|$ follows similarly from the identity (2.78a) for $^{(Y)}\pi_{L\check{X}}$ and the trivial identity $-Y\mu = -Y \cdot \cancel{d}\mu$ relevant for the term on the RHS of the identity; we omit the details.

The proof of (11.9b) for $\left|\mathcal{L}_{\mathscr{P}}^{N-1}\cancel{d}^{\#}\text{tr}_{\cancel{g}}\,^{(Y)}\tilde{\pi} - 2\rho\cancel{d}^{\#}\mathscr{P}^{N-1}\text{tr}_{\cancel{g}}\chi\right|$ follows similarly from the identity (2.78d) for $^{(Y)}\tilde{\pi}$; we omit the details. $\square$

The top-order derivatives of $^{(L)}\pi$ and $^{(Y)}\pi$ involving at least one L differentiation and the below-top-order derivatives of $^{(L)}\pi$ and $^{(Y)}\pi$ lead to negligible error terms in the energy estimates. In the next lemma, we derive the relevant pointwise estimates that will allow us to establish this fact.

Lemma 11.7 (**Pointwise estimates for the negligible derivatives of** $^{(L)}\pi$ **and** $^{(Y)}\pi$). *Assume that* $1 \leq N \leq 18$ *and let* $P \in \mathscr{P} = \{L, Y\}$. *Under the data-size and bootstrap assumptions of Subsects. 7.4–7.5 and the smallness assumptions of Subsect. 7.7, the following estimates hold on* $\mathcal{M}_{T_{(Boot)}, U_0}$:

$$\left| \mathscr{P}^{\leq N-1} L \mathrm{tr}_{\boldsymbol{g}}{}^{(P)}\!\!\not{\pi} \right|, \ \left| \mathscr{P}^{\leq N-1} L\,{}^{(P)}\pi_{L\check{X}} \right|, \ \left| \mathscr{P}^{\leq N-1} L\,{}^{(P)}\pi_{\check{X}X} \right|, \ \left| \mathcal{L}_{\mathscr{P}}^{\leq N-1} \mathcal{L}_L{}^{(P)}\!\!\not{\pi}_L^{\#} \right|,$$

$$\left| \mathcal{L}_{\mathscr{P}}^{\leq N-1} \mathcal{L}_L{}^{(P)}\!\!\not{\pi}_{\check{X}}^{\#} \right| \lesssim \left| \mathscr{Z}_*^{\leq N+1;1} \Psi \right| + \left| \mathscr{P}^{\leq N} \gamma \right| + \left| \mathscr{P}_*^{[1,N]} \underline{\gamma} \right|. \tag{11.10}$$

Moreover, the following below-top-order estimates hold:

$$\left| \mathscr{P}^{\leq N-1} \mathrm{tr}_{\boldsymbol{g}}{}^{(P)}\!\!\not{\pi} \right|, \ \left| \mathscr{P}^{\leq N-1}{}^{(P)}\pi_{L\check{X}} \right|, \ \left| \mathscr{P}^{\leq N-1}{}^{(P)}\pi_{\check{X}X} \right|,$$

$$\left| \mathcal{L}_{\mathscr{P}}^{\leq N-1}{}^{(P)}\!\!\not{\pi}_L^{\#} \right|, \ \left| \mathcal{L}_{\mathscr{P}}^{\leq N-1}{}^{(P)}\!\!\not{\pi}_{\check{X}}^{\#} \right|$$

$$\lesssim \left| \mathscr{Z}_*^{\leq N;1} \Psi \right| + \left| \mathscr{P}^{\leq N} \gamma \right| + \left| \mathscr{P}_*^{[1,N]} \underline{\gamma} \right| + 1. \tag{11.11}$$

Proof See Subsect. 8.2 for some comments on the analysis. We first prove (11.10). From Prop. 2.18, equation (2.62), and Lemma 2.19, we see that the deformation tensor components $\mathrm{tr}_{\boldsymbol{g}}{}^{(P)}\!\!\not{\pi}$, $^{(P)}\pi_{L\check{X}}$, $\cdots$, $^{(P)}\!\!\not{\pi}_{\check{X}}^{\#}$ on LHS (11.10) are schematically of the form

$$\mathrm{f}(\underline{\gamma}, \boldsymbol{g}^{-1}, d\!\!/ x^1, d\!\!/ x^2) P\Psi + \mathrm{f}(\gamma, \boldsymbol{g}^{-1}, d\!\!/ x^1, d\!\!/ x^2) \check{X}\Psi + \mathrm{f}(\gamma, \boldsymbol{g}^{-1}, d\!\!/ x^1, d\!\!/ x^2) \mathrm{tr}_{\boldsymbol{g}}\chi$$

$$+ \mathrm{f}(\gamma, \boldsymbol{g}^{-1}, d\!\!/ x^1, d\!\!/ x^2) d\!\!/ \mu.$$

We now apply $\mathcal{L}_{\mathscr{P}}^{\leq N-1} \mathcal{L}_L$. If all derivatives fall on $\mathrm{tr}_{\boldsymbol{g}}\chi$, then we use (8.29a) to bound $\mathscr{P}^{\leq N-1} L \mathrm{tr}_{\boldsymbol{g}}\chi$ and we bound the remaining factors multiplying $\mathscr{P}^{\leq N-1} L \mathrm{tr}_{\boldsymbol{g}}\chi$ by $\lesssim 1$ via Lemmas 8.4 and 8.5 and the L^∞ estimates of Prop. 8.10. Similarly, if all derivatives fall on $d\!\!/ \mu$, we bound $d\!\!/ \mathscr{P}^{\leq N-1} L\mu$ with (8.28b) and we bound the remaining factors multiplying $d\!\!/ \mathscr{P}^{\leq N-1} L\mu$ by $\lesssim 1$. If most (but not all) derivatives fall on $\mathrm{tr}_{\boldsymbol{g}}\chi$ or $d\!\!/ \mu$, then we bound all terms using the above arguments and also (8.13a). If most derivatives fall on $P\Psi$ or $\check{X}\Psi$, then we bound these factors by the first term on RHS (11.10) and use the above arguments to bound the remaining factors by $\lesssim 1$.

The proof of (11.11) is similar but simpler and we therefore omit the details. $\square$

11.4 Proof of Prop. 11.2

We now use the previous results to establish Prop. 11.2. See Subsect. 8.2 for some comments on the analysis. Throughout the proof, we silently use the definition of $Harmless^{\leq N}$ terms from Def. 11.1 and the estimates of Lemma 11.1. We give a detailed proof of (11.3b) and then at the end, we sketch the minor changes needed to prove (11.3a). To condense the notation, we define the following commutation vector-field $^{(Z)}\mathscr{J}^\alpha[\Psi]$, which is just alternate notation for the term in braces on RHS (4.2):

$$^{(Z)}\mathscr{J}^\alpha[\Psi] := {}^{(Z)}\pi^{\alpha\beta} \mathscr{D}_\beta \Psi - \frac{1}{2} \mathrm{tr}_g{}^{(Z)}\pi \mathscr{D}^\alpha \Psi. \tag{11.12}$$

Iterating (4.2), using $\Box_{g(\Psi)}\Psi = 0$, and using the estimate $\left\| \mathscr{P}^{\leq 9}\mathrm{tr}_{\not{g}}{}^{(Y)}\not\pi \right\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_t^u)} \lesssim \varepsilon$ (which follows from (2.58), (8.13a), and the L^∞ estimates of Prop. 8.10), we find that

$$\mu\Box_{g(\Psi)}(Y^N\Psi) = Y^{N-1}\left(\mu\mathscr{D}_\alpha^{(Y)}\mathscr{J}^\alpha[\Psi] \right) + \mathrm{Error}, \qquad (11.13)$$

where

$$|\mathrm{Error}| \lesssim \sum_{\substack{N_1+N_2+N_3\leq N-1 \\ N_1,N_2\leq N-2}} \left(1 + \left| Y^{N_1}\mathrm{tr}_{\not{g}}{}^{(Y)}\not\pi \right| \right)\left| Y^{N_2}\left(\mu\mathscr{D}_\alpha^{(Y)}\mathscr{J}^\alpha[Y^{N_3}\Psi] \right) \right|. \quad (11.14)$$

We first analyze the main term $Y^{N-1}\left(\mu\mathscr{D}_\alpha^{(Y)}\mathscr{J}^\alpha[\Psi] \right)$ on RHS (11.13), which contains all of the top-order derivatives of the eikonal function quantities. By (4.6), we may equivalently analyze $Y^{N-1}\mathscr{K}_{(\pi-Danger)}^{(Y)}[\Psi] + Y^{N-1}\mathscr{K}_{(\pi-Cancel-1)}^{(Y)}[\Psi] + \cdots + Y^{N-1}\mathscr{K}_{(Low)}^{(Y)}[\Psi]$. We argue one term at a time.

__Analysis of__ $Y^{N-1}\mathscr{K}_{(\pi-Danger)}^{(Y)}[\Psi]$. By (4.7a), we have

$$Y^{N-1}\mathscr{K}_{(\pi-Danger)}^{(Y)}[\Psi] = -\sum_{N_1+N_2=N-1}(Y^{N_1}\mathrm{d}\!\!\!/\,^{(Y)}\not\pi_L^\#)Y^{N_2}\check{X}\Psi. \qquad (11.15)$$

We first consider the case $N_1 = N - 1$. Inequality (8.30a) and the first inequality in (11.9b) yield that $-(Y^{N-1}\mathrm{d}\!\!\!/\,^{(Y)}\not\pi_L^\#)\check{X}\Psi = (Y^N\mathrm{tr}_{\not{g}}\chi)\check{X}\Psi + Harmless^{\leq N}$, which in particular yields the desired first product on RHS (11.3b). To show that the remaining summands are $Harmless^{\leq N}$, we again use the first inequality in (11.9b) (now with $N_1 + 1$ in the role of N) to deduce that $(Y^{N_1}\mathrm{d}\!\!\!/\,^{(Y)}\not\pi_L^\#)Y^{N_2}\check{X}\Psi = (Y^{N_1+1}\mathrm{tr}_{\not{g}}\chi)Y^{N_2}\check{X}\Psi + (Harmless^{\leq N_1})Y^{N_2}\check{X}\Psi$. Since $N_1 \leq N - 2$, (8.13a) implies that $Y^{N_1+1}\mathrm{tr}_{\not{g}}\chi = Harmless^{\leq N_1+2} \leq Harmless^{\leq N}$. From these estimates and the L^∞ estimates of Prop. 8.10, we easily conclude that $(Y^{N_1}\mathrm{d}\!\!\!/\,^{(Y)}\not\pi_L^\#)Y^{N_2}\check{X}\Psi = Harmless^{\leq N}$ as desired.

__Analysis of__ $Y^{N-1}\mathscr{K}_{(\pi-Cancel-1)}^{(Y)}[\Psi]$. From (4.7b), we have

$$Y^{N-1}\mathscr{K}_{(\pi-Cancel-1)}^{(Y)}[\Psi]$$
$$= \sum_{N_1+N_2=N-1}\left\{ \frac{1}{2}Y^{N_1}\check{X}\mathrm{tr}_{\not{g}}{}^{(Y)}\not\pi - Y^{N_1}\mathrm{d}\!\!\!/\,^{(Y)}\not\pi_{\check{X}}^\# - Y^{N_1}(\mu\mathrm{d}\!\!\!/\,^{(Y)}\not\pi_L^\#) \right\}Y^{N_2}L\Psi. $$
$$(11.16)$$

We first consider the case in which $N_1 = N - 1$ in all three terms in braces on RHS (11.16) and all derivatives fall on the deformation tensor components. From the second inequality in (11.9a) and the first and second inequalities in (11.9b), we see that the main top-order eikonal function terms $2\rho \slashed{\Delta} Y^{N-1} \mu$ and $\mu Y^N \text{tr}_{\slashed{g}}\chi$ completely cancel from the terms in braces, leaving only products of the form $Harmless^{\leq N} \times L\Psi = Harmless^{\leq N}$. When $N_1 = N - 1$, there are also terms in which at least one derivative falls on the factor μ in the product $\{Y^{N-1}(\mu \slashed{\text{div}} {}^{(Y)}\slashed{\pi}_L^{\#})\} L\Psi$ on RHS (11.16). We will show that these terms $= Harmless^{\leq N}$. We first bound them by $\lesssim \sum_{N_1+N_2 \leq N-1, N_2 \leq N-2} |Y^{N_1}\mu| |Y^{N_2} \slashed{\text{div}} {}^{(Y)}\slashed{\pi}_L^{\#}| |L\Psi|$. Again using the first inequality in (11.9b) (now with $N_2 + 1$ in the role of N) to control $Y^{N_2} \slashed{\text{div}} {}^{(Y)}\slashed{\pi}_L^{\#}$, we bound the RHS of the previous inequality by

$$\lesssim \sum_{\substack{N_1+N_2 \leq N-1 \\ N_2 \leq N-2}} Harmless^{\leq N_1} \left| Y^{N_2+1} \text{tr}_{\slashed{g}}\chi + Harmless^{\leq N_2} \right| |L\Psi|.$$

Since $N_2 \leq N - 2$, the arguments given in our analysis of $Y^{N-1} \mathscr{K}_{(\pi-Danger)}^{(Y)}[\Psi]$ yield that $Y^{N_2+1} \text{tr}_{\slashed{g}}\chi = Harmless^{\leq N}$. From these estimates and the L^∞ estimates of Prop. 8.10, we easily conclude that the terms under consideration $= Harmless^{\leq N}$ as desired. We now consider the remaining cases, in which $N_1 \leq N - 2$ in all three terms in braces on RHS (11.16). Again using second inequality in (11.9a) and the first and second inequalities in (11.9b) (now with $N_1 + 1$ in the role of N) and the arguments given above, we deduce that the products under consideration $= Harmless^{\leq N}$ plus error products generated by the terms on LHS (11.9a) and LHS (11.9b). The error products are in magnitude

$$\lesssim \sum_{\substack{N_1+N_2+N_3 \leq N-1 \\ N_1 \leq N-2}} \left| Y^{N_1+1} \text{tr}_{\slashed{g}}\chi \right| \left| Y^{N_2}\mu \right| \left| Y^{N_3} L\Psi \right| + \sum_{\substack{N_1+N_2 \leq N-1 \\ N_1 \leq N-2}} \left| \rho \slashed{\Delta} Y^{N_1}\mu \right| \left| Y^{N_2} L\Psi \right|.$$

Since $N_1 \leq N - 2$, the arguments given above and the fact that $\rho = f(\gamma)\gamma$ (see Lemma 2.19) combine to yield that the RHS of the previous expression $= Harmless^{\leq N}$ as desired.

Analysis of $Y^{N-1} \mathscr{K}_{(\pi-Cancel-2)}^{(Y)}[\Psi]$. From (4.7c), we have

$$Y^{N-1} \mathscr{K}_{(\pi-Cancel-2)}^{(Y)}[\Psi] = \sum_{N_1+N_2=N-1} \left\{ -\mathcal{L}_Y^{N_1} \mathcal{L}_{\breve{X}} {}^{(Y)}\slashed{\pi}_L^{\#} + \mathcal{L}_Y^{N_1} \slashed{d} {}^{\#(Y)}\pi_{L\breve{X}} \right\} \cdot \slashed{d} Y^{N_2}\Psi.$$

$$(11.17)$$

In the case $N_1 = N - 1$, we use the first inequality in (11.9a), and the third inequality in (11.9b) to deduce that the top-order eikonal function terms $(\slashed{\Delta} \mathscr{P}^{N-1}\mu)Y$ completely cancel from the terms in braces on RHS (11.17). The remaining analysis now parallels our analysis of $Y^{N-1} \mathscr{K}_{(\pi-Cancel-1)}^{(Y)}[\Psi]$, with the minor addition that we must also use the estimate (8.14a) to bound the factors of $|Y|$ that arise. We thus conclude that RHS (11.17) $= Harmless^{\leq N}$ as desired.

Analysis of $Y^{N-1} \mathscr{K}^{(Y)}_{(\pi-Less\ Dangerous)}[\Psi]$. From (4.7d), we have

$$
Y^{N-1} \mathscr{K}^{(Y)}_{(\pi-Less\ Dangerous)}[\Psi] = \sum_{N_1+N_2=N-1} \frac{1}{2} \left\{ \mathcal{L}^{N_1}_Y (\mu \not{d}^{\#} \mathrm{tr}_{\not{g}}{}^{(Y)}\not{\pi}) \right\} \cdot \not{d} Y^{N_2} \Psi.
$$

(11.18)

We first consider the case $N_1 = N - 1$ on RHS (11.18) and all derivatives fall on $\mathrm{tr}_{\not{g}}{}^{(Y)}\not{\pi}$. Using the fourth inequality in (11.9b), we see that $\frac{1}{2}\mu(\not{d}^{\#} Y^{N-1}\mathrm{tr}_{\not{g}}{}^{(Y)}\not{\pi}) \cdot \not{d}\Psi = \rho\mu(\not{d}^{\#} \mathscr{P}^{N-1}\mathrm{tr}_{\not{g}}\chi) \cdot \not{d}\Psi + Harmless^{\le N}$, which in particular yields the desired second product on RHS (11.3b). All remaining terms on RHS (11.17) have $\le N-2$ derivatives falling on $\not{d}^{\#}\mathrm{tr}_{\not{g}}{}^{(Y)}\not{\pi}$, and the arguments given in our analysis of $\mathscr{K}^{(Y)}_{(\pi-Cancel-1)}[\Psi]$ yield that the corresponding products $= Harmless^{\le N}$ as desired.

Analysis of $Y^{N-1} \mathscr{K}^{(Y)}_{(\pi-Good)}[\Psi]$. From (4.7e), we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
Y^{N-1} \mathscr{K}^{(Y)}_{(\pi-Good)}[\Psi] = &\sum_{N_1+N_2=N-1} \left\{ \frac{1}{2}Y^{N_1}(\mu L \mathrm{tr}_{\not{g}}{}^{(\check{X})}\not{\pi}) + Y^{N_1} L^{(\check{X})}\pi_{L\check{X}} + Y^{N_1} L^{(\check{X})}\pi_{\check{X}\check{X}} \right\} Y^{N_2} L\Psi \\
&+ \frac{1}{2}\sum_{N_1+N_2=N-1} (Y^{N_1} L \mathrm{tr}_{\not{g}}{}^{(Z)}\not{\pi}) Y^{N_2}\check{X}\Psi \\
&- \sum_{N_1+N_2=N-1} \left\{ \mathcal{L}^{N_1}_Y (\mu \mathcal{L}_L{}^{(Z)}\not{\pi}^{\#}_L) + (\mathcal{L}^{N_1}_Y \mathcal{L}_L{}^{(Z)}\not{\pi}^{\#}_{\check{X}}) \right\} \cdot \not{d}Y^{N_2}\Psi. \quad (11.19)
\end{aligned}
$$

We claim that all terms on RHS (11.19) $= Harmless^{\le N}$ without the need to observe any cancellations. The main point is that all deformation tensor components are hit with an L derivative and hence can be bounded with the estimate (11.10). Otherwise, the analysis is essentially the same as our analysis of $Y^{N-1}\mathscr{K}^{(Y)}_{(\pi-Cancel-1)}[\Psi]$.

Analysis of $Y^{N-1}\mathscr{K}^{(Y)}_{(\Psi)}[\Psi]$. We will show that these terms $= Harmless^{\le N}$. The terms in $\mathscr{K}^{(Y)}_{(\Psi)}[\Psi]$ (see (4.8)) are of the form $f(\underline{\gamma})\pi P Z\Psi + f(\underline{\gamma})\not{\Delta}\Psi$ where $P \in \{\not{d}\} \cup \mathscr{P}$, $Z \in \mathscr{Z}$, and $\pi \in \left\{ \mathrm{tr}_{\not{g}}{}^{(Y)}\not{\pi}, {}^{(Y)}\pi_{L\check{X}}, {}^{(Y)}\pi_{\check{X}\check{X}}, {}^{(Y)}\not{\pi}^{\#}_L, {}^{(Y)}\not{\pi}^{\#}_{\check{X}} \right\}$. We therefore conclude that $\left| Y^{N-1}\mathscr{K}^{(Y)}_{(\Psi)}[\Psi] \right| \lesssim \left| \mathscr{Z}^{\le N+1;1}_* \Psi \right| + \left| \mathscr{P}^{\le N}\underline{\gamma} \right| + \left| \mathscr{P}^{[1,N]}_* \underline{\gamma} \right| = Harmless^{\le N}$ by using (8.27), (11.11), and the L^∞ estimates of Prop. 8.10

Analysis of $Y^{N-1}\mathscr{K}^{(Y)}_{(Low)}[\Psi]$. We will show that these terms $= Harmless^{\le N}$. Using Lemma 2.19, we see that (see (4.9)) $\mathscr{K}^{(Y)}_{(Low)}[\Psi] = f(\mathscr{P}^{\le 1}\underline{\gamma}, \not{g}^{-1}, \not{d}x^1, \not{d}x^2, \check{X}\Psi)\pi P\underline{\gamma}$ where π and P are as in the previous paragraph. Hence, we conclude that $Y^{N-1}\mathscr{K}^{(Y)}_{(Low)}[\Psi] = Harmless^{\le N}$ by using the same arguments as in the previous paragraph together with Lemmas 8.4 and 8.5 (to bound the derivatives of $\not{g}^{-1}$ and $\not{d}x$).

Summing the above estimates and recalling the splitting (4.6), we conclude that the main term $Y^{N-1}\left(\mu \mathscr{D}^{(Y)}_\alpha \mathscr{J}^\alpha[\Psi] \right)$ on RHS (11.13) is equal to RHS (11.3b) as desired.

To complete the proof of (11.3b), it remains only for us to show that RHS (11.14) $\lesssim Harmless^{\le N}$. The main point is that $N_2 \le N-1$ in these terms and hence they do not involve the top-order derivatives of μ or $L^1_{(Small)}$, $L^2_{(Small)}$. We first consider

the case $N_1 \leq 9$ in inequality (11.14). Using the bound $\left\| \mathscr{P}^{\leq 9} \mathrm{tr}_{\not g}{}^{(Y)}\pi \right\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_t^u)} \lesssim \varepsilon$ mentioned just below (11.12), we see that when $N_1 \leq 9$, it suffices to bound

$$
\sum_{\substack{N_2+N_3 \leq N-1 \\ N_2 \leq N-2}} \left| Y^{N_2}\left(\mu \mathscr{D}_\alpha^{(Y)} \mathscr{G}^\alpha [Y^{N_3}\Psi] \right) \right|. \tag{11.20}
$$

That is, we must bound the terms $Y^{N_2}\mathscr{K}_{(\pi-Danger)}^{(Y)}[Y^{N_3}\Psi]+\cdots+Y^{N_2}\mathscr{K}_{(Low)}^{(Y)}[Y^{N_3}\Psi]$. To this end, we repeat the proofs of the above estimates for $Y^{N-1}\mathscr{K}_{(\pi-Danger)}^{(Y)}[\Psi] + \cdots + Y^{N-1}\mathscr{K}_{(Low)}^{(Y)}[\Psi]$ but with N_2 in place of $N-1$ and $Y^{N_3}\Psi$ in place of the explicitly written Ψ terms, the key point being that $N_2 \leq N-2$. The same arguments immediately yield that all terms $= Harmless^{\leq N_2+N_3+1} \leq Harmless^{\leq N}$ except for products of the form $(\check{X}Y^{N_3}\Psi)Y^{N_2+1}\mathrm{tr}_{\not g}\chi$ and $\rho(\slashed{d}^\# Y^{N_3}\Psi)\cdot(\mu\slashed{d}Y^{N_2}\mathrm{tr}_{\not g}\chi)$ corresponding to the two explicitly written products on RHS (11.3b). Since $N_2 \leq N-2$, we can bound these two products by $\leq Harmless^{\leq \max\{N_3,N_2+2\}} \leq Harmless^{\leq N}$ with the help of the relation $\rho = \mathrm{f}(\gamma)\gamma$ (see Lemma 2.19), (8.13a), and the L^∞ estimates of Prop. 8.10.

To complete the proof of the desired bound for RHS (11.14), we must handle the case $N_1 \geq 10$ on RHS (11.14) (and thus $N_2+N_3 \leq 7$). The arguments given in the previous paragraph yield that $Y^{N_2}\left(\mu \mathscr{D}_\alpha^{(Y)} \mathscr{G}^\alpha[Y^{N_3}\Psi] \right) = Harmless^{\leq \max\{N_2+N_3+1, N_2+2\}} \leq Harmless^{\leq 9}$. Using this estimate and Lemma 11.1, we deduce that $\left| Y^{N_2}\left(\mu \mathscr{D}_\alpha^{(Y)} \mathscr{G}^\alpha[Y^{N_3}\Psi] \right) \right| \lesssim \varepsilon$. From this estimate, we deduce that the terms on RHS (11.14) with $N_1 \geq 10$ are $\lesssim \left| Y^{\leq N-1}\mathrm{tr}_{\not g}{}^{(Y)}\slashed{\pi} \right|$. Finally, (2.58), (8.13a), and the L^∞ estimates of Prop. 8.10) together yield that $\left| Y^{\leq N-1}\mathrm{tr}_{\not g}{}^{(Y)}\slashed{\pi} \right| \lesssim \left| \mathscr{P}^{\leq N}\gamma \right| = Harmless^{\leq N}$ as desired. We have thus proved (11.3b).

The proof of (11.3a) is essentially the same with a few minor differences that we now mention. The term $Y^{N-1}\mathscr{K}_{(\pi-Danger)}^{(L)}[\Psi]$ (see (4.7a)) is actually trivial in this case because ${}^{(L)}\slashed{\pi}_L^\# = 0$ (see (2.77b)). We again observe cancellation of the top-order eikonal function quantities in $Y^{N-1}\mathscr{K}_{(\pi-Cancel-1)}^{(L)}[\Psi]$ (see (4.7b)) up to $Harmless^{\leq N}$ errors. Specifically, with the help of (11.8a)–(11.8b) and the fact that ${}^{(L)}\slashed{\pi}_L^\# = 0$, we observe cancellation of $\slashed{\triangle}Y^{N-1}\mu$. In contrast, without the need to observe any cancellations, all terms in $Y^{N-1}\mathscr{K}_{(\pi-Cancel-2)}^{(L)}[\Psi]$ (see (4.7c)) $= Harmless^{\leq N}$, thanks to the estimate (11.8b) for $\slashed{\mathcal{L}}_{\mathscr{P}}^{N-1}\slashed{d}^{\#(L)}\pi_{L\check{X}}$ and the fact that ${}^{(L)}\slashed{\pi}_L^\# = 0$. The main term on RHS (11.3a) comes from the case when all $N-1$ derivatives in the term $Y^{N-1}\mathscr{K}_{(\pi-Less\ Dangerous)}^{(L)}[\Psi]$ fall on the factor $\mathrm{tr}_{\not g}{}^{(L)}\slashed{\pi}$ from (4.7d), where we substitute RHS (2.77c) for ${}^{(L)}\slashed{\pi}$. All other terms on RHS (11.3a) are $Harmless^{\leq N}$, as in the proof of (11.3b).

To prove (11.3c), we first note that $\mathscr{P}^N$ must be either of the form $\mathscr{P}^{N-1}L$ or $\mathscr{P}^{N-1}Y$, where $\mathscr{P}^{N-1}$ contains a factor of L. In the former case, by using essentially the same arguments we used in the proof of (11.3a) but with $\mathscr{P}^{N-1}L$ in the role of $Y^{N-1}L$, we deduce that

$$\Box_g(\mathscr{P}^{N-1}L\Psi) = (d^{\#}\Psi)\cdot(\mu d\!\!\!/ \mathscr{P}^{N-1}\mathrm{tr}_{g}\chi) + Harmless^{\leq N}. \tag{11.21}$$

The L^{∞} estimates of Prop. 8.10 imply that the first product on RHS (11.21) is $\lesssim$ $\left|\mathscr{P}^N\mathrm{tr}_{g}\chi\right|$, where $\mathscr{P}^N$ contains a factor of L. We now commute the operator L to the front and use (8.19a) with $f = \mathrm{tr}_{g}\chi$, (8.13a), and the L^{∞} estimates of Prop. 8.10 to deduce that the commutator error terms $= Harmless^{\leq N}$. We then use (8.29a) to bound the non-commutator term as follows: $\left|L\mathscr{P}^{N-1}\mathrm{tr}_{g}\chi\right| \lesssim \left|\mathscr{P}^{\leq N+1}\Psi\right| + \left|\mathscr{P}^{\leq N}\gamma\right| =$ $Harmless^{\leq N}$. We have thus proved (11.3c) in this case.

In the remaining case of (11.3c), in which $\mathscr{P}^N$ is of the form $\mathscr{P}^{N-1}Y$ and $\mathscr{P}^{N-1}$ *contains a factor of* L, we use essentially the same arguments we used in the proof of (11.3b) but with $\mathscr{P}^{N-1}Y$ in the role of Y^N to deduce

$$\Box_g(\mathscr{P}^{N-1}Y\Psi) = (\check{X}\Psi)\mathscr{P}^{N-1}Y\mathrm{tr}_{g}\chi + \rho(d^{\#}\Psi)\cdot(\mu d\!\!\!/ \mathscr{P}^{N-1}\mathrm{tr}_{g}\chi) + Harmless^{\leq N}, \tag{11.22}$$

where the operators $\mathscr{P}^{N-1}$ in (11.22) contain a factor of L. The L^{∞} estimates of Prop. 8.10 imply that the first product on RHS (11.22) is $\lesssim \left|\mathscr{P}^N\mathrm{tr}_{g}\chi\right|$, where $\mathscr{P}^N$ contains a factor of L. Therefore, the arguments from the previous paragraph yield that this term $= Harmless^{\leq N}$ as desired. Also using that $\rho = f(\gamma)\gamma$ (see (2.89c)), we find that the second product on RHS (11.22) is $\lesssim \left|\mathscr{P}^N\mathrm{tr}_{g}\chi\right|$, where $\mathscr{P}^N$ contains a factor of L. The arguments from the previous paragraph yield that this term $= Harmless^{\leq N}$ as desired. We have thus proved (11.3c) and completed the proof of Prop. 11.2. $\qquad \blacksquare$

11.5 Pointwise Estimates for the Fully Modified Quantities

In this subsection, we obtain pointwise estimates for the most difficult product we encounter in our energy estimates: $(\check{X}\Psi)Y^N\mathrm{tr}_{g}\chi$. The main result is Prop. 11.10. The proof of the proposition relies on pointwise estimates for the fully modified quantities, which we first derive. We start with a simple lemma in which we obtain pointwise estimates for some of the inhomogeneous terms in the transport equations verified by the fully modified and partially modified quantities.

Lemma 11.8 (**Pointwise estimates for** $\mathscr{P}^N\mathfrak{X}$ **and** $\mathscr{P}^N\widetilde{\mathfrak{X}}$). *Assume that* $N \leq 18$. *Let* $\mathfrak{X}$ *be the quantity defined in* (6.8b), *let* $\widetilde{\mathfrak{X}}$ *be the quantity defined in* (6.10), *let* $^{(Y^{N-1})}\widetilde{\mathfrak{X}}$ *be the quantity from* (6.9b) *(with* Y^{N-1} *in the role of* $\mathscr{P}^N$), *and let* $^{(\mathscr{P}^{N-1})}\mathfrak{B}$ *be the quantity defined in* (6.16). *Under the data-size and bootstrap assumptions of Subsects.* 7.4–7.5 *and the smallness assumptions of Subsect.* 7.7, *the following pointwise estimates hold on* $\mathcal{M}_{T_{(Boot)},U_0}$:

$$\left|Y^N\mathfrak{X} + G_{LL}\check{X}Y^N\Psi\right| \lesssim \mu\left|\mathscr{P}^{\leq N+1}\Psi\right| + \left|\mathscr{Z}_*^{\leq N;1}\Psi\right| + \left|\mathscr{P}^{\leq N}\gamma\right| + \left|\mathscr{P}_*^{[1,N]}\underline{\gamma}\right|, \tag{11.23a}$$

$$\left|\mathscr{P}^{\leq N}\mathfrak{X}\right| \lesssim \left|\mathscr{Z}_*^{\leq N+1;1}\Psi\right| + \left|\mathscr{P}^{\leq N}\gamma\right| + \left|\mathscr{P}_*^{[1,N]}\underline{\gamma}\right|, \tag{11.23b}$$

$$\left|\mathscr{P}^N\widetilde{\mathfrak{X}}\right| \lesssim \left|\mathscr{P}^{\leq N+1}\Psi\right| + \left|\mathscr{P}^{\leq N}\gamma\right|, \tag{11.23c}$$

$$\left| Y^{(Y^{N-1})}\widetilde{\mathfrak{X}} \right| \lesssim \left| \mathscr{P}^{\leq N+1}\Psi \right|, \tag{11.23d}$$

$$\left| {}^{(\mathscr{P}^{N-1})}\mathfrak{B} \right| \lesssim \varepsilon \left| \mathscr{P}^{\leq N}\gamma \right|. \tag{11.23e}$$

Proof See Subsect. 8.2 for some comments on the analysis. Throughout this proof, we silently use the L^∞ estimates of Prop. 8.10.

To prove (11.23a), we first use (6.8b) and Lemma 2.19 to obtain $\mathfrak{X} = -G_{LL}\check{X}\Psi + \upmu f(\gamma, \mathit{g}^{-1}, \mathit{d}x^1, \mathit{d}x^2)P\Psi$. We now apply Y^N to this identity and bring the top-order term $G_{LL}\check{X}Y^N\Psi$ over to the left (as indicated on LHS (11.23a)), which leaves the commutator terms $[G_{LL}, Y^N]\check{X}\Psi$ and $G_{LL}[\check{X}, Y^N]\Psi$ on the RHS. To bound $\left| Y^N \left\{ \upmu f(\gamma, \mathit{g}^{-1}, \mathit{d}x^1, \mathit{d}x^2)P\Psi \right\} \right|$ by $\leq$ RHS (11.23a), we use Lemmas 8.4 and 8.5. Note that we have paid special attention to terms in which all derivatives Y^N fall on $P\Psi$; these terms are bounded by the first term on RHS (11.23a). To bound $\left| [G_{LL}, Y^N]\check{X}\Psi \right|$ by $\leq$ RHS (11.23a), we use the fact that $G_{LL} = f(\gamma)$ (see Lemma 2.19). To bound $\left| G_{LL}[\check{X}, Y^N]\Psi \right|$ by $\leq$ RHS (11.23a), we also use the commutator estimate (8.24) with $f = \Psi$. The proof of (11.23b) is similar but simpler and we omit the details. The same is true for the proof of (11.23c) since by Lemma 2.19, we have $\widetilde{\mathfrak{X}} = f(\gamma, \mathit{g}^{-1}, \mathit{d}x^1, \mathit{d}x^2)P\Psi$.

To derive (11.23d), we first use (6.9b) and Lemma 2.19 to deduce that $Y^{(Y^{N-1})}\widetilde{\mathfrak{X}} = Y\left\{ f(\gamma, \mathit{g}^{-1}, \mathit{d}x^1, \mathit{d}x^2)\mathscr{P}^N\Psi \right\}$. The estimate (11.23d) now follows easily from the previous expression and Lemmas 8.4 and 8.5.

We now prove (11.23e). We bound term $\mathscr{P}^{N-1}(\mathrm{tr}_{\mathit{g}}\chi)^2$ from RHS (6.16) by $\leq$ RHS (11.23e) with the help of inequality (8.13a). We bound the term $[G_{LL}, \mathscr{P}^{N-1}]\slashed{\Delta}\Psi$ using the aforementioned relation $G_{LL} = f(\gamma)$ and Cor. 8.9. To bound the term $G_{LL}[\slashed{\Delta}, \mathscr{P}^{N-1}]\Psi$, we also use the commutator estimate (8.20b) with Ψ in the role of f and Cor. 8.11. We bound the term $[L, \mathscr{P}^{N-1}]\mathrm{tr}_{\mathit{g}}\chi$ with the help of the commutator estimate (8.19a) with $\mathrm{tr}_{\mathit{g}}\chi$ in the role of f and inequality (8.13a). We bound $[L, \mathscr{P}^{N-1}]\widetilde{\mathfrak{X}}$ with the help of the commutator estimate (8.19a) with $f = \widetilde{\mathfrak{X}}$ and (11.23c). To bound $L\left\{ {}^{(\mathscr{P}^{N-1})}\widetilde{\mathfrak{X}} - \mathscr{P}^{N-1}\widetilde{\mathfrak{X}} \right\}$, we first note that (6.9b), (6.10), and the Leibniz rule imply that the magnitude of this term is $\lesssim \sum_{\substack{N_1+N_2 \leq N \\ N_1 \geq 1}} \left| \slashed{\mathcal{L}}_{\mathscr{P}}^{N_1} G_{(Frame)}^{\#} \right| \left| \mathscr{P}^{N_2+1}\Psi \right| + \left| G_{(Frame)}^{\#} \right| \left| [L, L\mathscr{P}^{N-1}]\Psi \right|$. Since Lemma 2.19 implies that $G_{(Frame)}^{\#} = f(\gamma, \mathit{g}^{-1}, \mathit{d}x^1, \mathit{d}x^2)$, the desired bound for the sum follows from Lemmas 8.4 and 8.5. To bound the term $\left| G_{(Frame)}^{\#} \right| \left| [L, L\mathscr{P}^{N-1}]\Psi \right|$ by $\leq$ RHS (11.23e), we also use the commutator estimate (8.19a) with $f = \Psi$ and Cor. 8.11. This completes the proof of (11.23e) and finishes the proof of the lemma. □

Recall that the fully modified quantities ${}^{(\mathscr{P}^N)}\mathscr{X}$ verify the transport equation (6.11). In the next lemma, we integrate this transport equation and derive pointwise estimates for ${}^{(\mathscr{P}^N)}\mathscr{X}$. The lemma is a preliminary ingredient in the proof of Prop. 11.10.

Lemma 11.9 (**Estimates for solutions to the transport equation verified by** $^{(\mathscr{P}^N)}\mathscr{X}$). *Assume that* $1 \leq N \leq 18$ *and let* $^{(\mathscr{P}^N)}\mathscr{X}$ *and* $\mathfrak{X}$ *be as in Prop.* 6.2. *Assume that* $\mathscr{P}^N = Y^N$. *Under the data-size and bootstrap assumptions of Subsects.* 7.4–7.5 *and the smallness assumptions of Subsect.* 7.7, *the following pointwise estimate holds on* $\mathcal{M}_{T_{(Boot)}, U_0}$:

$$
\left| ^{(Y^N)}\mathscr{X} \right| (t, u, \vartheta) \leq C \left| ^{(Y^N)}\mathscr{X} \right| (0, u, \vartheta)
$$
$$
+ \boxed{2} (1 + C\varepsilon) \int_{s=0}^{t} \frac{[L\mu(s, u, \vartheta)]_-}{\mu(s, u, \vartheta)} \left| Y^N \mathfrak{X} \right| (s, u, \vartheta) \, ds
$$
$$
+ C \int_{s=0}^{t} \left\{ \left| \mathscr{Z}_*^{\leq N+1;1} \Psi \right| + \left| \mathscr{P}^{\leq N} \gamma \right| + \left| \mathscr{P}_*^{[1,N]} \underline{\gamma} \right| \right\} (s, u, \vartheta) \, ds.
$$
(11.24)

Proof To prove (11.24), we set $\mathscr{P}^N = Y^N$ in equation (6.11) and, in this part of the proof, we view the terms in the equation as functions of (s, u, ϑ). Corresponding to the factor $\left(-2 \dfrac{L\mu}{\mu} + 2\mathrm{tr}_{\mathscr{g}}\chi \right)$ on the left-hand side, we define the integrating factor

$$
\iota(s, u, \vartheta) := \exp \left\{ \int_{t'=0}^{s} \left(-2 \frac{L\mu}{\mu}(t', u, \vartheta) + 2\mathrm{tr}_{\mathscr{g}}\chi \right) (t', u, \vartheta) \, dt' \right\}.
$$
(11.25)

We then rewrite (6.11) as $L(\iota \, ^{(\mathscr{P}^N)}\mathscr{X}) = \iota \times \mathrm{RHS}$ (6.11) and integrate this equation with respect to s from $s = 0$ to $s = t$. Using the estimate (8.34) for $\mathrm{tr}_{\mathscr{g}}\chi$, we find that

$$
\iota(s, u, \vartheta) = (1 + \mathcal{O}(\varepsilon)) \frac{\mu^2(0, u, \vartheta)}{\mu^2(s, u, \vartheta)}.
$$
(11.26)

From Def. 10.3 and the estimates (10.17) and (10.20), we find that

$$
\sup_{0 \leq s' \leq t} \frac{\mu(t, u, \vartheta)}{\mu(s', u, \vartheta)} \leq C.
$$
(11.27)

From (11.26) and (11.27), it is straightforward to see that the desired bound (11.24) follows once we establish the following bounds for terms generated by the terms on RHS (6.11) (recall that $\mathscr{P}^N = Y^N$):

$$
\left| \mu[L, Y^N] \mathrm{tr}_{\mathscr{g}}\chi \right| (s, u, \vartheta)
$$
$$
\leq C\varepsilon \left| ^{(Y^N)}\mathscr{X} \right| (s, u, \vartheta) + C\varepsilon \left| \mathscr{Z}_*^{\leq N+1;1} \Psi \right| (s, u, \vartheta) + C\varepsilon \left| \mathscr{P}^{\leq N} \gamma \right| (s, u, \vartheta)
$$
$$
+ C\varepsilon \left| \mathscr{P}_*^{[1,N]} \underline{\gamma} \right| (s, u, \vartheta),
$$
(11.28)

$$2\left(\frac{\mu(t, u, \vartheta)}{\mu(s, u, \vartheta)}\right)^2 \left|\frac{L\mu(s, u, \vartheta)}{\mu(s, u, \vartheta)}\right| \left|Y^N \mathfrak{X}\right| (s, u, \vartheta)$$

$$\leq 2(1 + C\varepsilon) \left|\frac{[L\mu]_-(s, u, \vartheta)}{\mu(s, u, \vartheta)}\right| \left|Y^N \mathfrak{X}\right| (s, u, \vartheta)$$

$$+ C\left|\mathscr{Z}_*^{\leq N+1;1}\Psi\right| (s, u, \vartheta) + C\left|\mathscr{P}^{\leq N}\gamma\right| (s, u, \vartheta) + C\left|\mathscr{P}_*^{[1,N]}\underline{\gamma}\right| (s, u, \vartheta),$$

(11.29)

all remaining terms on RHS (6.11) are in magnitude

$$\leq C\left|\mathscr{Z}_*^{\leq N+1;1}\Psi\right| (s, u, \vartheta) + C\left|\mathscr{P}^{\leq N}\gamma\right| (s, u, \vartheta) + C\left|\mathscr{P}_*^{[1,N]}\underline{\gamma}\right| (s, u, \vartheta).$$

(11.30)

We note that in deriving (11.24), the product $C\varepsilon\iota \left|^{(Y^N)}\mathscr{X}\right|$ arising from the first term on RHS (11.28) needs to be treated with Gronwall's inequality. However, due to the small factor ε, this product has only the negligible effect of contributing to the factors of $C\varepsilon$ on RHS (11.24).

To derive (11.29), we first note the trivial bound $\left|\frac{L\mu(s, u, \vartheta)}{\mu(s, u, \vartheta)}\right| \leq \left|\frac{[L\mu]_-(s, u, \vartheta)}{\mu(s, u, \vartheta)}\right| +$ $\left|\frac{[L\mu]_+(s, u, \vartheta)}{\mu(s, u, \vartheta)}\right|$. To bound the terms on LHS (11.29) arising from the factor $\left|\frac{[L\mu]_+(s, u, \vartheta)}{\mu(s, u, \vartheta)}\right|$ by $\leq$ the terms on the last line of RHS (11.29), we use (10.11), (11.27), and the estimate (11.23b). To bound the terms on LHS (11.29) arising from the factor $\left|\frac{[L\mu]_-(s, u, \vartheta)}{\mu(s, u, \vartheta)}\right|$, we consider the partitions from Def. 10.3. When $(u, \vartheta) \in {}^{(+)}\mathcal{V}_t^u$, we use the bounds (10.19) and (11.27) to deduce that $\left(\frac{\mu(t, u, \vartheta)}{\mu(s, u, \vartheta)}\right)^2 \left|\frac{[L\mu]_-(s, u, \vartheta)}{\mu(s, u, \vartheta)}\right| \leq C\varepsilon$. Combining this bound with (11.23b), we easily conclude that the terms of interest are $\leq$ the terms on the last line of RHS (11.29). Finally, when $(u, \vartheta) \in {}^{(-)}\mathcal{V}_t^u$, we use (10.20) to deduce that

$$2\left(\frac{\mu(t, u, \vartheta)}{\mu(s, u, \vartheta)}\right)^2 \left|\frac{[L\mu]_-(s, u, \vartheta)}{\mu(s, u, \vartheta)}\right| \leq 2(1 + C\varepsilon) \left|\frac{[L\mu]_-(s, u, \vartheta)}{\mu(s, u, \vartheta)}\right|.$$

Thus, we conclude that the terms under consideration are $\leq$ the terms on the first line of RHS (11.29) as desired.

To deduce (11.28), we use definition (6.8a), use the commutator estimate (8.19a) with $f = \mathrm{tr}_{g\!\!/}\chi$, the estimates (8.34), (8.13a), and (8.32a), and Cor. 8.11 to deduce that

$$\mu[L, Y^N]\mathrm{tr}_{g\!\!/}\chi \lesssim \varepsilon\mu\left|Y^N\mathrm{tr}_{g\!\!/}\chi\right| + \varepsilon\left|\mathscr{P}^{\leq N}\gamma\right|$$

$$\lesssim \varepsilon\left|^{(Y^N)}\mathscr{X}\right| + \varepsilon\left|\mathscr{P}^{\leq N}\gamma\right| + \varepsilon\left|Y^N\mathfrak{X}\right|.$$

(11.31)

To bound the last term on RHS (11.31), we simply quote (11.23b). We have thus proved the desired estimate (11.28).

We now prove (11.30). To bound the term $2\mathrm{tr}_{\displaystyle g}\chi Y^N \mathfrak{X}$ from RHS (6.11), we use the estimate (8.34) for $\mathrm{tr}_{\displaystyle g}\chi$ and (11.23b).

To bound the term $[L, Y^N]\mathfrak{X}$ from RHS (6.11), we first note that (11.23b) and the L^∞ estimates of Prop. 8.10 yield that $\left\| \mathscr{P}^{\leq 9}\mathfrak{X} \right\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_t^u)} \leq C\varepsilon$. Hence, using the commutator estimate 8.8 with $f = \mathfrak{X}$ and (11.23b), we conclude that $\left| [L, Y^N]\mathfrak{X} \right| \lesssim \left| \mathscr{Z}_*^{\leq N+1;1}\Psi \right| + \left| \mathscr{P}^{\leq N}\gamma \right| + \left| \mathscr{P}_*^{[1,N]}\underline{\gamma} \right|$ as desired.

To bound the product $[\mathscr{P}^N, L\mu]\mathrm{tr}_{\displaystyle g}\chi$ from RHS (6.11), we first note that its magnitude is $\lesssim \left\| \mathscr{P}^{[1,9]}L\mu \right\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_t^u)} \left| \mathscr{P}^{\leq N-1}\mathrm{tr}_{\displaystyle g}\chi \right| + \left| \mathscr{P}^{\leq N}L\mu \right| \left\| \mathscr{P}^{\leq 8}\mathrm{tr}_{\displaystyle g}\chi \right\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_t^u)}$. We now bound the first product in the previous inequality by $\lesssim$ RHS (11.30) with the help of (8.13a) and (8.31b) and the second by $\lesssim$ RHS (11.30) with the help of (8.28b) and (8.34). A similar argument that takes into account the estimates (8.29a), (8.31a), (8.31b) and (8.32a) yields the same bound for the term $[\mu, \mathscr{P}^N]L\mathrm{tr}_{\displaystyle g}\chi$ from RHS (6.11). A similar argument yields the same bound for the term $\left\{ \mathscr{P}^N\left(\mu(\mathrm{tr}_{\displaystyle g}\chi)^2 \right) - 2\mu\mathrm{tr}_{\displaystyle g}\chi\mathscr{P}^N\mathrm{tr}_{\displaystyle g}\chi \right\}$ from RHS (6.11), the key point being that the top-order term $\mathscr{P}^N\mathrm{tr}_{\displaystyle g}\chi$ cancels from this difference. To bound the last term $\mathscr{P}^N\mathfrak{A}$ from RHS (6.11) in magnitude by $\lesssim$ RHS (11.30), we apply $\mathscr{P}^N$ to both sides of (6.4). The desired bound now follows from Lemmas 8.4 and 8.5 and the L^∞ estimates of Prop. 8.10. We have thus established (11.24). □

We now use Lemmas 11.9 and 11.8 to establish the proposition.

Remark 11.1 (**Boxed constants affect high-order energy blowup-rates**). The "boxed constants" such as the $\boxed{2}$ appearing on the RHS of inequality (11.32) and the $\boxed{8.1}$ appearing on the RHS of inequality (14.2a) are important because they affect the blowup-rate of our high-order energy estimates with respect to powers of $\mu_\star^{-1}$.

Proposition 11.10 (**The key pointwise estimate for** $(\check{X}\Psi)Y^N\mathrm{tr}_{\displaystyle g}\chi$). *Assume that* $1 \leq N \leq 18$. *Under the assumptions of Lemma 11.9, the following pointwise estimate holds on* $\mathcal{M}_{T_{(Boot)},U_0}$:

$$
\left| (\check{X}\Psi)Y^N\mathrm{tr}_{\displaystyle g}\chi \right|(t,u,\vartheta)
$$
$$
\leq \boxed{2}\left\| \frac{[L\mu]_-}{\mu} \right\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_t^u)} \left| \check{X}Y^N\Psi \right|(t,u,\vartheta)
$$
$$
+ \boxed{4}(1+C\varepsilon)\frac{\|[L\mu]_-\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_t^u)}}{\mu_\star(t,u)} \int_{t'=0}^{t} \frac{\|[L\mu]_-\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_{t'}^u)}}{\mu_\star(t',u)} \left| \check{X}Y^N\Psi \right|(t',u,\vartheta)\,dt' + \mathrm{Error},
$$

$$
\tag{11.32}
$$

where

$$
|\mathrm{Error}|(t,u,\vartheta)
$$
$$
\lesssim \frac{1}{\mu_\star(t,u)}\left| {}^{(Y^N)}\mathscr{X} \right|(0,u,\vartheta) + \left| \mathscr{Z}_*^{\leq N+1;1}\Psi \right|(t,u,\vartheta)
$$

$$+ \frac{1}{\mu_\star(t,u)} \left| \mathcal{Z}_*^{\leq N;1} \Psi \right| (t,u,\vartheta)$$

$$+ \frac{1}{\mu_\star(t,u)} \left| \mathcal{P}^{\leq N} \gamma \right| (t,u,\vartheta) + \frac{1}{\mu_\star(t,u)} \left| \mathcal{P}_*^{[1,N]} \underline{\gamma} \right| (t,u,\vartheta)$$

$$+ \varepsilon \frac{1}{\mu_\star(t,u)} \int_{t'=0}^{t} \frac{1}{\mu_\star(t',u)} \left| \mathcal{Z}_*^{\leq N+1;1} \Psi \right| (t',u,\vartheta) \, dt'$$

$$+ \frac{1}{\mu_\star(t,u)} \int_{t'=0}^{t} \left| \mathcal{Z}_*^{\leq N+1;1} \Psi \right| (t',u,\vartheta) \, dt'$$

$$+ \frac{1}{\mu_\star(t,u)} \int_{t'=0}^{t} \frac{1}{\mu_\star(t',u)} \left\{ \left| \mathcal{Z}_*^{\leq N;1} \Psi \right| + \left| \mathcal{P}^{\leq N} \gamma \right| + \left| \mathcal{P}_*^{[1,N]} \underline{\gamma} \right| \right\} (t',u,\vartheta) \, dt'. \tag{11.33}$$

Furthermore, we have the following less precise pointwise estimate:

$$\left| \mu Y^N \mathrm{tr}_{g̸} \chi \right| (t,u,\vartheta)$$

$$\lesssim \left| {}^{(Y^N)} \mathscr{X} \right| (0,u,\vartheta) + \mu \left| \mathcal{P}^{N+1} \Psi \right| (t,u,\vartheta) + \left| \check{X} \mathcal{P}^N \Psi \right| (t,u,\vartheta)$$

$$+ \left| \mathcal{Z}_*^{\leq N;1} \Psi \right| (t,u,\vartheta) + \left| \mathcal{P}^{\leq N} \gamma \right| (t,u,\vartheta) + \left| \mathcal{P}_*^{[1,N]} \underline{\gamma} \right| (t,u,\vartheta)$$

$$+ \int_{t'=0}^{t} \frac{1}{\mu_\star(t',u)} \left| \check{X} \mathcal{P}^N \Psi \right| (t',u,\vartheta) \, dt' + \int_{t'=0}^{t} \left| \mathcal{Z}_*^{\leq N+1;1} \Psi \right| (t',u,\vartheta) \, dt'$$

$$+ \int_{t'=0}^{t} \frac{1}{\mu_\star(t',u)} \left\{ \left| \mathcal{Z}_*^{\leq N;1} \Psi \right| + \left| \mathcal{P}^{\leq N} \gamma \right| + \left| \mathcal{P}_*^{[1,N]} \underline{\gamma} \right| \right\} (t',u,\vartheta) \, dt'. \tag{11.34}$$

Proof We first prove (11.32)–(11.33). Using (6.8a) and (6.8b), we split

$$(\check{X}\Psi) Y^N \mathrm{tr}_{g̸} \chi = -\frac{\check{X}\Psi}{\mu} Y^N \mathfrak{X} + \frac{\check{X}\Psi}{\mu} {}^{(Y^N)} \mathscr{X}. \tag{11.35}$$

We now bound the first product on RHS (11.35). Using (2.62) and (11.23a), we deduce that

$$\left| \frac{\check{X}\Psi}{\mu} Y^N \mathfrak{X} \right| \leq 2 \left| \frac{L\mu}{\mu} \right| \left| \check{X} Y^N \Psi \right| + C \left| \frac{1}{2} G_{LL} L\Psi + G_{LX} L\Psi \right| \left| \check{X} Y^N \Psi \right|$$

$$+ C \left| \check{X}\Psi \right| \left| \mathcal{P}^{\leq N+1} \Psi \right| + C \left| \frac{\check{X}\Psi}{\mu} \right| \left\{ \left| \mathcal{Z}_*^{\leq N;1} \Psi \right| + \left| \mathcal{P}^{\leq N} \gamma \right| + \left| \mathcal{P}_*^{[1,N]} \underline{\gamma} \right| \right\}. \tag{11.36}$$

To handle the first product on RHS (11.36), we use (10.11) to deduce that $2 \left| \frac{L\mu}{\mu} \right| \leq$

$2 \left| \frac{[L\mu]_-}{\mu} \right| + 2 \left| \frac{[L\mu]_+}{\mu} \right| \leq 2 \left\| \frac{[L\mu]_-}{\mu} \right\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_t^u)} + C$, which easily leads to the product

under consideration being bounded by $\leq$ the sum of the first term on RHS (11.32) and the second term on RHS (11.33). To handle the second product on RHS (11.36), we first note that by Lemma 2.19, we have $G_{LL}, G_{LX} = \mathrm{f}(\gamma)$. The L^∞ estimates of Prop. 8.10 thus yield that $\left| \frac{1}{2} G_{LL} L\Psi + G_{LX} L\Psi \right| \leq C\varepsilon$, from which we easily deduce that the second product on RHS (11.36) is $\leq$ the term $|\mathrm{Error}|$ from (11.33). Moreover, it is easy to deduce that the remaining terms on RHS (11.36) are $\leq |\mathrm{Error}|$, thanks to the estimate $\left\| \check{X}\Psi \right\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_t^u)} \leq C$ (that is, (8.30a)).

We now bound the second product $\frac{\check{X}\Psi}{\mu}(Y^N)\mathscr{X}$ on RHS (11.35). We start by multiplying both sides of (11.24) by $\frac{\check{X}\Psi}{\mu}$. We first address the product of $\frac{\check{X}\Psi}{\mu}$ and the second product $\boxed{2}(1 + C\varepsilon)\cdots$ on RHS (11.24). We now use inequality (11.23a) to substitute for the term $\left| Y^N\mathscr{X} \right|$ appearing in the integrand. The easy terms to bound are those that arise from RHS (11.23a); using the bound $\left\| \check{X}\Psi \right\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_t^u)} \leq C$ mentioned above and the bound $\| L\mu \|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_t^u)} \leq C$ (that is, (8.31a)), it is easy to see that their contribution to the product of $\frac{\check{X}\Psi}{\mu}$ and the first product $\boxed{2}(1 + C\varepsilon)\cdots$ is $\leq$ the term $|\mathrm{Error}|$ from (11.33). It remains for us bound the error term generated by the main part of the integrand factor $\left| Y^N\mathscr{X} \right|$, which is given by the term $G_{LL}\check{X}Y^N\Psi$ from LHS (11.23a). Specifically, we must bound

$$\boxed{2}(1 + C\varepsilon)\left\{ \frac{\check{X}\Psi}{\mu} \right\}(t, u, \vartheta) \int_{s=0}^t \frac{[L\mu]_-(s, u, \vartheta)}{\mu(s, u, \vartheta)} \left| G_{LL}\check{X}Y^N\Psi \right|(s, u, \vartheta)\, ds.$$

$$(11.37)$$

We use (9.7) to replace the factor $G_{LL}(s, u, \vartheta)$ with $G_{LL}(t, u, \vartheta)$ up to the error factor $C\varepsilon$. We then pull $G_{LL}(t, u, \vartheta)$ out of the ds integral, multiply it against $\left\{ \frac{\check{X}\Psi}{\mu} \right\}(t, u, \vartheta)$, and use the arguments used to deduce (11.36) as well as those given just below it to deduce that $\left\{ G_{LL}\frac{\check{X}\Psi}{\mu} \right\}(t, u, \vartheta) = \boxed{2}\frac{[L\mu]_-(t, u, \vartheta)}{\mu(t, u, \vartheta)} + \mathcal{O}(1)$.

The portion of (11.37) corresponding to the factor $\boxed{2}\frac{[L\mu]_-(t, u, \vartheta)}{\mu(t, u, \vartheta)}$ is clearly $\leq$ the product $\boxed{4}(1 + C\varepsilon)\cdots$ on the second line of RHS (11.32). Moreover, using the bound $\| L\mu \|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_t^u)} \leq C$ mentioned above to bound the $[L\mu]_-(s, u, \vartheta)$ integrand factor and also using the bound $\left\| \check{X}\Psi \right\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_t^u)} \leq C$ mentioned above, we find that the portion of (11.37) corresponding to the factor $\mathcal{O}(1)$ from above is $\leq$ the last product on RHS (11.33) (here we are using the simple fact that the factor $\frac{1}{\mu_\star(t, u)}$ on the outside of the integral in the last product is ≥ 1). Similarly, the error factor $C\varepsilon$ mentioned

above, generated by replacing $G_{LL}(s, u, \vartheta)$ with $G_{LL}(t, u, \vartheta)$, leads to a term that is $\lesssim$ the term on RHS (11.33) featuring the coefficient ε.

To complete the proof, it remains for us to bound the magnitude of the product of $\dfrac{\breve{X}\Psi}{\mu}$ and the term $C \left| {}^{(Y^N)}\mathscr{X} \right| (0, u, \vartheta)$ on RHS (11.24) by $\leq |\text{Error}|$ and the magnitude of the product of $\dfrac{\breve{X}\Psi}{\mu}$ and the last time integral $C \int_{s=0}^{t} \cdots$ on RHS (11.24) by $\leq |\text{Error}|$, where $|\text{Error}|$ verifies (11.33) in each case. The desired estimates follow easily from the bound $\left\| \breve{X}\Psi \right\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_t^u)} \leq C$ mentioned above. We have thus proved (11.32)–(11.33).

The proof of (11.34) is similar but simpler so we omit the details. The main simplifications are the presence of an additional power of μ on LHS (11.34) and that we no longer have to observe the special structure that led to the factor $L\mu$ on RHS (11.36). $\square$

11.6 Pointwise Estimates for the Error Terms Generated by the Multiplier Vectorfield

In this subsection, we derive simple pointwise estimates for the energy estimate error terms generated by the deformation tensor of the multiplier vectorfield T.

Lemma 11.11 (**Pointwise bounds for the error terms generated by the deformation tensor of** T). *Consider the multiplier vectorfield error terms* ${}^{(T)}\mathfrak{P}_{(1)}[\Psi], \cdots, {}^{(T)}\mathfrak{P}_{(5)}[\Psi]$ *defined in* (3.14a)–(3.14e). *Let* $\varsigma > 0$ *be a real number. Under the data-size and bootstrap assumptions of Subsects. 7.4–7.5 and the smallness assumptions of Subsect. 7.7, the following pointwise inequality holds on* $\mathcal{M}_{T_{(Boot)},U_0}$ *(without any absolute value taken on the left), where the implicit constants are independent of* ς:

$$\sum_{i=1}^{5} {}^{(T)}\mathfrak{P}_{(i)}[\Psi] \lesssim (1 + \varsigma^{-1})(L\Psi)^2 + (1 + \varsigma^{-1})(\breve{X}\Psi)^2 + \mu|\not{d}\Psi|^2 + \varsigma\mathring{\delta}_*|\not{d}\Psi|^2$$

$$+ \frac{1}{\sqrt{T_{(Boot)} - t}}\mu|\not{d}\Psi|^2. \tag{11.38}$$

Proof See Subsect. 8.2 for some comments on the analysis. Using the schematic relations (2.90c) and (2.90d), the estimate (8.11b), and the L^∞ estimates of Props. 8.10 and 9.2, it is straightforward to verify that the terms in braces on the RHS of (3.14a), (3.14b), (3.14d), and (3.14e) are bounded in magnitude by $\lesssim 1$. It follows that for $i = 1, 2, 4, 5$, $\left| {}^{(T)}\mathfrak{P}_{(i)}[\Psi] \right|$ is $\lesssim$ the sum of the terms on the first line of RHS (11.38). The factors of ς and $\mathring{\delta}_*$ appear on RHS (11.38) because we use Young's inequality to bound ${}^{(T)}\mathfrak{P}_{(4)}[\Psi] \lesssim |L\Psi||\not{d}\Psi| \leq \varsigma^{-1}\mathring{\delta}_*^{-1}(L\Psi)^2 + \varsigma\mathring{\delta}_*|\not{d}\Psi|^2 \leq C\varsigma^{-1}(L\Psi)^2 + C\varsigma\mathring{\delta}_*|\not{d}\Psi|^2$. Similar remarks apply to ${}^{(T)}\mathfrak{P}_{(5)}[\Psi]$.

To bound the term ${}^{(T)}\mathfrak{P}_{(3)}[\Psi]$, we also need to use the estimates (10.11) and (10.13), which allow us to bound the first two terms in braces on RHS (3.14c). Note that since no absolute value is taken on LHS (11.38), we are free to replace the factor $(\breve{X}\mu)/\mu$ from RHS (3.14c) with the factor $[\breve{X}\mu]_+/\mu$ (which we bounded in (10.13)). $\square$

11.7 Pointwise Estimates for the Partially Modified Quantities

Recall that the partially modified quantity $^{(Y^{N-1})}\widetilde{\mathscr{X}}$ verifies the transport equation (6.15). In this subsection, we use the transport equation to derive pointwise estimates for $^{(Y^{N-1})}\widetilde{\mathscr{X}}$ and its L derivative.

Lemma 11.12 (**Pointwise estimates for the partially modified quantities**). *Assume that $1 \le N \le 18$ and let $^{(Y^{N-1})}\widetilde{\mathscr{X}}$ be the partially modified quantity defined by (6.9a). Under the data-size and bootstrap assumptions of Subsects. 7.4–7.5 and the smallness assumptions of Subsect. 7.7, the following pointwise estimates hold on $\mathcal{M}_{T_{(Boot)},U_0}$:*

$$\left| L^{(Y^{N-1})}\widetilde{\mathscr{X}} \right| \le \frac{1}{2} \left| G_{LL} \right| \left| \slashed{A} Y^{N-1} \Psi \right| + C\varepsilon \left| \mathscr{P}^{\le N+1} \Psi \right| + C\varepsilon \left| \mathscr{P}^{\le N} \gamma \right|,$$
(11.39a)

$$\left| ^{(Y^{N-1})}\widetilde{\mathscr{X}} \right| (t, u, \vartheta) \le \left| ^{(Y^{N-1})}\widetilde{\mathscr{X}} \right| (0, u, \vartheta)$$
$$+ \frac{1}{2} \left| G_{LL} \right| (t, u, \vartheta) \int_{t'=0}^{t} \left| \slashed{A} Y^{N-1} \Psi \right| (t', u, \vartheta) \, dt'$$
$$+ C\varepsilon \int_{t'=0}^{t} \left\{ \left| \mathscr{P}^{\le N+1} \Psi \right| + \left| \mathscr{P}^{\le N} \gamma \right| \right\} (t', u, \vartheta) \, dt'. \quad (11.39b)$$

Proof To prove (11.39a), we must bound the terms on RHS (6.15), where Y^{N-1} is in the role of $\mathscr{P}^{N-1}$. Clearly the first term on RHS (11.39a) arises from the first term on RHS (6.15). To bound the terms on RHS (6.16), we simply quote (11.23e).

To derive (11.39b), we integrate (11.39a) along the integral curves of L. The only subtle point is that we bound the time integral of the first term on RHS (11.39a) as follows by using (9.7) with $M = 0$ and $s = t'$: $\int_{t'=0}^{t} \left\{ \left| G_{LL} \right| \left| \slashed{A} Y^{N-1} \Psi \right| \right\} (t', u, \vartheta) \, dt' \le \left| G_{LL} \right| (t, u, \vartheta) \int_{t'=0}^{t} \left| \slashed{A} Y^{N-1} \Psi \right| (t', u, \vartheta) \, dt' + C\varepsilon \int_{t'=0}^{t} \left| \mathscr{P}^{\le N+1} \Psi \right| (t', u, \vartheta) \, dt'. \square$

12 Sobolev Embedding and Estimates for the Change of Variables Map

In this section, we provide some simple Sobolev embedding estimates adapted to the $\ell_{t,u}$. We use them in the proof of our main theorem, after deriving energy estimates, in order to recover the fundamental L^∞ bootstrap assumptions (**BA**Ψ) for Ψ. We also derive a basic regularity estimate for the change of variables map Υ from Def. 2.20.

12.1 Estimates for Some $\ell_{t,u}$-Tangent Vectorfields

We start with the following preliminary lemma.

Lemma 12.1 (**Comparison of Y, Ξ, and Θ**). *Recall that Y is the commutation vectorfield (2.50) and that Θ is the geometric torus coordinate partial derivative vectorfield. There exists a scalar function υ such that*

$$Y = \upsilon \Theta. \tag{12.1}$$

Moreover, under the data-size and bootstrap assumptions of Subsects. 7.4–7.5 and the smallness assumptions of Subsect. 7.7, the following pointwise estimates hold on $\mathcal{M}_{T_{(Boot)},U_0}$:

$$|\upsilon - 1| \lesssim \varepsilon, \quad |L\upsilon|, |Y\upsilon| \lesssim \varepsilon, \quad \left|\check{X}\upsilon\right| \lesssim 1. \tag{12.2}$$

Similarly, the following estimate holds for the scalar-valued function ξ from (2.23):

$$\left|\mathscr{L}^{\leq 1}\xi\right| \lesssim 1. \tag{12.3}$$

Proof The existence of υ is a trivial consequence of the fact that Y is $\ell_{t,u}$-tangent.

To prove (12.2), we first note the data estimates $\|\upsilon - 1\|_{L^\infty(\ell_{0,u})}$, $\|Y\upsilon\|_{L^\infty(\ell_{0,u})} \lesssim \varepsilon$ and $\left\|\check{X}\upsilon\right\|_{L^\infty(\ell_{0,u})} \lesssim 1$. These data estimates are a simple consequence of the fact that $\Theta = \partial_2$ when $t = 0$, equations (2.1)–(2.2), (2.26), (2.54a), and (2.55), Remark 2.6, the data assumptions (7.3), and Lemma 7.3. A similar argument that also relies on the last identity of (7.7) yields that $\|\xi\|_{L^\infty(\ell_{0,u})}$, $\|Y\xi\|_{L^\infty(\ell_{0,u})} \lesssim \varepsilon$ and $\left\|\check{X}\xi\right\|_{L^\infty(\ell_{0,u})} \lesssim 1$.

See Subsect. 8.2 for some comments on the analysis. Next, we use (2.26), (2.54a), (2.55), (2.72a), (2.78b), and Lemma 2.19 to deduce that υ satisfies the evolution equation

$$L \ln \upsilon = \frac{{}^{(Y)}\hbar_L \cdot Y}{|Y|^2} = \mathrm{f}(\gamma, g^{-1}, \slashed{d}x^1, \slashed{d}x^2)P\gamma. \tag{12.4}$$

In deriving (12.4), we used the identities $\mathcal{L}_L \Theta = 0$, $\mathcal{L}_L Y = [L, Y] = {}^{(Y)}\hbar_L^{\#}$ and $\mathcal{L}_Y \slashed{g} = {}^{(Y)}\hbar$ (see Lemma 2.9). Hence, from Lemmas 8.4 and 8.5 and the L^∞ estimates of Prop. 8.10, we deduce $|L \ln \upsilon| \lesssim \varepsilon$. Integrating along the integral curves of L as in (8.38) and using the data estimates and the previous estimate, we conclude the desired estimates (12.2) for υ and $L\upsilon$.

To derive the estimate for $Y\upsilon$, we commute (12.4) with Y to obtain

$$LY \ln \upsilon = {}^{(Y)}\hbar_L^{\#} \cdot \slashed{d} \ln \upsilon + Y \left\{\mathrm{f}(\gamma, g^{-1}, \slashed{d}x^1, \slashed{d}x^2)P\gamma\right\}$$
$$= \mathrm{f}(\gamma, g^{-1}, \slashed{d}x^1, \slashed{d}x^2)(P\gamma)\slashed{d} \ln \upsilon + Y \left\{\mathrm{f}(\gamma, g^{-1}, \slashed{d}x^1, \slashed{d}x^2)P\gamma\right\}. \tag{12.5}$$

Using the same estimates as before, we deduce from (12.5) that $|LY \ln \upsilon| \lesssim \varepsilon |Y \ln \upsilon| + \varepsilon$. Hence, integrating along the integral curves of L as before and using the data estimates and Gronwall's inequality, we conclude that $|Y \ln \upsilon| \lesssim \varepsilon$. Combining this estimate with $\upsilon = 1 + \mathcal{O}(\varepsilon)$, we conclude the desired estimate (12.2) for $Y\upsilon$.

To derive the estimate for $\check{X}\upsilon$, we commute (12.4) with $\check{X}$ and use above reasoning as well as the formula (2.76b) to obtain

$$L\check{X} \ln \upsilon = {}^{(\check{X})}\hbar_L^{\#} \cdot \slashed{d} \ln \upsilon + \check{X} \left\{\mathrm{f}(\gamma, g^{-1}, \slashed{d}x^1, \slashed{d}x^2)P\gamma\right\}$$
$$= \mathrm{f}(\mathscr{L}^{\leq 1}\gamma, \mathscr{P}^{\leq 1}\underline{\gamma}, g^{-1}, \slashed{d}x^1, \slashed{d}x^2)\slashed{d} \ln \upsilon + \check{X} \left\{\mathrm{f}(\gamma, g^{-1}, \slashed{d}x^1, \slashed{d}x^2)P\gamma\right\}. \tag{12.6}$$

Using the same estimates as before and the already proven estimates for υ and $Y\upsilon$ (which imply that $|\slashed{d} \ln \upsilon| \lesssim \varepsilon$), we deduce from (12.6) that $\left| L \check{X} \ln \upsilon \right| \lesssim \varepsilon$. Hence, integrating along the integral curves of L as before and using the data estimates, we conclude that $\left| \check{X} \ln \upsilon \right| \lesssim 1$. Combining this estimate with $\upsilon = 1 + \mathcal{O}(\varepsilon)$, we conclude the desired estimate (12.2) for $\check{X}\upsilon$.

Next, we use (2.23), (2.57), and the fact that $[L, \frac{\partial}{\partial u}] = 0$ to deduce that $\mathcal{L}_L \Xi = -\mathcal{L}_L \check{X} = -{}^{(\check{X})}\slashed{\pi}_L$. Combining this identity with (2.76b) and (12.1) and arguing as in the previous paragraph, we derive the evolution equation

$$L\xi = -\frac{1}{g(\Theta, \Theta)} {}^{(\check{X})}\slashed{\pi}_L \cdot \Theta = \frac{\upsilon}{|Y|^2} {}^{(\check{X})}\slashed{\pi}_L \cdot Y = \upsilon f(\mathscr{Z}^{\leq 1} \gamma, \mathscr{P}^{\leq 1} \underline{\gamma}, \slashed{g}^{-1}, \slashed{d} x^1, \slashed{d} x^2).$$
(12.7)

Using the same estimates as in the previous paragraph and (12.2), we find that $|L\xi| \lesssim 1$ as desired. Moreover, integrating along the integral curves of L as before and using the data estimates, we conclude that $|\xi| \lesssim 1$ as desired. It remains for us to derive the desired estimates for $Y\xi$ and $\check{X}\xi$. To this end, we commute (12.7) with Y and $\check{X}$ and use the same arguments as in the previous two paragraphs as well as the L^∞ estimates of Prop. 9.2 and (12.2) to deduce that $|LY\xi|, \left| L\check{X}\xi \right| \lesssim 1$. Integrating along the integral curves of L as before and using the data estimates, we conclude the desired bounds $|Y\xi|, \left| \check{X}\xi \right| \lesssim 1$.   □

12.2 Comparison Estimates for Length Forms on $\ell_{t,u}$

Before proving our Sobolev embedding result, we first establish a comparison result for the length forms $d\lambda_{\slashed{g}}$ and $d\vartheta$ on $\ell_{t,u}$. We start with a preliminary lemma in which we derive simple pointwise estimates for the metric component υ defined in (2.41).

Lemma 12.2 (**Pointwise estimates for υ**). *Let υ be the metric component from Def. 2.19. Under the data-size and bootstrap assumptions of Subsects. 7.4–7.5 and the smallness assumptions of Subsect. 7.7, the following estimate holds on $\mathcal{M}_{T_{(Boot)}, U_0}$:*

$$\upsilon = 1 + \mathcal{O}(\varepsilon).$$
(12.8)

Proof From (2.72c) and the estimate (8.34), we deduce that $L \ln \upsilon = \mathcal{O}(\varepsilon)$. Integrating the previous estimate along the integral curves of L as in (8.38), we find that $\ln \upsilon(t, u, \vartheta) = \ln \upsilon(0, u, \vartheta) + \mathcal{O}(\varepsilon)$. To complete the proof, we need only to show that $\upsilon(0, u, \vartheta) = 1 + \mathcal{O}(\varepsilon)$. To this end, we note that by construction of the geometric coordinates, at $t = 0$ we have $u = 1 - x^1$ and $\vartheta = x^2$, which implies that $\Theta = \partial_2$. Therefore, $\upsilon^2|_{t=0} = g(\Theta, \Theta)|_{t=0} = g_{22}|_{t=0}$. Using (2.1)–(2.2) and the bootstrap assumptions (**BAΨ**), we conclude that $g_{22} = 1 + \mathcal{O}(\Psi) = 1 + \mathcal{O}(\varepsilon)$, from which the desired estimate $\upsilon(0, u, \vartheta) = 1 + \mathcal{O}(\varepsilon)$ easily follows.   □

Lemma 12.3 (**Comparison of the forms** $d\lambda_{\not{g}}$ **and** $d\vartheta$). *Let* $p = p(\vartheta)$ *be a non-negative function of* ϑ. *Under the data-size and bootstrap assumptions of Subsects. 7.4–7.5 and the smallness assumptions of Subsect. 7.7, the following estimates hold for* $(t, u) \in [0, T_{(Boot)}) \times [0, U_0]$:

$$(1 - C\varepsilon) \int_{\vartheta \in \mathbb{T}} p(\vartheta) d\vartheta \leq \int_{\ell_{t,u}} p(\vartheta) d\lambda_{\not{g}(t,u,\vartheta)} \leq (1 + C\varepsilon) \int_{\vartheta \in \mathbb{T}} p(\vartheta) d\vartheta, \quad (12.9)$$

where $d\vartheta$ *denotes the standard integration measure on* $\mathbb{T}$.

Furthermore, let $p = p(u', \vartheta)$ be a non-negative function of $(u', \vartheta) \in [0, u] \times \mathbb{T}$ that **does not depend on** t. Then for $s, t \in [0, T_{(Boot)})$ and $u \in [0, U_0]$, we have:

$$(1 - C\varepsilon) \int_{\Sigma_s^u} p \, d\varpi \leq \int_{\Sigma_t^u} p \, d\varpi \leq (1 + C\varepsilon) \int_{\Sigma_s^u} p \, d\varpi. \quad (12.10)$$

Finally, we have

$$\|1\|_{L^2(\Sigma_t^u)} \leq C. \quad (12.11)$$

Proof From (3.6) and inequality (12.8), we deduce that $d\lambda_{\not{g}} = (1 + \mathcal{O}(\varepsilon)) \, d\vartheta$, which yields (12.9). (12.10) then follows as a simple consequence of (12.9) and the fact that along Σ_t^u, we have $d\varpi = d\lambda_{\not{g}(t,u,\vartheta)} du'$. Finally, to derive (12.11), we use (12.9) and (12.10) to deduce that $\|1\|_{L^2(\Sigma_t^u)}^2 \leq C \int_{u'=0}^u \int_{\vartheta \in \mathbb{T}} 1 \, d\vartheta \, du' \leq C$ as desired. $\square$

12.3 Sobolev Embedding Along $\ell_{t,u}$

We now state and prove our main Sobolev embedding result of interest.

Lemma 12.4 (**Sobolev embedding along** $\ell_{t,u}$). *Under the data-size and bootstrap assumptions of Subsects. 7.4–7.5 and the smallness assumptions of Subsect. 7.7, the following estimate holds for scalar-valued functions* f *defined on* $\ell_{t,u}$ *for* $(t, u) \in [0, T_{(Boot)}) \times [0, U_0]$:

$$\|f\|_{L^\infty(\ell_{t,u})} \leq C \left\| Y^{\leq 1} f \right\|_{L^2(\ell_{t,u})}. \quad (12.12)$$

Proof Standard Sobolev embedding yields that $\|f\|_{L^\infty(\mathbb{T})} \leq C \left\| \Theta^{\leq 1} f \right\|_{L^2(\mathbb{T})}$, where the integration measure defining $\| \cdot \|_{L^2(\mathbb{T})}$ is $d\vartheta$. Thus, in view of Lemma 12.3, the desired estimate (12.12) follows from (12.1)–(12.2). $\square$

12.4 Basic Estimates Connected to the Change of Variables Map

Lemma 12.5 (**Basic estimates for the rectangular components** Θ^i **and** Ξ^i). *Under the data-size and bootstrap assumptions of Subsects. 7.4–7.5 and the smallness assumptions of Subsect. 7.7, the following estimates hold on* $\mathcal{M}_{T_{(Boot)},U_0}$ *(for* $i = 1, 2$):

$$\left\| \mathscr{Z}^{\leq 1} \Theta^i \right\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_t^u)} \lesssim 1, \quad (12.13)$$

$$\left\| \mathscr{Z}^{\leq 1} \Xi^i \right\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_t^u)} \lesssim 1, \tag{12.14}$$

where Ξ is the $\ell_{t,u}$-tangent vectorfield from (2.23).

Proof The estimate (12.13) follows from (12.1), (12.2), and the bounds $\left\| \mathscr{Z}^{\leq 1} Y^i \right\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_t^u)} \lesssim 1 + \left\| \mathscr{Z}^{\leq 1} Y^i_{(Small)} \right\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_t^u)} \lesssim 1$, which follow from (2.53), (8.12c), and the L^∞ estimates of Prop. 8.10. Similarly, to prove (12.14), we use (2.23) to express $\Xi^i = \xi\Theta^i$. The desired bounds then follow from (12.3) and (12.13).
□

Lemma 12.6 (**Uniform $C^{1,1}$ bounds for Υ**). *Under the data-size and bootstrap assumptions of Subsects. 7.4–7.5 and the smallness assumptions of Subsect. 7.7, the change of variables map Υ from Def. 2.20 is a $C^{1,1}$ function of the geometric coordinates*[57] *that verifies the following estimates on $\mathcal{M}_{T_{(Boot)},U_0}$:*

$$\sum_{i_1+i_2+i_3\leq 2}\sum_{\alpha=0}^{2} \left\| \left(\frac{\partial}{\partial t}\right)^{i_1} \left(\frac{\partial}{\partial u}\right)^{i_2} \left(\frac{\partial}{\partial \vartheta}\right)^{i_3} \Upsilon^\alpha \right\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_t^u)} \leq C, \tag{12.15a}$$

$$\sum_{i_1+i_2+i_3\leq 1}\sum_{\alpha=0}^{2} \left| \left(\frac{\partial}{\partial t}\right)^{i_1} \left(\frac{\partial}{\partial u}\right)^{i_2} \left(\frac{\partial}{\partial \vartheta}\right)^{i_3} \Upsilon^\alpha(t_2,u_2,\vartheta_2) - \left(\frac{\partial}{\partial t}\right)^{i_1} \left(\frac{\partial}{\partial u}\right)^{i_2} \left(\frac{\partial}{\partial \vartheta}\right)^{i_3} \Upsilon^\alpha(t_1,u_1,\vartheta_1) \right|$$
$$\leq C\{|t_2-t_1|+|u_2-u_1|+|\vartheta_2-\vartheta_1|\}. \tag{12.15b}$$

On RHS (12.15b)*, $|\vartheta_2-\vartheta_1|$ denotes the flat distance between ϑ_2 and ϑ_1 on $\mathbb{T}$.*

Proof Recall that $\Upsilon^\alpha = x^\alpha$ (we view these quantities as a function of the geometric coordinates). It is a standard embedding result relative to geometric coordinates (Morrey's inequality) that (12.15b) follows once we prove (12.15a). Clearly $t = x^0$ is uniformly bounded in the norm $\| \cdot \|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_t^u)}$, while the x^i were bounded in (8.11a). The first derivatives of the x^α are the terms on RHS (2.47). They were bounded in the norm $\| \cdot \|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_t^u)}$ in Lemmas 8.4 and 12.5. To bound the second derivatives of the x^α, we first note that $\frac{\partial}{\partial t} = L$, $\frac{\partial}{\partial \vartheta} = \Theta = (1 + \mathcal{O}(\varepsilon))Y$ (see Lemma 12.1), and $\frac{\partial}{\partial u} = \check{X} + \mathcal{O}(1)Y$ (see (2.23) and Lemma 12.5). Hence, it suffices to bound the norm $\| \cdot \|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_t^u)}$ of the L, Y, and $\check{X}$ derivatives of the scalar functions on RHS (2.47). The desired bounds were derived in Lemmas 8.4 and 12.5. We have thus proved (12.15a).
□

13 The Fundamental L^2-Controlling Quantities

In this section, we define the controlling quantities that we use in our L^2 analysis of solutions and exhibit their coercivity.

Definition 13.1 (**The main coercive quantities used for controlling the solution and its derivatives in L^2**). In terms of the energy-flux quantities of Def. 3.3, we define

---

[57] The notation "$C^{1,1}$" means that the up-to-first order geometric coordinate partial derivatives of the Υ^α are Lipschitz continuous.

$$\mathbb{Q}_N(t, u) := \max_{|\vec{I}|=N} \sup_{(t', u') \in [0,t] \times [0,u]} \left\{ \mathbb{E}[\mathscr{P}^{\vec{I}} \Psi](t', u') + \mathbb{F}[\mathscr{P}^{\vec{I}} \Psi](t', u') \right\},$$

(13.1a)

$$\mathbb{Q}_{[1,N]}(t, u) := \max_{1 \leq M \leq N} \mathbb{Q}_M(t, u).$$

(13.1b)

We use the following coercive spacetime integrals to control non$-\mu$-weighted error integrals involving geometric torus derivatives.

Definition 13.2 (**Key coercive spacetime integrals**). We associate the following integrals to Ψ, where $[L\mu]_- = |L\mu|$ when $L\mu < 0$ and $[L\mu]_- = 0$ when $L\mu \geq 0$:

$$\mathbb{K}[\Psi](t, u) := \frac{1}{2} \int_{\mathcal{M}_{t,u}} [L\mu]_- |\slashed{d}\Psi|^2 \, d\varpi,$$

(13.2a)

$$\mathbb{K}_N(t, u) := \max_{|\vec{I}|=N} \mathbb{K}[\mathscr{P}^{\vec{I}} \Psi](t, u),$$

(13.2b)

$$\mathbb{K}_{[1,N]}(t, u) := \max_{1 \leq M \leq N} \mathbb{K}_M(t, u).$$

(13.2c)

Remark 13.1 (**We derive energy estimates only for the P-commuted wave equation with $P \in \mathscr{P}$**). We stress that definitions (13.1b) and (13.2c) provide L^2-type quantities that correspond to commuting the wave equation *only with the elements of the set $\mathscr{P}$, which are $\mathcal{P}_u$-tangent.* As we described in Subsubsect. 1.5.4, we rely on the special null structure of the equations and the special properties of the vectorfields in $\mathscr{P}$ to close our energy estimates without deriving energy estimates for the $\check{X}$-commuted wave equation.

In the next lemma, we quantify the coercive nature of the spacetime integrals from Def. 13.2.

Lemma 13.1 (**Strength of the coercive spacetime integral**). *Let $\mathbf{1}_{\{\mu \leq 1/4\}}$ denote the characteristic function of the spacetime subset $\{(t, u, \vartheta) \in [0, \infty) \times [0, 1] \times \mathbb{T} \mid \mu(t, u, \vartheta) \leq 1/4\}$. Under the data-size and bootstrap assumptions of Subsects. 7.4–7.5 and the smallness assumptions of Subsect. 7.7, the following lower bound holds for $(t, u) \in [0, T_{(Boot)}) \times [0, U_0]$:*

$$\mathbb{K}[\Psi](t, u) \geq \frac{1}{8} \mathring{\delta}_* \int_{\mathcal{M}_{t,u}} \mathbf{1}_{\{\mu \leq 1/4\}} |\slashed{d}\Psi|^2 \, d\varpi.$$

(13.3)

Proof The lemma follows easily from definition (13.2a) and the estimate (10.12). ☐

We now provide a simple technical lemma, based on Minkowski's integral inequality, that we will use throughout our L^2 analysis.

Lemma 13.2 (**Estimate for the norm $\| \cdot \|_{L^2(\Sigma_t^u)}$ of time-integrated functions**). *Let f be a scalar function on $\mathcal{M}_{T_{(Boot)}, U_0}$ and let*

$$F(t, u, \vartheta) := \int_{t'=0}^{t} f(t', u, \vartheta) \, dt'.$$

(13.4)

Under the data-size and bootstrap assumptions of Subsects. 7.4–7.5 and the smallness assumptions of Subsect. 7.7, the following estimate holds for $(t, u) \in [0, T_{(Boot)}) \times [0, U_0]$:

$$\|F\|_{L^2(\Sigma_t^u)} \leq (1 + C\varepsilon) \int_{t'=0}^t \|f\|_{L^2(\Sigma_{t'}^u)} \, dt'. \tag{13.5}$$

Proof Recall that $\|F\|_{L^2(\Sigma_t^u)} := \left\{ \int_{u'=0}^u \int_{\ell_{t,u'}} F^2(t, u', \vartheta) \, d\lambda_{\not g} \, du' \right\}^{1/2}$. Using the estimate (12.9), we may replace $d\lambda_{\not g}$ in the previous formula with the standard integration measure $d\vartheta$ on the torus $\mathbb{T}$ up to an overall multiplicative error factor of $1 + \mathcal{O}(\varepsilon)$. The desired estimate (13.5) follows from this estimate and from applying Minkowski's inequality for integrals to equation (13.4). $\qquad\qquad\qquad\qquad\qquad\qquad\qquad\qquad\qquad\square$

In the next lemma, we quantify the coercive nature of the controlling quantities from Def. 13.1.

Remark 13.2 The sharp constants 1 and $\frac{1}{2}$ in front of the quantities $\left\| \check{X} \mathscr{P}^{[1,N]} \Psi \right\|^2_{L^2(\Sigma_t^u)}$ and $\frac{1}{2} \left\| \sqrt{\mu} \not{d} \mathscr{P}^{[1,N]} \Psi \right\|^2_{L^2(\Sigma_t^u)}$ in the estimate (13.6) influence the blowup-rate of our top-order energy estimates. In turn, this affects the number of derivatives that we need to close our estimates.

Lemma 13.3 (**The coercivity of** $\mathbb{Q}_{[1,N]}$). *Let $1 \leq M \leq N \leq 18$, and let $\mathscr{P}^M$ be an Mth-order $\mathcal{P}_u$-tangent vectorfield operator. Under the assumptions of Lemma 13.1, the following lower bounds hold for $(t, u) \in [0, T_{(Boot)}) \times [0, U_0]$:*

$$\mathbb{Q}_{[1,N]}(t, u) \geq \max \left\{ \frac{1}{2} \left\| \sqrt{\mu} L \mathscr{P}^M \Psi \right\|^2_{L^2(\Sigma_t^u)}, \; \left\| \check{X} \mathscr{P}^M \Psi \right\|^2_{L^2(\Sigma_t^u)}, \; \frac{1}{2} \left\| \sqrt{\mu} \not{d} \mathscr{P}^M \Psi \right\|^2_{L^2(\Sigma_t^u)}, \right.$$

$$C^{-1} \left\| \mathscr{P}^M \Psi \right\|^2_{L^2(\Sigma_t^u)}, \; \left\| L \mathscr{P}^M \Psi \right\|^2_{L^2(\mathcal{P}_u^t)}, \; \left\| \sqrt{\mu} \not{d} \mathscr{P}^M \Psi \right\|^2_{L^2(\mathcal{P}_u^t)},$$

$$\left. C^{-1} \left\| \mathscr{P}^M \Psi \right\|^2_{L^2(\ell_{t,u})} \right\}. \tag{13.6}$$

Moreover,

$$\|\Psi\|_{L^2(\Sigma_t^u)} \leq C \mathring{\epsilon} + C \mathbb{Q}_1^{1/2}(t, u), \tag{13.7a}$$

$$\left\| \check{X} \Psi \right\|_{L^2(\Sigma_t^u)} \leq C \left\| \check{X} \Psi \right\|_{L^2(\Sigma_0^u)} + C \mathring{\epsilon} + C \mathbb{Q}_1^{1/2}(t, u). \tag{13.7b}$$

Proof We first prove (13.6). We prove the estimates for $\left\| \mathscr{P}^M \Psi \right\|^2_{L^2(\Sigma_t^u)}$ and $\left\| \mathscr{P}^M \Psi \right\|^2_{L^2(\ell_{t,u})}$ in detail; the other estimates in (13.6) follow easily from Lemma 3.4 and we omit those details. To derive the estimate (13.6) for $\left\| \mathscr{P}^M \Psi \right\|^2_{L^2(\Sigma_{t,u})}$ and $\left\| \mathscr{P}^M \Psi \right\|^2_{L^2(\ell_{t,u})}$, we first note that the estimates for the former quantities follow easily from integrating the estimates for the latter quantities with respect to u. Hence, it

suffices to prove the estimates for $\left\Vert \mathscr{P}^M \Psi \right\Vert^2_{L^2(\ell_{t,u})}$, and for this, we rely on the identity (3.19b). Using (8.13c) and the L^∞ estimates of Prop. 8.10, we bound the factor $(1/2)\mathrm{tr}_{\cancel{g}}{}^{(\check{X})}\cancel{\pi}$ in (3.19b) as follows: $(1/2)\left\vert \mathrm{tr}_{\cancel{g}}{}^{(\check{X})}\cancel{\pi} \right\vert = \left\vert \mathcal{L}_{\check{X}}\cancel{g} \right\vert \lesssim 1$. Using the previous estimate, (3.19b) with $f = (\mathscr{P}^M \Psi)^2$, Young's inequality, and the fact that the solution is trivial when $u = 0$, we deduce that

$$\left\Vert \mathscr{P}^M \Psi \right\Vert^2_{L^2(\ell_{t,u})} \leq \int_{u'=0}^{u} \left\Vert \check{X} \mathscr{P}^M \Psi \right\Vert^2_{L^2(\ell_{t,u'})} \, du' + c \int_{u'=0}^{u} \left\Vert \mathscr{P}^M \Psi \right\Vert^2_{L^2(\ell_{t,u'})} \, du'. \tag{13.8}$$

From (13.8) and Gronwall's inequality, we find that

$$\left\Vert \mathscr{P}^M \Psi \right\Vert^2_{L^2(\ell_{t,u})} \leq C e^{cu} \int_{u'=0}^{u} \left\Vert \check{X} \mathscr{P}^M \Psi \right\Vert^2_{L^2(\ell_{t,u'})} \, du' = C e^{cu} \left\Vert \check{X} \mathscr{P}^M \Psi \right\Vert^2_{L^2(\Sigma_t^u)}$$

$$\leq C \left\Vert \check{X} \mathscr{P}^M \Psi \right\Vert^2_{L^2(\Sigma_t^u)}. \tag{13.9}$$

The desired bound for $\left\Vert \mathscr{P}^M \Psi \right\Vert^2_{L^2(\ell_{t,u})}$ now follows from (13.9) and the already proven estimate (13.6) for $\left\Vert \check{X} \mathscr{P}^M \Psi \right\Vert^2_{L^2(\Sigma_t^u)}$.

To derive (13.7b), we use (13.5) with $f = L\Psi$ and $F(t, u, \vartheta) = \Psi(t, u, \vartheta) - \mathring{\Psi}(u, \vartheta)$, where $\mathring{\Psi}(u, \vartheta) = \Psi(0, u, \vartheta)$. Also using the data bound $\left\Vert \mathring{\Psi} \right\Vert_{L^\infty(\Sigma_0^u)} \leq C\mathring{\mathrm{e}}$ (see (7.3)), we find that $\Vert \Psi \Vert_{L^2(\Sigma_t^u)} \leq C\mathring{\mathrm{e}} \Vert 1 \Vert_{L^2(\Sigma_t^u)} + C \int_{s=0}^{t} \Vert L\Psi \Vert_{L^2(\Sigma_s^u)} \, ds$. The desired estimate now follows easily from this inequality, (12.11), and the estimate (13.6) for $\Vert L\Psi \Vert_{L^2(\Sigma_s^u)}$.

To prove (13.7b), we first use the commutator estimate (8.19a) and the L^∞ estimates of Prop. 8.10 to deduce that $L\check{X}\Psi = \check{X}L\Psi + \mathcal{O}(\mathscr{P}^{\leq 1}\Psi)$. Taking the norm $\Vert \cdot \Vert_{L^2(\Sigma_t^u)}$ of this inequality, we find that $\left\Vert L\check{X}\Psi \right\Vert_{L^2(\Sigma_t^u)} \leq \left\Vert \check{X}L\Psi \right\Vert_{L^2(\Sigma_t^u)} + C \left\Vert \mathscr{P}^{\leq 1}\Psi \right\Vert_{L^2(\Sigma_t^u)}$. We have already bounded all terms on the RHS of this inequality by $\lesssim \mathring{\mathrm{e}} + C\mathbb{Q}_1^{1/2}(t, u)$. Hence, much like in the previous paragraph, the desired estimate (13.7b) follows from (13.5) with $F(t, u, \vartheta) = \check{X}\Psi(t, u, \vartheta) - \check{X}\Psi(0, u, \vartheta)$ and $f(t, u, \vartheta) = L\check{X}\Psi(t, u, \vartheta)$ and the estimate (12.9), which ensures that the norms $\Vert \cdot \Vert_{L^2(\Sigma_t^u)}$ and $\Vert \cdot \Vert_{L^2(\Sigma_0^u)}$ are uniformly comparable when applied to the t-independent function $\check{X}\Psi(0, u, \vartheta)$. $\qquad \square$

Corollary 13.4 (L^∞ **bounds for Ψ in terms of the fundamental controlling quantities**). *Under the assumptions of Lemma 12.4, the following estimates hold for* $(t, u) \in [0, T_{(Boot)}) \times [0, U_0]$:

$$\left\Vert \mathscr{P}^{\leq 11} \Psi \right\Vert_{L^\infty(\Sigma_t^u)} \lesssim \mathbb{Q}_{[1,12]}^{1/2}(t, u) + \mathring{\mathrm{e}}. \tag{13.10}$$

Proof The bound $\left\|\mathscr{P}^{[1,11]}\Psi\right\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_t^u)} \lesssim \mathbb{Q}_{[1,12]}^{1/2}(t,u)$ follows from Lemma 13.3 and Lemma 12.4. In particular, we have $\|L\Psi\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_t^u)} \lesssim \mathbb{Q}_{[1,12]}^{1/2}(t,u)$. Integrating along the integral curves of L as in (8.38) and using this bound and the small-data assumption $\|\Psi\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_0^u)} \leq \mathring{\mathring{e}}$ (see (7.3)), we deduce that $\|\Psi\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_t^u)} \leq C\mathbb{Q}_{[1,12]}^{1/2}(t,u) + C\mathring{\mathring{e}}$. We have thus proved the corollary. $\square$

14 Energy Estimates

This section contains the most important technical estimates in the article: a priori estimates for the controlling quantities $\mathbb{Q}_{[1,N]}$ from Def. 13.1 and the coercive spacetime integrals $\mathbb{K}_{[1,N]}$ from Def. 13.2. The main result is Prop. 14.1. To obtain the proposition, we use the pointwise estimates of Sect. 11 to establish suitable estimates for the error integrals on RHS (3.12), where $\mathscr{P}^N\Psi$ is in the role of Ψ and the factor $\mathfrak{F}$ in (3.12) is the inhomogeneous term in the commuted wave equation $\mu\square_{g(\Psi)}(\mathscr{P}^N\Psi) = \mathfrak{F}$. We have divided the error integrals into various classes that we separately treat in the ensuing sections.

14.1 Statement of the Main a Priori Energy Estimates

We start by stating the proposition featuring our main a priori energy estimates, the proof of which is located in Subsect. 14.9.

Proposition 14.1 (**The main a priori energy estimates**). *Consider the fundamental L^2-controlling quantities $\{\mathbb{Q}_{[1,N]}(t,u)\}_{N=1,\cdots,18}$ from Def. 13.1. There exists a constant $C > 0$ such that under the data-size and bootstrap assumptions of Subsects. 7.4–7.5 and the smallness assumptions of Subsect. 7.7, the following estimates hold for $(t,u) \in [0, T_{(Boot)}) \times [0, U_0]$:*

$$\mathbb{Q}_{[1,13+M]}^{1/2}(t,u) + \mathbb{K}_{[1,13+M]}^{1/2}(t,u) \leq C\mathring{e}\mu_\star^{-(M+.9)}(t,u), \quad (0 \leq M \leq 5), \quad (14.1a)$$

$$\mathbb{Q}_{[1,1+M]}^{1/2}(t,u) + \mathbb{K}_{[1,1+M]}^{1/2}(t,u) \leq C\mathring{e}, \quad\quad\quad (0 \leq M \leq 11). \quad (14.1b)$$

We prove Prop. 14.1 through a long Gronwall argument that relies on the sharp estimates for μ derived in Sect. 10 as well as the energy inequalities provided by the following result, Prop. 14.2. The proof of the proposition is located in Subsect. 14.8. See Remark 11.1 regarding the boxed constants on RHS (14.2a).

Proposition 14.2 (**Inequalities derived from energy identities**). *Assume that $1 \leq N \leq 18$ and $\varsigma > 0$. There exists a constant $C > 0$, independent of ς, such that under the data-size and bootstrap assumptions of Subsects. 7.4–7.5 and the smallness assumptions of Subsect. 7.7, the following pointwise estimates hold for $(t,u) \in [0, T_{(Boot)}) \times [0, U_0]$ (where $2 \leq N \leq 18$ in (14.2b)):*

$$\max\left\{\mathbb{Q}_{[1,N]}(t,u), \mathbb{K}_{[1,N]}(t,u)\right\}$$

$$\leq C(1+\varsigma^{-1})\mathring{e}^2\mu_\star^{-3/2}(t,u) + \boxed{6}\int_{t'=0}^t \frac{\|[L\mu]_-\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_{t'}^u)}}{\mu_\star(t',u)}\mathbb{Q}_{[1,N]}(t',u)\,dt'$$

$$+ \boxed{8.1} \int_{t'=0}^{t} \frac{\|[L\mu]_-\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_{t'}^u)}}{\mu_\star(t',u)} \mathbb{Q}_{[1,N]}^{1/2}(t',u) \int_{s=0}^{t'} \frac{\|[L\mu]_-\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_s^u)}}{\mu_\star(s,u)} \mathbb{Q}_{[1,N]}^{1/2}(s,u)\, ds\, dt'$$

$$+ \boxed{2} \frac{1}{\mu_\star^{1/2}(t,u)} \mathbb{Q}_{[1,N]}^{1/2}(t,u) \|L\mu\|_{L^\infty((-)\Sigma_{t;t}^u)} \int_{t'=0}^{t} \frac{1}{\mu_\star^{1/2}(t',u)} \mathbb{Q}_{[1,N]}^{1/2}(t',u)\, dt'$$

$$+ C\varepsilon \int_{t'=0}^{t} \frac{1}{\mu_\star(t',u)} \mathbb{Q}_{[1,N]}^{1/2}(t',u) \int_{s=0}^{t'} \frac{1}{\mu_\star(s,u)} \mathbb{Q}_{[1,N]}^{1/2}(s,u)\, ds\, dt'$$

$$+ C\varepsilon \int_{t'=0}^{t} \frac{1}{\mu_\star(t',u)} \mathbb{Q}_{[1,N]}(t',u)\, dt'$$

$$+ C\varepsilon \frac{1}{\mu_\star^{1/2}(t,u)} \mathbb{Q}_{[1,N]}^{1/2}(t,u) \int_{t'=0}^{t} \frac{1}{\mu_\star^{1/2}(t',u)} \mathbb{Q}_{[1,N]}^{1/2}(t',u)\, dt'$$

$$+ C\mathbb{Q}_{[1,N]}^{1/2}(t,u) \int_{t'=0}^{t} \frac{1}{\mu_\star^{1/2}(t',u)} \mathbb{Q}_{[1,N]}^{1/2}(t',u)\, dt'$$

$$+ C \int_{t'=0}^{t} \frac{1}{\sqrt{T_{(Boot)}-t'}} \mathbb{Q}_{[1,N]}(t',u)\, dt'$$

$$+ C(1+\varsigma^{-1}) \int_{t'=0}^{t} \frac{1}{\mu_\star^{1/2}(t',u)} \mathbb{Q}_{[1,N]}(t',u)\, dt'$$

$$+ C \int_{t'=0}^{t} \frac{1}{\mu_\star(t',u)} \mathbb{Q}_{[1,N]}^{1/2}(t',u) \int_{s=0}^{t'} \frac{1}{\mu_\star^{1/2}(s,u)} \mathbb{Q}_{[1,N]}^{1/2}(s,u)\, ds\, dt'$$

$$+ C \int_{t'=0}^{t} \frac{1}{\mu_\star(t',u)} \mathbb{Q}_{[1,N]}^{1/2}(t',u) \int_{s=0}^{t'} \frac{1}{\mu_\star(s,u)} \int_{s'=0}^{s} \frac{1}{\mu_\star^{1/2}(s',u)} \mathbb{Q}_{[1,N]}^{1/2}(s',u)\, ds'\, ds\, dt'$$

$$+ C(1+\varsigma^{-1}) \int_{u'=0}^{u} \mathbb{Q}_{[1,N]}(t,u')\, du'$$

$$+ C\varepsilon\mathbb{Q}_{[1,N]}(t,u) + C\varsigma\mathbb{Q}_{[1,N]}(t,u) + C\varsigma\mathbb{K}_{[1,N]}(t,u)$$

$$+ C \int_{t'=0}^{t} \frac{1}{\mu_\star^{5/2}(t',u)} \mathbb{Q}_{[1,N-1]}(t',u)\, dt', \tag{14.2a}$$

$$\max\left\{\mathbb{Q}_{[1,N-1]}(t,u), \mathbb{K}_{[1,N-1]}(t,u)\right\}$$

$$\leq C\mathring{\epsilon}^2 + C \int_{t'=0}^{t} \frac{1}{\mu_\star^{1/2}(t',u)} \mathbb{Q}_{[1,N-1]}^{1/2}(t',u) \int_{s=0}^{t'} \frac{1}{\mu_\star^{1/2}(s,u)} \mathbb{Q}_{[1,N]}^{1/2}(s,u)\, ds\, dt'$$

$$+ C \int_{t'=0}^{t} \frac{1}{\sqrt{T_{(Boot)}-t'}} \mathbb{Q}_{[1,N-1]}(t',u)\, dt'$$

$$+ C(1+\varsigma^{-1}) \int_{t'=0}^{t} \frac{1}{\mu_\star^{1/2}(t',u)} \mathbb{Q}_{[1,N-1]}(t',u)\, dt'$$

$$+ C\mathring{\epsilon} \int_{t'=0}^{t} \frac{1}{\mu_\star^{1/2}(t',u)} \mathbb{Q}_{[1,N-1]}^{1/2}(t',u)\, dt'$$

$$+ C(1+\varsigma^{-1}) \int_{u'=0}^{u} \mathbb{Q}_{[1,N-1]}(t,u')\, du'$$

$$+ C\varsigma\mathbb{K}_{[1,N-1]}(t,u). \tag{14.2b}$$

Remark 14.1 (**Less degeneracy at the cost of one derivative**). Note that the estimate (14.2b) *does not involve any of the difficult "boxed-constant" error integrals appearing on* RHS (14.2a). The price paid is that the term $\mathbb{Q}_{[1,N]}^{1/2}$ on RHS (14.2b) corresponds to one derivative above the level of LHS (14.2b) (that is, the estimate (14.2b) loses one derivative).

14.2 Preliminary L^2 Estimates for the Eikonal Function Quantities that Do Not Require Modified Quantities

In this subsection, we provide preliminary L^2 estimates for some error term factors. The main result is Lemma 14.3, in which we bound the *below-top-order* derivatives of μ, $L_{(Small)}^i$, and $\text{tr}_{\not g}\chi$ in terms of the fundamental controlling quantities of Def. 13.1. These estimates are not difficult to obtain because we allow them to lose one derivative relative to Ψ. We also derive estimates for the top-order derivatives involving at least one L differentiation. These estimates are also not difficult because to obtain them, we do not need to rely on the modified quantities of Sect. 6.

To derive the desired estimates, we will integrate the transport equations of Lemma 2.12 and their higher-order analogs with respect to t at fixed (u, ϑ) and apply Lemma 13.2.

Lemma 14.3 (L^2 **bounds for the eikonal function quantities that do not require modified quantities**). *Assume that $N \leq 18$. Under the data-size and bootstrap assumptions of Subsects. 7.4–7.5 and the smallness assumptions of Subsect. 7.7, the following L^2 estimates hold for $(t, u) \in [0, T_{(Boot)}) \times [0, U_0]$ (see Subsect. 7.2 regarding the vectorfield operator notation):*

$$\left\| L \mathscr{P}_*^{[1,N]} \mu \right\|_{L^2(\Sigma_t^u)}, \quad \left\| L \mathscr{P}^{\leq N} L_{(Small)}^i \right\|_{L^2(\Sigma_t^u)}, \quad \left\| L \mathscr{P}^{\leq N-1} \text{tr}_{\not g}\chi \right\|_{L^2(\Sigma_t^u)}$$

$$\lesssim \mathring{\epsilon} + \frac{\mathbb{Q}_{[1,N]}^{1/2}(t, u)}{\mu_\star^{1/2}(t, u)}, \tag{14.3a}$$

$$\left\| L \mathscr{L}^{\leq N;1} L_{(Small)}^i \right\|_{L^2(\Sigma_t^u)}, \quad \left\| L \mathscr{L}^{\leq N-1;1} \text{tr}_{\not g}\chi \right\|_{L^2(\Sigma_t^u)} \lesssim \mathring{\epsilon} + \frac{\mathbb{Q}_{[1,N]}^{1/2}(t, u)}{\mu_\star^{1/2}(t, u)}, \tag{14.3b}$$

$$\left\| \mathscr{P}_*^{[1,N]} \mu \right\|_{L^2(\Sigma_t^u)}, \quad \left\| \mathscr{P}^{\leq N} L_{(Small)}^i \right\|_{L^2(\Sigma_t^u)}, \quad \left\| \mathscr{P}^{\leq N-1} \text{tr}_{\not g}\chi \right\|_{L^2(\Sigma_t^u)}$$

$$\lesssim \mathring{\epsilon} + \int_{s=0}^t \frac{\mathbb{Q}_{[1,N]}^{1/2}(s, u)}{\mu_\star^{1/2}(s, u)} \, ds, \tag{14.3c}$$

$$\left\| \mathscr{L}_*^{\leq N;1} L_{(Small)}^i \right\|_{L^2(\Sigma_t^u)}, \quad \left\| \mathscr{L}^{\leq N-1;1} \text{tr}_{\not g}\chi \right\|_{L^2(\Sigma_t^u)} \lesssim \mathring{\epsilon} + \int_{s=0}^t \frac{\mathbb{Q}_{[1,N]}^{1/2}(s, u)}{\mu_\star^{1/2}(s, u)} \, ds. \tag{14.3d}$$

Proof See Subsect. 8.2 for some comments on the analysis. We set

$$q_N(t) := \sum_{a=1}^{2} \left\| \mathscr{P}^{\leq N} L_{(Small)}^a \right\|_{L^2(\Sigma_t^u)} + \left\| \mathscr{P}^{\leq N-1} \mathrm{tr}_{\slashed{g}} \chi \right\|_{L^2(\Sigma_t^u)}. \tag{14.4}$$

From (8.29a), Lemma 13.3, (12.10), and Lemma 13.2, we deduce that

$$q_N(t) \leq C q_N(0) + C\varepsilon \int_{t'=0}^{t} q_N(t') \, dt' + C \int_{s=0}^{t} \frac{\mathbb{Q}_{[1,N]}^{1/2}(s,u)}{\upmu_\star^{1/2}(s,u)} \, ds. \tag{14.5}$$

Next, we note that $q_N(0) \lesssim \mathring{\varepsilon}$, an estimate that follows from the estimate (8.13a) for $\mathrm{tr}_{\slashed{g}}\chi$ and Lemma 7.3. We now apply Gronwall's inequality to (14.5) to conclude that $q_N(t) \lesssim$ RHS (14.3c) as desired. We have thus proved the desired estimates for $\mathscr{P}^{\leq N} L_{(Small)}^i$ and $\mathscr{P}^{\leq N-1} \mathrm{tr}_{\slashed{g}}\chi$.

Next, we consider the first term on RHS (8.28b). We use the commutation estimate (8.24) with $f = \Psi$, the L^∞ estimates of Prop. 8.10, and Cor. 8.11 to commute the (at most one) factor of $\breve{X}$ in the operator $\mathscr{Z}_*^{N+1;1}$ to the front, which allows us to write $|\mathscr{Z}_*^{\leq N+1;1}\Psi| \lesssim |\breve{X}\mathscr{P}^{[1,N]}\Psi| + |\mathscr{P}^{\leq N+1}\Psi| + \varepsilon |\mathscr{Z}_*^{\leq N;1}\underline{\gamma}| + \varepsilon |\mathscr{P}_*^{[1,N]}\underline{\gamma}|$. Thanks to the previous estimate and inequality (8.28b), we can use an argument similar to the one that we used to derive (14.5) in order to deduce

$$\left\| \mathscr{P}_*^{[1,N]}\upmu \right\|_{L^2(\Sigma_t^u)} \leq \left\| \mathscr{P}_*^{[1,N]}\upmu \right\|_{L^2(\Sigma_0^u)} + C\mathring{\varepsilon} + C \int_{t'=0}^{t} q_N(t') \, dt'$$

$$+ C\varepsilon \int_{t'=0}^{t} \left\| \mathscr{P}_*^{[1,N]}\upmu \right\|_{L^2(\Sigma_{t'}^u)} \, dt' + C \int_{s=0}^{t} \frac{\mathbb{Q}_{[1,N]}^{1/2}(s,u)}{\upmu_\star^{1/2}(s,u)} \, ds. \tag{14.6}$$

We clarify that the term $C\mathring{\varepsilon}$ on RHS (14.6) comes from the first term on RHS (13.7a). Moreover, Lemma 7.3 yields that $\left\| \mathscr{P}_*^{[1,N]}\upmu \right\|_{L^2(\Sigma_0^u)} \lesssim \mathring{\varepsilon}$, while the estimates we have already derived for $\mathscr{P}^{\leq N} L_{(Small)}^i$ imply that $C \int_{t'=0}^{t} q_N(t') \, dt \lesssim \mathring{\varepsilon} + \int_{s=0}^{t} \frac{\mathbb{Q}_{[1,N]}^{1/2}(s,u)}{\upmu_\star^{1/2}(s,u)} \, ds$. Also using Gronwall's inequality, we conclude the desired estimate for $\left\| \mathscr{P}_*^{[1,N]}\upmu \right\|_{L^2(\Sigma_t^u)}$.

To obtain the estimates (14.3a), we take the norm $\|\cdot\|_{L^2(\Sigma_t^u)}$ of the inequalities (8.28b) and (8.29a) and argue as above using the already proven estimates (14.3c). In these estimates, we encounter the integrals $\int_{s=0}^{t} \frac{\mathbb{Q}_{[1,N]}^{1/2}(s,u)}{\upmu_\star^{1/2}(s,u)} \, ds$, which we bound by $\lesssim \mathbb{Q}_{[1,N]}^{1/2}(t,u) \leq \upmu_\star^{-1/2}(t,u)\mathbb{Q}_{[1,N]}^{1/2}(t,u)$ with the help of inequality (10.39).

The proofs of (14.3b) and (14.3d) are similar and are based on inequality (8.29b) and the already proven estimates (14.3c); we omit the details. $\qquad\square$

In the next corollary, we obtain L^2 estimates for Ψ with a right-hand side that involves no explicit degenerate factor involving a power of $\mu_\star^{-1}$. The price we pay is that the estimates lose one derivative, that is, the left-hand side features N derivatives of Ψ but the right-hand side features a quantity that is capable of controlling up to $N + 1$ derivatives of Ψ.

Corollary 14.4 (**Non-degenerate L^2 estimates for Ψ that lose one derivative**). *Assume that $N \leq 18$. Under the data-size and bootstrap assumptions of Subsects. 7.4–7.5 and the smallness assumptions of Subsect. 7.7, the following L^2 estimates hold for $(t, u) \in [0, T_{(Boot)}) \times [0, U_0]$ (see Subsect. 7.2 regarding the vectorfield operator notation):*

$$\left\| \mathscr{Z}_\ast^{N;1} \Psi \right\|_{L^2(\Sigma_t^u)} \lesssim \mathbb{Q}_{[1,N]}^{1/2}(t, u) + \mathring{\epsilon}. \tag{14.7}$$

Proof In the second paragraph of the proof of Lemma 14.3, we obtained the following estimate (except that here we have N in the role of $N + 1$): $|\mathscr{Z}_\ast^{N;1} \Psi| \lesssim |\check{X} \mathscr{P}^{[1,N-1]} \Psi| + |\mathscr{P}^{\leq N} \Psi| + \varepsilon |\mathscr{Z}_\ast^{\leq N-1;1} \gamma| + \varepsilon |\mathscr{P}_\ast^{[1,N-1]} \gamma|$, where only the second term is present when $N = 0, 1$. The desired bound (14.7) follows from this estimate, Lemma 13.3, the estimates (14.3c) and (14.3d) (with $N - 1$ in the role of N there), the fact that $\mathbb{Q}_{[1,N]}$ is increasing in its arguments, and inequality (10.39) (which we use to annihilate the factors of $\mu_\star^{1/2}(s, u)$ in the denominators of the integrands on RHS (14.3c) and RHS (14.3c)). $\qquad\square$

14.3 Estimates for the Easiest Error Integrals

In this subsection, we derive estimates for the simplest error integrals that appear in our energy estimates, that is, for the simplest integrals on RHS (3.12).

We start with the following simple lemma, which shows that the fundamental controlling quantities from Def. 13.1 are size $\mathcal{O}(\mathring{\epsilon}^2)$ at time 0.

Lemma 14.5 (**The fundamental controlling quantities are initially small**). *Assume that $1 \leq N \leq 18$. Under the data-size assumptions of Subsect. 7.4, the following estimates hold for $u \in [0, U_0]$:*

$$\mathbb{Q}_N(0, u) \lesssim \mathring{\epsilon}^2. \tag{14.8}$$

Proof From Def. 13.1, Lemma 3.4, and Lemma 7.3 (which in particular implies that $\mu \approx 1$ along Σ_0^1), we see that $\mathbb{Q}_N(0, u) \lesssim \left\| \mathscr{Z}_\ast^{\leq N+1;1} \Psi \right\|_{L^2(\Sigma_0^u)}^2$. The estimate (14.8) now follows from the initial data assumptions (7.3). $\qquad\square$

The next lemma provides control over the error integrals corresponding to the deformation tensor of the multiplier vectorfield (3.4), that is, for the last integral on RHS (3.12). We stress that one of these error integrals is coercive in the geometric torus derivatives and was treated separately in Lemma 13.1.

Lemma 14.6 (**Error integrals involving the deformation tensor of the multiplier vectorfield**). *Assume that* $1 \leq N \leq 18$ *and* $\varsigma > 0$. *Let* $^{(T)}\mathfrak{P}_{(i)}[\mathscr{P}^N \Psi]$ *be the quantities defined by* (3.14a)–(3.14e) *(with* $\mathscr{P}^N \Psi$ *in the role of* Ψ*). Under the data-size and bootstrap assumptions of Subsects.* 7.4–7.5 *and the smallness assumptions of Subsect.* 7.7, *the following integral estimates hold for* $(t, u) \in [0, T_{(Boot)}) \times [0, U_0]$, *where the implicit constants are independent of* ς *(and without any absolute value taken on the left):*

$$\int_{\mathcal{M}_{t,u}} \sum_{i=1}^{5} {}^{(T)}\mathfrak{P}_{(i)}[\mathscr{P}^N \Psi] \, d\varpi \lesssim \int_{t'=0}^{t} \frac{1}{\sqrt{T_{(Boot)} - t'}} \mathbb{Q}_{[1,N]}(t', u) \, dt'$$

$$+ (1 + \varsigma^{-1}) \int_{t'=0}^{t} \mathbb{Q}_{[1,N]}(t', u) \, dt'$$

$$+ (1 + \varsigma^{-1}) \int_{u'=0}^{u} \mathbb{Q}_{[1,N]}(t, u') \, du' + \varsigma \mathbb{K}_{[1,N]}(t, u).$$

$$(14.9)$$

Proof We integrate (11.38) (with $\mathscr{P}^N \Psi$ in the role of Ψ) over $\mathcal{M}_{t,u}$ and use Lemmas 13.1 and 13.3.   □

The next lemma yields control over the simplest energy estimate error integrals generated by the commutator terms. These terms appear in the first error integral on RHS (3.12), where $\mathscr{P}^N \Psi$ is in the role of Ψ and $\mathfrak{F}$ is the inhomogeneous term in the wave equation $\mu \Box_{g(\Psi)}(\mathscr{P}^N \Psi) = \mathfrak{F}$.

Lemma 14.7 (L^2 **bounds for error integrals involving** $Harmless^{\leq N}$ **terms**). *Assume that* $1 \leq N \leq 18$ *and* $\varsigma > 0$. *Recall that the terms* $Harmless^{\leq N}$ *are defined in Def.* 11.1. *Under the data-size and bootstrap assumptions of Subsects.* 7.4–7.5 *and the smallness assumptions of Subsect.* 7.7, *the following integral estimates hold for* $(t, u) \in [0, T_{(Boot)}) \times [0, U_0]$, *where the implicit constants are independent of* ς:

$$\int_{\mathcal{M}_{t,u}} \left| \begin{pmatrix} (1+\mu) L \mathscr{P}^N \Psi \\ \breve{X} \mathscr{P}^N \Psi \end{pmatrix} \right| \left| Harmless^{\leq N} \right| d\varpi$$

$$\lesssim (1 + \varsigma^{-1}) \int_{t'=0}^{t} \mathbb{Q}_{[1,N]}(t', u) \, dt' + (1 + \varsigma^{-1}) \int_{u'=0}^{u} \mathbb{Q}_{[1,N]}(t, u') \, du'$$

$$+ \varsigma \mathbb{K}_{[1,N]}(t, u) + \mathring{\mathring{\epsilon}}^2, \qquad (14.10a)$$

$$\int_{\mathcal{M}_{t,u}} \left| \d\!\!\!/ \mathscr{P}^N \Psi \right| \left| Harmless^{\leq N} \right| d\varpi$$

$$\lesssim \int_{t'=0}^{t} \mathbb{Q}_{[1,N]}(t', u) \, dt' + \int_{u'=0}^{u} \mathbb{Q}_{[1,N]}(t, u') \, du' + \mathbb{K}_{[1,N]}(t, u) + \mathring{\mathring{\epsilon}}^2. \quad (14.10b)$$

Proof See Subsect. 8.2 for some comments on the analysis. To prove (14.10a) and (14.10b), we must estimate the spacetime integrals of various quadratic terms. We

derive the desired estimates for three representative quadratic terms. The remaining terms can be similarly bounded and we omit those details. We first bound the integral of $\left|L\mathscr{P}^N\Psi\right|\left|Y\mathscr{P}^{\leq N}\Psi\right|$. Using spacetime Cauchy-Schwarz, Lemmas 13.1 and 13.3, and simple estimates of the form $ab \lesssim a^2 + b^2$, and separately treating the regions $\{\mu \geq 1/4\}$ and $\{\mu < 1/4\}$ when bounding the integral of $\left|Y\mathscr{P}^{\leq N}\Psi\right|^2$, we derive the desired estimate as follows:

$$\int_{\mathcal{M}_{t,u}} \left|L\mathscr{P}^N\Psi\right|\left|Y\mathscr{P}^{\leq N}\Psi\right| d\varpi$$

$$\lesssim \left\{\int_{\mathcal{M}_{t,u}} \left|L\mathscr{P}^N\Psi\right|^2 d\varpi\right\}^{1/2} \left\{\int_{\mathcal{M}_{t,u}} \left|Y\mathscr{P}^{\leq N}\Psi\right|^2 d\varpi\right\}^{1/2}$$

$$\lesssim (1 + \varsigma^{-1}) \int_{u'=0}^{u} \int_{\mathcal{P}_{u'}^t} \left|L\mathscr{P}^N\Psi\right|^2 d\varpi\, du'$$

$$+ \int_{u'=0}^{u} \int_{\mathcal{P}_{u'}^t} \mu \left|\not{d}\mathscr{P}^{\leq N}\Psi\right|^2 d\varpi\, du' + \varsigma \mathring{\delta}_* \int_{\mathcal{M}_{t,u}} \mathbf{1}_{\{\mu<1/4\}} \left|\not{d}\mathscr{P}^{\leq N}\Psi\right|^2 d\varpi$$

$$\lesssim (1 + \varsigma^{-1}) \int_{u'=0}^{u} \mathbb{Q}_{[1,N]}(t,u')\, du' + \varsigma \mathbb{K}_{[1,N]}(t,u), \qquad (14.11)$$

which is $\lesssim$ RHS (14.10a) as desired.

As our second example, we bound the integral of $\left|L\mathscr{P}^N\Psi\right|\left|\mathscr{P}_*^{[1,N]}\mu\right|$. Using spacetime Cauchy-Schwarz, Lemmas 13.1 and 13.3, inequalities (10.39) and (14.3c), simple estimates of the form $ab \lesssim a^2 + b^2$, and the fact that $\mathbb{Q}_{[1,N]}$ is increasing in its arguments, we derive the desired estimate as follows:

$$\int_{\mathcal{M}_{t,u}} \left|L\mathscr{P}^N\Psi\right|\left|\mathscr{P}_*^{[1,N]}\mu\right| d\varpi$$

$$\lesssim \int_{u'=0}^{u} \int_{\mathcal{P}_{u'}^t} \left|L\mathscr{P}^N\Psi\right|^2 d\varpi\, du' + \int_{t'=0}^{t} \int_{\Sigma_{t'}^u} \left|\mathscr{P}_*^{[1,N]}\mu\right|^2 d\underline{\varpi}\, dt'$$

$$\lesssim \int_{u'=0}^{u} \mathbb{Q}_{[1,N]}(t,u')\, du' + \int_{t'=0}^{t} \left\{\int_{s=0}^{t'} \frac{\mathbb{Q}_{[1,N]}^{1/2}(s,u)}{\mu_\star^{1/2}(s,u)} ds\right\}^2 + \mathring{\mathrm{e}}^2\, dt'$$

$$\lesssim \int_{u'=0}^{u} \mathbb{Q}_{[1,N]}(t,u')\, du' + \int_{t'=0}^{t} \mathbb{Q}_{[1,N]}(t',u)\, dt' + \mathring{\mathrm{e}}^2, \qquad (14.12)$$

which is $\lesssim$ RHS (14.10a) as desired.

As our final example, we bound the integral of the product $\left|L\mathscr{P}^N\Psi\right|\left|\mathscr{L}^{N+1;1}\Psi\right|$. We first recall the following estimate obtained in the second paragraph of the proof of Lemma 14.3: $|\mathscr{L}^{N+1;1}\Psi| \lesssim |\check{X}\mathscr{P}^{[1,N]}\Psi| + |\mathscr{P}^{\leq N+1}\Psi| + \varepsilon|\mathscr{L}_*^{\leq N;1}\gamma| + \varepsilon|\mathscr{P}_*^{[1,N]}\underline{\gamma}|$. Thus, we must bound the integral of the four corresponding products generated by the RHS of the previous inequality. To bound the integral of the first product, we argue as in the proof of (14.11) to deduce that

$$\int_{\mathcal{M}_{t,u}} \left| L\mathscr{P}^N \Psi \right| \left| \check{X} \mathscr{P}^{[1,N]}\Psi \right| d\varpi$$

$$\lesssim \int_{u'=0}^{u} \int_{\mathcal{P}_{u'}^t} \left| L\mathscr{P}^N \Psi \right|^2 d\overline{\varpi}\, du' + \int_{t'=0}^{t} \int_{\Sigma_{t'}^u} \left| \check{X}\mathscr{P}^{[1,N]}\Psi \right|^2 d\underline{\varpi}\, dt'$$

$$\lesssim \int_{u'=0}^{u} \mathbb{Q}_{[1,N]}(t,u')\, du' + \int_{t'=0}^{t} \mathbb{Q}_{[1,N]}(t',u)\, dt', \tag{14.13}$$

which is $\lesssim$ RHS (14.10a) as desired. Similar reasoning yields that the integral of the second product $|L\mathscr{P}^N \Psi||\mathscr{P}^{\leq N+1}\Psi|$ is $\lesssim$ RHS (14.11) plus RHS (14.12) as desired. We clarify that the factor $\mathring{\mathring{\epsilon}}^2$ is generated by the square of RHS (13.7a). Similar reasoning, together with inequalities (14.3c) and (14.3d), yields that the integral of the third product $\varepsilon|L\mathscr{P}^N \Psi||\mathscr{Z}_*^{\leq N;1}\gamma|$ and the integral of the fourth product $\varepsilon|L\mathscr{P}^N \Psi||\mathscr{P}_*^{[1,N]}\gamma|$ are $\lesssim$ RHS (14.11) plus RHS (14.12) as desired. We clarify that we have used the fact that $\mathbb{Q}_{[1,N]}$ is increasing in its arguments and the estimate (10.39) to bound the time integrals on RHSs (14.3c) and (14.3d) by $\lesssim \mathbb{Q}_{[1,N]}(t,u)$, as we did in passing to the last line of (14.12). $\qquad\square$

14.4 L^2 Bounds for the Difficult Top-Order Error Integrals in Terms of $\mathbb{Q}_{[1,N]}$

In the next lemma, we estimate, in the norm $\|\cdot\|_{L^2(\Sigma_t^u)}$, the most difficult product that appears in our energy estimates.

Lemma 14.8 (L^2 **bound for the most difficult product**). *Assume that* $1 \leq N \leq 18$. *There exists a constant* $C > 0$ *such that under the data-size and bootstrap assumptions of Subsects. 7.4–7.5 and the smallness assumptions of Subsect. 7.7, the following* L^2 *estimate holds for the difficult product* $(\check{X}\Psi)Y^N \mathrm{tr}_{\slashed{g}}\chi$ *from Prop. 11.10 whenever* $(t,u) \in [0, T_{(Boot)}) \times [0, U_0]$:

$$\left\| (\check{X}\Psi)Y^N \mathrm{tr}_{\slashed{g}}\chi \right\|_{L^2(\Sigma_t^u)} \leq \boxed{2}\, \frac{\|[L\mu]_-\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_t^u)}}{\mu_\star(t,u)} \mathbb{Q}_{[1,N]}^{1/2}(t,u)$$

$$+ \boxed{4.05}\, \frac{\|[L\mu]_-\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_t^u)}}{\mu_\star(t,u)} \int_{s=0}^{t} \frac{\|[L\mu]_-\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_s^u)}}{\mu_\star(s,u)} \mathbb{Q}_{[1,N]}^{1/2}(s,u)\, ds$$

$$+ C\varepsilon \frac{1}{\mu_\star(t,u)} \int_{s=0}^{t} \frac{1}{\mu_\star(s,u)} \mathbb{Q}_{[1,N]}^{1/2}(s,u)\, ds$$

$$+ C \frac{1}{\mu_\star(t,u)} \int_{s'=0}^{t} \frac{1}{\mu_\star(s',u)} \int_{s=0}^{s'} \frac{1}{\mu_\star^{1/2}(s,u)} \mathbb{Q}_{[1,N]}^{1/2}(s,u)\, ds\, ds'$$

$$+ C \frac{1}{\mu_\star(t,u)} \int_{s=0}^{t} \frac{1}{\mu_\star^{1/2}(s,u)} \mathbb{Q}_{[1,N]}^{1/2}(s,u)\, ds$$

$$+ C \frac{1}{\mu_\star^{1/2}(t,u)} \mathbb{Q}_{[1,N]}^{1/2}(t,u) + C \frac{1}{\mu_\star^{3/2}(t,u)} \mathbb{Q}_{[1,N-1]}^{1/2}(t,u)$$

$$+ C \frac{1}{\mu_\star^{3/2}(t,u)} \mathring{\mathring{\epsilon}}. \tag{14.14}$$

Furthermore, we have the following less precise estimate:

$$\left\| \mu Y^N \mathrm{tr}_{\not g} \chi \right\|_{L^2(\Sigma_t^u)} \lesssim \mathbb{Q}_{[1,N]}^{1/2}(t,u) + \int_{s=0}^t \frac{1}{\mu_\star(s,u)} \mathbb{Q}_{[1,N]}^{1/2}(s,u)\, ds$$
$$+ \mathring{\epsilon} \left\{ \ln \mu_\star^{-1}(t,u) + 1 \right\}. \tag{14.15}$$

Proof See Subsect. 8.2 for some comments on the analysis. We first prove (14.14). We take the norm $\| \cdot \|_{L^2(\Sigma_t^u)}$ of both sides of (11.32). Using (13.6), we see that the norm of the first term on RHS (11.32) is $\leq$ the first term on RHS (14.14) as desired. Also using Lemma 13.2, we see that the norm of the second term on RHS (11.32) is $\leq$ the second term on RHS (14.14). We now explain why the norm $\| \cdot \|_{L^2(\Sigma_t^u)}$ of the term |Error| from (11.33) is $\leq$ the sum of the terms on lines three to seven of RHS (14.14). With the exception of the bound for the first term $\dfrac{1}{\mu_\star(t,u)} \left| {}^{(Y^N)}\mathscr{X} \right| (0,u,\vartheta)$ on RHS (11.33), the desired bounds follow from the same estimates used above together with those of Lemma 14.3, Cor. 14.4, inequalities (10.36), (10.38), and (10.39), the fact that $\mathbb{Q}_{[1,N]}$ is increasing in its arguments, and simple inequalities of the form $ab \lesssim a^2 + b^2$. Finally, we must bound $\left\| \dfrac{1}{\mu_\star(t,\cdot)} \left| {}^{(Y^N)}\mathscr{X} \right| (0,\cdot) \right\|_{L^2(\Sigma_t^u)}$. We first use (12.10) with $s = 0$ to deduce $\left\| \dfrac{1}{\mu_\star(t,\cdot)} \left| {}^{(Y^N)}\mathscr{X} \right| (0,\cdot) \right\|_{L^2(\Sigma_t^u)} \lesssim \dfrac{1}{\mu_\star(t,u)} \left\| {}^{(Y^{N-1})}\widetilde{\mathscr{X}} \right\|_{L^2(\Sigma_0^u)}$. We now use definition (6.9a), the simple inequality $|G_{(Frame)}| = |f(\gamma, \not dx^1, \not dx^2)| \lesssim 1$ (which follows from Lemmas 2.19 and 8.4 and the L^∞ estimates of Prop. 8.10), the estimates of Lemma 7.3, the estimate (8.13a), and the assumptions on the data to deduce the desired bound $\dfrac{1}{\mu_\star(t,u)} \left\| {}^{(Y^N)}\mathscr{X} \right\|_{L^2(\Sigma_0^u)} \lesssim \dfrac{1}{\mu_\star(t,u)} \mathring{\epsilon}$. We have thus proved (14.14).

The proof of (14.15) is based on inequality (11.34) and is similar but much simpler; we omit the details, noting only that we use (14.7) to bound the order $\leq N$ derivatives of Ψ on RHS (11.34) and that inequality (10.38) leads to the presence of the factor $\ln \mu_\star^{-1}(t,u) + 1$. □

14.5 L^2 Bounds for Less Degenerate Top-Order Error Integrals in Terms of $\mathbb{Q}_{[1,N]}$

In the next lemma, we bound some top-order error integrals that appear in our energy estimates. As in the proof of Lemma 14.8, we need to use the modified quantities to avoid losing a derivative. However, the estimates of the lemma are much less degenerate than those of Lemma 14.8 because of the availability of a helpful factor of μ in the integrands.

Lemma 14.9 (**Bounds for less degenerate top-order error integrals**). *Assume that $1 \leq N \leq 18$. Under the data-size and bootstrap assumptions of Subsects. 7.4–7.5 and the smallness assumptions of Subsect. 7.7, the following integral estimates hold for $(t,u) \in [0, T_{(Boot)}) \times [0, U_0]$:*

$$\left| \int_{\mathcal{M}_{t,u}} \rho (\breve{X} Y^N \Psi)(\breve{X}\Psi)(\slashed{d}^{\#}\Psi) \cdot (\mu \slashed{d} Y^{N-1} \mathrm{tr}_{\slashed{g}} \chi) \, d\varpi \right|$$

$$\lesssim \int_{t'=0}^{t} \left\{ \ln \mu_{\star}^{-1}(t', u) + 1 \right\}^2 \mathbb{Q}_{[1,N]}(t', u) \, dt' + \mathring{\epsilon}^2, \qquad (14.16a)$$

$$\left| \int_{\mathcal{M}_{t,u}} (1 + 2\mu)\rho (L Y^N \Psi)(\breve{X}\Psi)(\slashed{d}^{\#}\Psi) \cdot (\mu \slashed{d} Y^{N-1} \mathrm{tr}_{\slashed{g}} \chi) \, d\varpi \right|$$

$$\lesssim \int_{t'=0}^{t} \left\{ \ln \mu_{\star}^{-1}(t', u) + 1 \right\}^2 \mathbb{Q}_{[1,N]}(t', u) \, dt' + \int_{u'=0}^{u} \mathbb{Q}_{[1,N]}(t, u') \, du' + \mathring{\epsilon}^2.$$

$$(14.16b)$$

Proof See Subsect. 8.2 for some comments on the analysis. To prove (14.16b), we use the fact that $\rho = f(\gamma)\gamma$ (see (2.89c)), the L^{∞} estimates of Prop. 8.10, Cauchy-Schwarz, and (13.6) to deduce

$$\text{LHS}(14.16b) \lesssim \int_{\mathcal{M}_{t,u}} \left| L Y^N \Psi \right|^2 d\varpi + \int_{\mathcal{M}_{t,u}} \left| \mu Y^N \mathrm{tr}_{\slashed{g}} \chi \right|^2 d\varpi$$

$$\lesssim \int_{u'=0}^{u} \left\| L Y^N \Psi \right\|_{L^2(\mathcal{P}_{u'}^t)}^2 du' + \int_{t'=0}^{t} \left\| \mu Y^N \mathrm{tr}_{\slashed{g}} \chi \right\|_{L^2(\Sigma_{t'}^u)}^2 dt'$$

$$\lesssim \int_{u'=0}^{u} \mathbb{Q}_{[1,N]}(t, u') \, du' + \int_{t'=0}^{t} \left\| \mu Y^N \mathrm{tr}_{\slashed{g}} \chi \right\|_{L^2(\Sigma_{t'}^u)}^2 dt'. \qquad (14.17)$$

To complete the proof of (14.16b), we must handle the final integral on RHS (14.17). To bound the integral by $\leq$ RHS (14.16b) we use inequality (14.15) (with t' in place of t), simple estimates of the form $ab \lesssim a^2 + b^2$, and we in addition use (10.38) and the fact that $\mathbb{Q}_{[1,N]}$ is increasing in its arguments to bound the time integral on RHS (14.15) as follows:

$$\int_{s=0}^{t'} \frac{1}{\mu_{\star}(s, u)} \mathbb{Q}_{[1,N]}^{1/2}(s, u) \, ds \lesssim \left\{ \ln \mu_{\star}^{-1}(t', u) + 1 \right\} \mathbb{Q}_{[1,N]}^{1/2}(t', u).$$

In carrying out this procedure, we encounter the following integral generated by the next-to-last term on RHS (14.15):

$$\mathring{\epsilon}^2 \int_{t'=0}^{t} \left\{ \ln \mu_{\star}^{-1}(t', u) + 1 \right\}^2 dt'.$$

Using (10.39), we deduce that the above term is $\lesssim \mathring{\epsilon}^2$ as desired. We have thus proved (14.16b).

The proof of (14.16a) starts with the following analog of (14.17), which can proved in the same way:

$$\text{LHS } (14.16a) \lesssim \int_{t'=0}^{t} \left\| \breve{X} Y^N \Psi \right\|_{L^2(\Sigma_{t'}^u)}^2 dt' + \int_{t'=0}^{t} \left\| \mu Y^N \mathrm{tr}_{\slashed{g}} \chi \right\|_{L^2(\Sigma_{t'}^u)}^2 dt'.$$

The remaining details are similar to those given in the proof of (14.16b); we therefore omit them. □

14.6 Error Integrals Requiring Integration by Parts with Respect to L

In deriving top-order energy estimates, we encounter the error integral

$$
-\int_{\mathcal{M}_{t,u}} (1 + 2\mu)(LY^N\Psi)(\check{X}\Psi)Y^N\mathrm{tr}_{\not g}\chi \, d\varpi.
$$

It turns out that to suitably bound it, we must rely on the partially modified quantity $^{(Y^{N-1})}\widetilde{\mathscr{X}}$ defined in (6.9a), and we must also integrate by parts via the identity (3.22). We derive the main estimate of interest for the above error integral in Lemma 14.12. Before proving the lemma, we first establish some preliminary estimates for various error integrals that arise from the integration by parts procedure. We bound the most difficult of these integrals, which is a Σ_t^u boundary integral, in Lemma 14.10.

We start by deriving $\|\cdot\|_{L^2(\Sigma_t^u)}$ estimates for the two second most difficult products that appear in our energy estimates.

Lemma 14.10 (**A difficult hypersurface L^2 estimate**). *Assume that $1 \le N \le 18$. Let $^{(Y^{N-1})}\widetilde{\mathscr{X}}$ be the partially modified quantity defined by (6.9a). Under the data-size and bootstrap assumptions of Subsects. 7.4–7.5 and the smallness assumptions of Subsect. 7.7, the following L^2 estimate holds for $(t, u) \in [0, T_{(Boot)}) \times [0, U_0]$:*

$$
\left\| \frac{1}{\sqrt{\mu}}(\check{X}\Psi)L^{(Y^{N-1})}\widetilde{\mathscr{X}} \right\|_{L^2(\Sigma_t^u)} \le \boxed{\sqrt{2}} \frac{\|[L\mu]_-\|_{C^0(\Sigma_t^u)}}{\mu_\star(t, u)} \mathbb{Q}_{[1,N]}^{1/2}(t, u)
$$

$$
+ C \frac{1}{\mu_\star^{1/2}(t, u)} \mathbb{Q}_{[1,N]}^{1/2}(t, u) + C\varepsilon \frac{1}{\mu_\star(t, u)} \mathbb{Q}_{[1,N]}^{1/2}(t, u)
$$

$$
+ C\mathring{\varepsilon} \frac{1}{\mu_\star^{1/2}(t, u)}, \tag{14.18a}
$$

$$
\left\| \frac{1}{\sqrt{\mu}}(\check{X}\Psi)^{(Y^{N-1})}\widetilde{\mathscr{X}} \right\|_{L^2(\Sigma_t^u)}
$$

$$
\le \boxed{\sqrt{2}} \|L\mu\|_{L^\infty((-)\Sigma_{t;t}^u)} \frac{1}{\mu_\star^{1/2}(t, u)} \int_{t'=0}^t \frac{1}{\mu_\star^{1/2}(t', u)} \mathbb{Q}_{[1,N]}^{1/2}(t', u) \, dt'
$$

$$
+ C \int_{t'=0}^t \frac{1}{\mu_\star^{1/2}(t', u)} \mathbb{Q}_{[1,N]}^{1/2}(t', u) \, dt'
$$

$$
+ C\varepsilon \frac{1}{\mu_\star^{1/2}(t, u)} \int_{t'=0}^t \frac{1}{\mu_\star^{1/2}(t', u)} \mathbb{Q}_{[1,N]}^{1/2}(t', u) \, dt' + C\mathring{\varepsilon} \frac{1}{\mu_\star^{1/2}(t, u)}. \tag{14.18b}
$$

Moreover, we have the following less precise estimates:

$$\left\| L^{(Y^{N-1})}\widetilde{\mathscr{X}} \right\|_{L^2(\Sigma_t^u)} \lesssim \frac{1}{\mu_\star^{1/2}(t,u)} \mathbb{Q}_{[1,N]}^{1/2}(t,u) + \mathring{\epsilon}, \tag{14.19a}$$

$$\left\| {}^{(Y^{N-1})}\widetilde{\mathscr{X}} \right\|_{L^2(\Sigma_t^u)} \lesssim \int_{t'=0}^t \frac{1}{\mu_\star^{1/2}(t',u)} \mathbb{Q}_{[1,N]}^{1/2}(t',u)\,dt' + \mathring{\epsilon}. \tag{14.19b}$$

Proof See Subsect. 8.2 for some comments on the analysis. We first prove (14.18b). We take the norm $\|\cdot\|_{L^2(\Sigma_t^u)}$ of $\frac{1}{\sqrt{\mu}}(\check{X}\Psi)$ times (11.39b). We bound the terms arising from the third line of RHS (11.39b) by $\leq$ the sum of the last two terms on RHS (14.18b) with the help of Lemma 13.2, Lemma 13.3, Lemma 14.3, and the estimate $\|\check{X}\Psi\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_t^u)} \lesssim 1$ (that is, (8.30a)).

To bound the norm $\|\cdot\|_{L^2(\Sigma_t^u)}$ of the product $\frac{1}{2}\frac{1}{\sqrt{\mu}}(\check{X}\Psi)|G_{LL}|\int_{t'=0}^t |\slashed{A}Y^{N-1}\Psi|\,dt'$, we first use equation (2.62), the relations $G_{LL}, G_{LX} = f(\gamma)$ (see Lemma 2.19), inequality (8.2), the L^∞ estimates of Prop. 8.10, and Cor. 8.11 to pointwise bound the product by $\leq (1+C\varepsilon)\left\{ \frac{|L\mu(t,u,\vartheta)|}{\sqrt{\mu(t,u,\vartheta)}} + C\varepsilon \right\} \int_{t'=0}^t \left|\slashed{d}Y^{\leq N}\Psi\right|(t',u,\vartheta)\,dt'$. As above, we can bound the product involving the factor $C\varepsilon$ by $\leq$ the next-to-last term on RHS (14.18b) by using Lemmas 13.2 and 13.3. To bound the remaining (difficult) term $(1+C\varepsilon)\left\| \frac{L\mu}{\sqrt{\mu}} \int_{t'=0}^t \left|\slashed{d}Y^{\leq N}\Psi\right|\,dt' \right\|_{L^2(\Sigma_t^u)}$, we first decompose $\Sigma_t^u = {}^{(+)}\Sigma_{t;t}^u \cup {}^{(-)}\Sigma_{t;t}^u$ as in Def. 10.3 and use Lemmas 13.2 and 13.3 to bound it by $\leq (1+C\varepsilon)$ times

$$\boxed{\sqrt{2}}\left\| \frac{L\mu}{\sqrt{\mu}} \right\|_{L^\infty({}^{(-)}\Sigma_{t;t}^u)} \int_{t'=0}^t \frac{1}{\mu_\star^{1/2}(t',u)} \mathbb{Q}_{[1,N]}^{1/2}(t',u)\,dt'$$

$$+ C\left\| \frac{L\mu}{\sqrt{\mu}} \right\|_{L^\infty({}^{(+)}\Sigma_{t;t}^u)} \int_{t'=0}^t \frac{1}{\mu_\star^{1/2}(t',u)} \mathbb{Q}_{[1,N]}^{1/2}(t',u)\,dt'. \tag{14.20}$$

The fact that $(1+C\varepsilon) \times$ RHS (14.20) $\leq$ RHS (14.18b) follows from using (8.31a), (8.32a), (10.11), and (10.19) to deduce that $(1+C\varepsilon)\left\| \frac{L\mu}{\sqrt{\mu}} \right\|_{L^\infty({}^{(-)}\Sigma_{t;t}^u)} \leq \|L\mu\|_{L^\infty({}^{(-)}\Sigma_{t;t}^u)} \mu_\star^{-1/2}(t,u) + C\varepsilon\mu_\star^{-1/2}(t,u)$ and $\left\| \frac{L\mu}{\sqrt{\mu}} \right\|_{L^\infty({}^{(+)}\Sigma_{t;t}^u)} \leq C$.

Finally, we must bound the norm $\|\cdot\|_{L^2(\Sigma_t^u)}$ of the product arising from the first term $\left|{}^{(Y^{N-1})}\widetilde{\mathscr{X}}\right|(0,\cdot)$ on RHS (11.39b). We first use (8.30a) and (12.10) with $s=0$ to deduce $\left\| \frac{1}{\sqrt{\mu}}(\check{X}\Psi)\left|{}^{(Y^{N-1})}\widetilde{\mathscr{X}}\right|(0,\cdot) \right\|_{L^2(\Sigma_t^u)} \lesssim \frac{1}{\mu_\star^{1/2}(t,u)}\left\| {}^{(Y^{N-1})}\widetilde{\mathscr{X}} \right\|_{L^2(\Sigma_0^u)}$. Next, from definition (6.9a), the simple inequality $|G_{(Frame)}| = |f(\gamma, \slashed{d}x^1, \slashed{d}x^2)| \lesssim 1$ (which follows from Lemmas 2.19 and 8.4 and the L^∞ estimates of Prop. 8.10), the estimates of Lemma 7.3, the estimate (8.13a), and the assumptions on the data, we find that

$\left\| {}^{(Y^{N-1})}\widetilde{\mathscr{X}} \right\|_{L^2(\Sigma_0^u)} \lesssim \mathring{\varepsilon}$. In total, we conclude that the product under consideration is $\lesssim$ the last term on RHS (14.18b) as desired. We have thus proved (14.18b).

To prove (14.18a), we take the norm $\| \cdot \|_{L^2(\Sigma_t^u)}$ of $\frac{1}{\sqrt{\mu}}(\check{X}\Psi)$ times (11.39a). We bound the terms arising from the last two terms on RHS (11.39a) by $\leq$ the last two terms on RHS (14.18b) with the help of Lemma 13.3, and the estimates $\|\check{X}\Psi\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_t^u)} \lesssim 1$, (10.39), (14.3c), and (14.3d). Note that we have used (10.39) and the fact that the $\mathbb{Q}_{[1,N]}$ are increasing in their arguments to bound the time integrals on RHS (14.3c)–(14.3d) by $\lesssim \mathbb{Q}_{[1,N]}(t,u)$. To bound the norm $\| \cdot \|_{L^2(\Sigma_t^u)}$ of the product $\frac{1}{2}\frac{1}{\sqrt{\mu}}(\check{X}\Psi)\,|G_{LL}|\,\left|\slashed{\Delta} Y^{N-1}\Psi\right|$, we first use the reasoning from the second paragraph of this proof to pointwise bound the product by $\leq \frac{1}{\mu_\star(t,u)}\|[L\mu]_-\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_t^u)}\left|\sqrt{\mu}\slashed{d}Y^{\leq N}\Psi\right| + C\left\|\frac{[L\mu]_+}{\mu}\right\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_t^u)}\left|\sqrt{\mu}\slashed{d}Y^{\leq N}\Psi\right| + \frac{C\varepsilon}{\mu_\star(t,u)}\left|\sqrt{\mu}\slashed{d}Y^{\leq N}\Psi\right|$. Thus, using inequality (10.11) and Lemma 13.3, we bound the norm $\| \cdot \|_{L^2(\Sigma_t^u)}$ of these products by $\leq$ the sum of the first, second, and third terms on RHS (14.18a).

The proofs of (14.19a) and (14.19b) are based on a strict subset of the above arguments and are much simpler; we omit the details. $\qquad\square$

We now derive estimates for some error integrals that are much easier to estimate than the ones treated in Lemma 14.10.

Lemma 14.11 (**Bounds connected to easy top-order error integrals requiring integration by parts with respect to** L). *Assume that* $1 \leq N \leq 18$ *and* $\varsigma > 0$. *Let* $\mathrm{Error}_i[Y^N\Psi; {}^{(Y^{N-1})}\widetilde{\mathscr{X}}]$ *be the error integrands defined in* (3.23a) *and* (3.23b), *where* $Y^N\Psi$ *is in the role of* $\mathscr{P}^N\Psi$ *and the partially modified quantity* ${}^{(Y^{N-1})}\widetilde{\mathscr{X}}$ *defined in* (6.9a) *is in role of* η. *Under the data-size and bootstrap assumptions of Subsects.* 7.4–7.5 *and the smallness assumptions of Subsect.* 7.7, *the following estimates hold for* $(t,u) \in [0, T_{(Boot)}) \times [0, U_0]$, *where the implicit constants are independent of* ς:

$$\int_{\mathcal{M}_{t,u}} \left|\mathrm{Error}_1[Y^N\Psi; {}^{(Y^{N-1})}\widetilde{\mathscr{X}}]\right| d\varpi$$

$$\lesssim (1+\varsigma^{-1})\int_{s=0}^t \frac{1}{\mu_\star^{1/2}(s,u)}\mathbb{Q}_{[1,N]}(s,u)\,ds + \int_{s=0}^t \frac{1}{\mu_\star^{3/2}(s,u)}\mathbb{Q}_{[1,N-1]}(s,u)\,ds$$

$$+ \varsigma\mathbb{K}_{[1,N]}(t,u) + (1+\varsigma^{-1})\mathring{\varepsilon}^2, \tag{14.21a}$$

$$\int_{\Sigma_t^u} \left|\mathrm{Error}_2[Y^N\Psi; {}^{(Y^{N-1})}\widetilde{\mathscr{X}}]\right| d\varpi \lesssim \mathring{\varepsilon}^2 + \varepsilon\mathbb{Q}_{[1,N]}(t,u), \tag{14.21b}$$

$$\int_{\Sigma_0^u} \left|\mathrm{Error}_2[Y^N\Psi; {}^{(Y^{N-1})}\widetilde{\mathscr{X}}]\right| d\varpi \lesssim \mathring{\varepsilon}^2, \tag{14.21c}$$

$$\int_{\Sigma_0^u} \left|(1+2\mu)(\check{X}\Psi)(Y\mathscr{P}^N\Psi)^{(Y^{N-1})}\widetilde{\mathscr{X}}\right| d\varpi \lesssim \mathring{\varepsilon}^2. \tag{14.21d}$$

Proof See Subsect. 8.2 for some comments on the analysis. We first prove (14.21a). All products on RHS (3.23a) contain a quadratic factor of $(\not{d}Y^N\Psi)^{(Y^{N-1})}\widetilde{\mathscr{X}}$, $(Y^{N+1}\Psi)^{(Y^{N-1})}\widetilde{\mathscr{X}}$, $(Y^N\Psi)^{(Y^{N-1})}\widetilde{\mathscr{X}}$, or $(Y^N\Psi)L^{(Y^{N-1})}\widetilde{\mathscr{X}}$. With the help of the estimates (8.15a) and (8.18a) and the L^∞ estimates of Prop. 8.10, it is easy to see that the remaining factors are bounded in L^∞ by $\lesssim 1$. Hence it suffices to bound the spacetime integrals of the magnitude of the four quadratic terms by $\lesssim$ RHS (14.21a). To bound the spacetime integral of $\left|(Y^{N+1}\Psi)^{(Y^{N-1})}\widetilde{\mathscr{X}}\right|$, we use spacetime Cauchy-Schwarz, Lemmas 13.1 and 13.3, inequalities (10.39) and (14.19b), simple estimates of the form $ab \lesssim a^2 + b^2$, and the fact that $\mathbb{Q}_{[1,N]}$ is increasing in its arguments to deduce

$$
\int_{\mathcal{M}_{t,u}} \left|(Y^{N+1}\Psi)^{(Y^{N-1})}\widetilde{\mathscr{X}}\right| d\varpi
$$

$$
\lesssim \varsigma\mathring{\delta}_* \int_{\mathcal{M}_{t,u}} \left|\not{d}Y^N\Psi\right|^2 d\varpi + \varsigma^{-1}\mathring{\delta}_*^{-1} \int_{s=0}^t \left\|{}^{(Y^{N-1})}\widetilde{\mathscr{X}}\right\|_{L^2(\Sigma_s^u)}^2 ds
$$

$$
\lesssim \varsigma\mathbb{K}_{[1,N]}(t,u) + \varsigma^{-1} \int_{s=0}^t \left\{ \int_{t'=0}^s \frac{1}{\mu_\star^{1/2}(t',u)} \mathbb{Q}_{[1,N]}^{1/2}(t',u)\, dt' \right\}^2 + \varsigma^{-1}\mathring{\epsilon}^2\, ds
$$

$$
\lesssim \varsigma\mathbb{K}_{[1,N]}(t,u) + \varsigma^{-1} \int_{s=0}^t \mathbb{Q}_{[1,N]}(s,u)\, ds + \varsigma^{-1}\mathring{\epsilon}^2, \tag{14.22}
$$

which is $\leq$ RHS (14.21a) as desired. We clarify that in passing to the last inequality in (14.22), we have used the fact that $\mathbb{Q}_{[1,N]}$ is increasing in its arguments and the estimate (10.39) to deduce that $\int_{t'=0}^s \frac{1}{\mu_\star^{1/2}(t',u)} \mathbb{Q}_{[1,N]}^{1/2}(t',u)\, dt' \lesssim \mathbb{Q}_{[1,N]}^{1/2}(s,u)$, as we did in passing to the last line of (14.12).

The spacetime integral of $\left|(\not{d}Y^N\Psi)^{(Y^{N-1})}\widetilde{\mathscr{X}}\right|$ can be bounded in the same way.

The spacetime integral of $\left|(Y^N\Psi)^{(Y^{N-1})}\widetilde{\mathscr{X}}\right|$ can be bounded by $\leq$ RHS (14.21a) by using essentially the same arguments; we omit the details.

To bound the spacetime integral of $\left|(Y^N\Psi)L^{(Y^{N-1})}\widetilde{\mathscr{X}}\right|$, by $\leq$ RHS (14.21a), we first use Cauchy-Schwarz, Lemmas 13.1 and 13.3, and inequality (14.19a) to deduce

$$
\int_{\mathcal{M}_{t,u}} \left|(Y^N\Psi)L^{(Y^{N-1})}\widetilde{\mathscr{X}}\right| d\varpi \lesssim \int_{s=0}^t \left\|Y^N\Psi\right\|_{L^2(\Sigma_s^u)} \left\|L^{(Y^{N-1})}\widetilde{\mathscr{X}}\right\|_{L^2(\Sigma_s^u)} ds
$$

$$
\lesssim \int_{s=0}^t \frac{1}{\mu_\star(s,u)} \mathbb{Q}_{[1,N-1]}^{1/2}(s,u)\mathbb{Q}_{[1,N]}^{1/2}(s,u)\, ds
$$

$$
+ \mathring{\epsilon} \int_{s=0}^t \frac{1}{\mu_\star^{1/2}(s,u)} \mathbb{Q}_{[1,N-1]}^{1/2}(s,u)\, ds. \tag{14.23}
$$

Finally, using simple estimates of the form $ab \lesssim a^2 + b^2$, the estimate (10.39), and the fact that $\mathbb{Q}_{[1,N]}$ is increasing in its arguments, we bound RHS (14.23) by $\lesssim$ RHS (14.21a) as desired. This concludes the proof of (14.21a).

We now prove (14.21b) and (14.21c). We first note that RHS (3.23b) is in magnitude $\lesssim \varepsilon \left| Y^N \Psi \right| \left| {}^{(Y^{N-1})} \widetilde{\mathscr{X}} \right|$, an estimate that can easily be verified with the help of the estimate (8.18a) and the L^∞ estimates of Prop. 8.10. Next, using Cauchy-Schwarz on Σ_t^u, Lemma 13.3, (14.19b), and the estimate (10.39), we deduce that

$$
\begin{aligned}
\varepsilon \int_{\Sigma_t^u} \left| Y^N \Psi \right| \left| {}^{(Y^{N-1})} \widetilde{\mathscr{X}} \right| d\underline{\varpi} &\lesssim \varepsilon \left\| Y^N \Psi \right\|_{L^2(\Sigma_t^u)} \left\| {}^{(Y^{N-1})} \widetilde{\mathscr{X}} \right\|_{L^2(\Sigma_t^u)} \\
&\lesssim \varepsilon \mathbb{Q}_{[1,N]}^{1/2}(t,u) \left\{ \mathbb{Q}_{[1,N]}^{1/2}(t,u) + \mathring{\mathring{\epsilon}} \right\} \\
&\lesssim \text{RHS (14.21b)}, \tag{14.24}
\end{aligned}
$$

as desired. We clarify that in passing to the second line of (14.24), we have used (10.39) and the fact that $\mathbb{Q}_{[1,N]}$ is increasing in its arguments to bound the time integral on RHS (14.19b) by $\lesssim \mathbb{Q}_{[1,N]}^{1/2}(t,u)$. (14.21c) then follows from (14.21b) with $t = 0$ and Lemma 14.5.

The proof of (14.21d) is similar. The main difference is that the L^∞ estimates of Prop. 8.10 imply only that LHS (14.21d) is $\lesssim \int_{\Sigma_0^u} \left| Y^{N+1} \Psi \right| \left| {}^{(Y^{N-1})} \widetilde{\mathscr{X}} \right| d\varpi$, without a gain of a factor ε. However, this integral is quadratically small in the data parameter $\mathring{\mathring{\epsilon}}$, as is easy to verify using Lemma 14.5 and the arguments given in the previous paragraph. We have thus proved (14.21d) and established the lemma. $\qquad\square$

We now combine the previous results to prove the main lemma of Subsect. 14.6.

Lemma 14.12 (Bounds for difficult top-order error integrals connected to integration by parts involving L). *Assume that $1 \leq N \leq 18$ and $\varsigma > 0$. Let ${}^{(Y^{N-1})} \widetilde{\mathscr{X}}$ be the partially modified quantity defined in (6.9a). There exists a constant $C > 0$, independent of ς, such that under the data-size and bootstrap assumptions of Subsects. 7.4–7.5 and the smallness assumptions of Subsect. 7.7, the following estimates hold for $(t, u) \in [0, T_{(Boot)}) \times [0, U_0]$:*

$$
\begin{aligned}
&\left| \iint_{\mathcal{M}_{t,u}} (1 + 2\mu)(\check{X}\Psi)(Y^{N+1}\Psi) L {}^{(Y^{N-1})} \widetilde{\mathscr{X}} \, d\varpi \right| \\
&\leq \boxed{2} \int_{t'=0}^{t} \frac{\left\| [L\mu]_- \right\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_{t'}^u)}}{\mu_\star(t', u)} \mathbb{Q}_{[1,N]}(t', u) \, dt' \\
&\quad + C\varepsilon \int_{t'=0}^{t} \frac{1}{\mu_\star(t', u)} \mathbb{Q}_{[1,N]}(t', u) \, dt' + C \int_{t'=0}^{t} \frac{1}{\mu_\star^{1/2}(t', u)} \mathbb{Q}_{[1,N]}(t', u) \, dt' \\
&\quad + C\mathring{\mathring{\epsilon}}^2, \tag{14.25}
\end{aligned}
$$

$$
\begin{aligned}
&\left| \int_{\Sigma_t^u} (1 + 2\mu)(\check{X}\Psi)(Y^{N+1}\Psi) {}^{(Y^{N-1})} \widetilde{\mathscr{X}} \, d\varpi \right| \\
&\leq \boxed{2} \frac{1}{\mu_\star^{1/2}(t, u)} \mathbb{Q}_{[1,N]}^{1/2}(t, u) \left\| L\mu \right\|_{L^\infty((-)\Sigma_{t;t}^u)} \int_{t'=0}^{t} \frac{1}{\mu_\star^{1/2}(t', u)} \mathbb{Q}_{[1,N]}^{1/2}(t', u) \, dt'
\end{aligned}
$$

$$+ C\varepsilon \frac{1}{\upmu_\star^{1/2}(t,u)} \mathbb{Q}_{[1,N]}^{1/2}(t,u) \int_{t'=0}^t \frac{1}{\upmu_\star^{1/2}(t',u)} \mathbb{Q}_{[1,N]}^{1/2}(t',u)\,dt'$$

$$+ C\mathbb{Q}_{[1,N]}^{1/2}(t,u) \int_{t'=0}^t \frac{1}{\upmu_\star^{1/2}(t',u)} \mathbb{Q}_{[1,N]}^{1/2}(t',u)\,dt'$$

$$+ C\varsigma\mathbb{Q}_{[1,N]}(t,u) + C\varsigma^{-1}\mathring{\upepsilon}^2 \frac{1}{\upmu_\star(t,u)}. \tag{14.26}$$

Proof See Subsect. 8.2 for some comments on the analysis. To prove (14.25), we first use Cauchy-Schwarz and the estimate $|Y| \leq 1 + C\varepsilon$ (which follows from (8.14a) and the L^∞ estimates of Prop. 8.10) and in particular the estimates $\left\| \check{X}\Psi \right\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_t^u)} \lesssim 1$ and $\|\upmu\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_t^u)} \lesssim 1$ to bound the LHS by

$$\leq (1+C\varepsilon) \int_{t'=0}^t \left\| \sqrt{\upmu}\,\mathcal{d}Y^N\Psi \right\|_{L^2(\Sigma_{t'}^u)} \left\| \frac{1}{\sqrt{\upmu}}(\check{X}\Psi)L^{(Y^{N-1})}\widetilde{\mathscr{X}} \right\|_{L^2(\Sigma_{t'}^u)}\,dt'$$

$$+ C \int_{t'=0}^t \left\| \sqrt{\upmu}\,\mathcal{d}Y^N\Psi \right\|_{L^2(\Sigma_{t'}^u)} \left\| L^{(Y^{N-1})}\widetilde{\mathscr{X}} \right\|_{L^2(\Sigma_{t'}^u)}\,dt'. \tag{14.27}$$

The desired estimate (14.25) now follows from (14.27), Lemma 13.3, and inequalities (14.18a) and (14.19a). Note that to bound the integral $C \int_{t'=0}^t \mathring{\upepsilon} \frac{1}{\upmu_\star^{1/2}(t',u)} \mathbb{Q}_{[1,N]}^{1/2}(t',u)\,dt'$, which is generated by the last term on RHS (14.18a), we first use Young's inequality to bound the integrand by $\lesssim \frac{\mathring{\upepsilon}^2}{\upmu_\star^{1/2}(t',u)} + \frac{\mathbb{Q}_{[1,N]}(t',u)}{\upmu_\star^{1/2}(t',u)}$. We then bound the time integral of the first term in the previous expression by $\lesssim \mathring{\upepsilon}^2$ with the help of the estimate (10.39) and the time integral of the second by $\leq$ the third term on RHS (14.25).

The proof of (14.26) is similar but relies on (14.18b) and (14.19b) in place of (14.18a) and (14.19a); we omit the details, noting only that we encounter the term $C\mathring{\upepsilon} \frac{1}{\upmu_\star^{1/2}(t,u)} \mathbb{Q}_{[1,N]}^{1/2}(t,u)$ generated by the last term on RHS (14.18b). We bound this term by using Young's inequality as follows: $C\mathring{\upepsilon} \frac{1}{\upmu_\star^{1/2}(t,u)} \mathbb{Q}_{[1,N]}^{1/2}(t,u) \leq$

$C\varsigma^{-1}\mathring{\upepsilon}^2 \frac{1}{\upmu_\star(t,u)} + C\varsigma\mathbb{Q}_{[1,N]}(t,u).$ $\qquad\square$

14.7 Estimates for Error Integrals Involving a Loss of One Derivative

The following lemma plays a central role in our proof that the energy estimates become successively less degenerate with respect to powers of $\upmu_\star^{-1}$ as we descend below top order. In the lemma, we consider the two most difficult error integrals that we encounter in our proof of Prop. 14.2. Here, we bound them in a much simpler way that incurs a loss of one derivative (which is permissible below top order). The main advantage of these

estimates compared to the ones that do not lose derivatives is: *the derivative-losing estimates are much less degenerate with respect to* $\mu_\star^{-1}$.

Lemma 14.13 (**Estimates for error integrals involving a loss of one derivative**). *Assume that* $2 \leq N \leq 18$. *Under the data-size and bootstrap assumptions of Subsects. 7.4–7.5 and the smallness assumptions of Subsect. 7.7, the following estimates hold for* $(t, u) \in [0, T_{(Boot)}) \times [0, U_0]$:

$$
\left| \int_{\mathcal{M}_{t,u}} (\check{X} \mathscr{P}^{N-1} \Psi)(\check{X} \Psi) Y^{N-1} \mathrm{tr}_{g\!\!\!/}\chi \, d\varpi \right|
$$
$$
\lesssim \int_{t'=0}^{t} \mathbb{Q}_{[1,N-1]}^{1/2}(t', u) \left\{ \int_{s=0}^{t'} \frac{\mathbb{Q}_{[1,N]}^{1/2}(s, u)}{\mu_\star^{1/2}(s, u)} \, ds \right\} dt' + \mathring{\epsilon} \int_{t'=0}^{t} \frac{\mathbb{Q}_{[1,N-1]}^{1/2}(t', u)}{\mu_\star^{1/2}(t', u)} \, dt',
$$
$$(14.28a)$$

$$
\left| \int_{\mathcal{M}_{t,u}} (1 + 2\mu)(L \mathscr{P}^{N-1} \Psi)(\check{X} \Psi) Y^{N-1} \mathrm{tr}_{g\!\!\!/}\chi \, d\varpi \right|
$$
$$
\lesssim \int_{t'=0}^{t} \frac{\mathbb{Q}_{[1,N-1]}^{1/2}(t', u)}{\mu_\star^{1/2}(t', u)} \left\{ \int_{s=0}^{t'} \frac{\mathbb{Q}_{[1,N]}^{1/2}(s, u)}{\mu_\star^{1/2}(s, u)} \, ds \right\} dt' + \mathring{\epsilon} \int_{t'=0}^{t} \frac{\mathbb{Q}_{[1,N-1]}^{1/2}(t', u)}{\mu_\star^{1/2}(t', u)} \, dt'.
$$
$$(14.28b)$$

Proof See Subsect. 8.2 for some comments on the analysis. We first prove (14.28b). We begin by using the L^∞ estimates of Prop. 8.10 to bound two of the factors in the integrand on the LHS as follows: $\left\| (1 + 2\mu)(\check{X} \Psi) \right\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_t^u)} \lesssim 1$. Using the previous estimate, Cauchy-Schwarz, Lemma 13.3, and the estimate (14.3c), we bound LHS (14.28b) by

$$
\lesssim \int_{t'=0}^{t} \frac{1}{\mu_\star^{1/2}(t, u)} \left\| \sqrt{\mu} L \mathscr{P}^{N-1} \Psi \right\|_{L^2(\Sigma_{t'}^u)} \left\| Y^{N-1} \mathrm{tr}_{g\!\!\!/}\chi \right\|_{L^2(\Sigma_{t'}^u)} dt'
$$
$$
\lesssim \int_{t'=0}^{t} \frac{\mathbb{Q}_{[1,N-1]}^{1/2}(t', u)}{\mu_\star^{1/2}(t', u)} \left\{ \mathring{\epsilon} + \int_{s=0}^{t'} \frac{\mathbb{Q}_{[1,N]}^{1/2}(s, u)}{\mu_\star^{1/2}(s, u)} \, ds \right\} dt'
$$
$$
\lesssim \int_{t'=0}^{t} \frac{\mathbb{Q}_{[1,N-1]}^{1/2}(t', u)}{\mu_\star^{1/2}(t', u)} \left\{ \int_{s=0}^{t'} \frac{\mathbb{Q}_{[1,N]}^{1/2}(s, u)}{\mu_\star^{1/2}(s, u)} \, ds \right\} dt' + \mathring{\epsilon} \int_{t'=0}^{t} \frac{\mathbb{Q}_{[1,N-1]}^{1/2}(t', u)}{\mu_\star^{1/2}(t', u)} \, dt'
$$
$$(14.29)$$

as desired.

The proof of (14.28a) is similar, the only difference being that we start by bounding LHS (14.28a) by $\lesssim \int_{t'=0}^{t} \left\| \check{X} \mathscr{P}^{N-1} \Psi \right\|_{L^2(\Sigma_{t'}^u)} \left\| Y^{N-1} \mathrm{tr}_{g\!\!\!/}\chi \right\|_{L^2(\Sigma_{t'}^u)} dt'$. $\square$

14.8 Proof of Prop. 14.2

Proof of (14.2a): Assume that $1 \leq N \leq 18$ and let $\mathscr{P}^N$ be an Nth-order $\mathcal{P}_u$-tangent vectorfield operator. From (3.12) with $\mathscr{P}^N \Psi$ in the role of Ψ, the decomposition (3.13) with $\mathscr{P}^N \Psi$ in the role of Ψ, and definition (13.2a), we have

$$\mathbb{E}[\mathscr{P}^N \Psi](t, u) + \mathbb{F}[\mathscr{P}^N \Psi](t, u) + \mathbb{K}[\mathscr{P}^N \Psi](t, u)$$
$$= \mathbb{E}[\mathscr{P}^N \Psi](0, u) - \int_{\mathcal{M}_{t,u}} \left\{ (1 + 2\mu)(L \mathscr{P}^N \Psi) + 2\check{X} \mathscr{P}^N \Psi \right\} \mu \Box_g (\mathscr{P}^N \Psi) \, d\varpi$$
$$+ \sum_{i=1}^{5} \int_{\mathcal{M}_{t,u}} {}^{(T)}\mathfrak{P}_{(i)}[\mathscr{P}^N \Psi] \, d\varpi. \tag{14.30}$$

We will show that RHS (14.30) $\leq$ RHS (14.2a). Then, taking the max over that estimate for all such operators of order in between 1 and N and appealing to Defs. 13.1 and 13.2, we conclude (14.2a).

To show that RHS (14.30) $\leq$ RHS (14.2a), we first use Lemma 14.5 to deduce that $\mathbb{E}[\mathscr{P}^N \Psi](0, u) \lesssim \mathring{\epsilon}^2$, which is $\leq$ the first term on RHS (14.2a) as desired.

To bound the last integral $\sum_{i=1}^{5} \int_{\mathcal{M}_{t,u}} \cdots$ on RHS (14.30) by $\leq$ RHS (14.2a), we use Lemma 14.6.

We now address the first integral $-\int_{\mathcal{M}_{t,u}} \cdots$ on RHS (14.30). If $N \geq 2$ and $\mathscr{P}^N$ is not of the form $Y^{N-1}L$ or Y^N, then the desired bound follows from (11.3c) and (14.10a), which together allow us to bound error integrals involving $Harmless^{\leq N}$ factors. Note that these bounds do not produce any of the difficult "boxed-constant-involving" terms on RHS (14.2a).

We now consider the case $\mathscr{P}^N = Y^N$. The case $\mathscr{P}^N = Y^{N-1}L$ can be treated in an identical fashion and we omit those details. We start by substituting RHS (11.3b) for the term $\mu \Box_g (\mathscr{P}^N \Psi)$ on RHS (14.30). It suffices for us to bound the integrals corresponding to the terms $(\check{X}\Psi)Y^N \mathrm{tr}_{g\!\!\!/}\chi$ and $\rho(d\!\!\!/^{\#}\Psi) \cdot (\mu d\!\!\!/ Y^{N-1}\mathrm{tr}_{g\!\!\!/}\chi)$ from RHS (11.3b), for the above argument has already addressed how to bound the integrals generated by $Harmless^{\leq N}$ terms. To bound the difficult integral

$$-2 \int_{\mathcal{M}_{t,u}} (\check{X}Y^N \Psi)(\check{X}\Psi)Y^N \mathrm{tr}_{g\!\!\!/}\chi \, d\varpi \tag{14.31}$$

by $\leq$ RHS (14.2a), we first use Cauchy-Schwarz and (13.6) to bound it by

$$\leq 2 \int_{t'=0}^{t} \mathbb{Q}_{[1,N]}^{1/2}(t', u) \left\| (\check{X}\Psi)Y^N \mathrm{tr}_{g\!\!\!/}\chi \right\|_{L^2(\Sigma_{t'}^u)} dt'. \tag{14.32}$$

We now substitute the estimate (14.14) (with t in (14.14) replaced by t') for the second factor in the integrand of (14.32). Following this substitution, the desired bound of (14.32) by $\leq$ RHS (14.2a) follows easily with the help of simple estimates of the form $ab \lesssim a^2 + b^2$. Note that these estimates account for the portion $\boxed{4} \cdots$ of the

first boxed constant integral $\boxed{6}\cdots$ on RHS (14.2a) and the full portion of the boxed constant integral $\boxed{8.1}\cdots$ on RHS (14.2a).

We now bound the error integral

$$-\int_{\mathcal{M}_{t,u}}(1+2\mu)(LY^N\Psi)(\check{X}\Psi)Y^N\mathrm{tr}_{\cancel{g}}\chi\,d\varpi. \tag{14.33}$$

To proceed, we use (6.9a)–(6.9b) to decompose $Y^N\mathrm{tr}_{\cancel{g}}\chi = Y^{(Y^{N-1})}\widetilde{\mathscr{X}} - Y^{(Y^{N-1})}\widetilde{\mathfrak{X}}$. Since RHS (11.23d) $= Harmless^{\leq N}$, we have already suitably bounded the error integrals generated by $Y^{(Y^{N-1})}\widetilde{\mathfrak{X}}$. We therefore must bound

$$-\int_{\mathcal{M}_{t,u}}(1+2\mu)(LY^N\Psi)(\check{X}\Psi)Y^{(Y^{N-1})}\widetilde{\mathscr{X}}\,d\varpi \tag{14.34}$$

by $\leq$ RHS (14.2a). To this end, we integrate by parts using (3.22) with $\eta := {}^{(Y^{N-1})}\widetilde{\mathscr{X}}$. We bound the error integrals on the last line of RHS (3.22) and the $\int_{\Sigma_0^u}\cdots$ integral on the second line using Lemma 14.11. It remains for us to bound the first two (difficult) integrals on RHS (3.22) by $\leq$ RHS (14.2a). The desired bounds have been derived in Lemma 14.12. Note that these estimates account for the remaining portion $\boxed{2}\cdots$ of the first boxed constant integral $\boxed{6}\cdots$ on RHS (14.2a) and the full portion of the boxed constant integral $\boxed{2}\cdots$ on RHS (14.2a).

To complete the proof of (14.2a), it remains for us to bound the two error integrals generated by the term $\rho(\cancel{d}^{\#}\Psi)\cdot(\mu\cancel{d}Y^{N-1}\mathrm{tr}_{\cancel{g}}\chi)$ from RHS (11.3b). These two integrals were suitably bounded by $\leq$ RHS (14.2a) in Lemma 14.9 (note that we are using the simple bound $\{\ln\mu_\star^{-1}(t',u)+1\}^2 \lesssim \mu_\star^{-1/2}(t',u)$ in order to bound the integrand factors in the first integrals on RHS (14.16a) and RHS (14.16b)). Note that these estimates do not contribute to the difficult boxed constant terms on RHS (14.2a). We have thus proved (14.2a).

Proof of (14.2b): We repeat the proof of (14.2a) with $N-1$ in the role of N and with one critically important change: we bound the difficult error integrals

$$-2\int_{\mathcal{M}_{t,u}}(\check{X}\mathscr{P}^{N-1}\Psi)(\check{X}\Psi)Y^{N-1}\mathrm{tr}_{\cancel{g}}\chi\,d\varpi$$

and

$$-\int_{\mathcal{M}_{t,u}}(1+2\mu)(L\mathscr{P}^{N-1}\Psi)(\check{X}\Psi)Y^{N-1}\mathrm{tr}_{\cancel{g}}\chi\,d\varpi$$

using the derivative-losing Lemma 14.13 in place of the arguments used in bounding (14.31) and (14.33). Note that in the proof of (14.2a), the error integrals (14.31) and (14.33) were the only ones that resulted in the presence of very degenerate terms on RHS (14.2a), such as the "boxed-constant-involving" terms. This explains why RHS (14.2b) features fewer (and less degenerate/simpler) terms and why it features the

one new factor that represents the loss of a derivative (namely, the factor $\mathbb{Q}_{[1,N]}^{1/2}(s,u)$ on RHS (14.2b)). □

14.9 Proof of Prop. 14.1

Estimates for $\mathbb{Q}_{[1,18]}$, $\mathbb{K}_{[1,18]}$, $\mathbb{Q}_{[1,17]}$, and $\mathbb{K}_{[1,17]}$: We first derive the estimates (14.1a) for $\mathbb{Q}_{[1,18]}$, $\mathbb{K}_{[1,18]}$, $\mathbb{Q}_{[1,17]}$, and $\mathbb{K}_{[1,17]}$, which are highly coupled and must be treated as a system. To this end, we set

$$F(t,u) := \sup_{(\hat{t},\hat{u})\in[0,t]\times[0,u]} \iota_F^{-1}(\hat{t},\hat{u}) \max\left\{\mathbb{Q}_{[1,18]}(\hat{t},\hat{u}), \mathbb{K}_{[1,18]}(\hat{t},\hat{u})\right\}, \qquad (14.35)$$

$$G(t,u) := \sup_{(\hat{t},\hat{u})\in[0,t]\times[0,u]} \iota_G^{-1}(\hat{t},\hat{u}) \max\left\{\mathbb{Q}_{[1,17]}(\hat{t},\hat{u}), \mathbb{K}_{[1,17]}(\hat{t},\hat{u})\right\}, \qquad (14.36)$$

where for $t' \leq \hat{t} \leq t$ and $u' \leq \hat{u} \leq U_0$, we define

$$\iota_1(t') := \exp\left(\int_{s=0}^{t'} \frac{1}{\sqrt{T_{(Boot)}-s}}\, ds\right) = \exp\left(2\sqrt{T_{(Boot)}} - 2\sqrt{T_{(Boot)}-t'}\right),$$
$$(14.37)$$

$$\iota_2(t',u') := \exp\left(\int_{s=0}^{t'} \frac{1}{\mu_\star^{9/10}(s,u')}\, ds\right), \qquad (14.38)$$

$$\iota_F(t',u') := \mu_\star^{-11.8}(t',u')\iota_1^c(t')\iota_2^c(t',u')e^{ct'}e^{cu'}, \qquad (14.39)$$

$$\iota_G(t',u') := \mu_\star^{-9.8}(t',u')\iota_1^c(t')\iota_2^c(t',u')e^{ct'}e^{cu'}, \qquad (14.40)$$

and c is a sufficiently large positive constant that we choose below. The functions (14.37)–(14.40) are approximate integrating factors that will allow us to absorb all of the error integrals on the RHSs of the inequalities of Prop. 14.2. We claim that to obtain the desired estimates for $\mathbb{Q}_{[1,18]}$, $\mathbb{K}_{[1,18]}$, $\mathbb{Q}_{[1,17]}$, and $\mathbb{K}_{[1,17]}$, it suffices to show that

$$F(t,u) \leq C\mathring{\epsilon}^2, \qquad G(t,u) \leq C\mathring{\epsilon}^2, \qquad (14.41)$$

where C in (14.41) is allowed to depend on c. To justify the claim, we use the fact that for a fixed c, the functions $\iota_1^c(t)$, $\iota_2^c(t,u)$, e^{ct}, and e^{cu} are uniformly bounded from above by a positive constant for $(t,u) \in [0, T_{(Boot)}) \times [0, U_0]$; all of these estimates are simple to derive, except for (14.38), which relies on (10.39).

To prove (14.41), it suffices to show that there exist positive constants α_1, α_2, β_1, and β_2 with

$$\alpha_1 + \frac{\alpha_2\beta_1}{1-\beta_2} < 1, \qquad \beta_2 < 1 \qquad (14.42)$$

such that if c is sufficiently large, then

$$F(t, u) \leq C \mathring{\varepsilon}^2 + \alpha_1 F(t, u) + \alpha_2 G(t, u), \tag{14.43}$$

$$G(t, u) \leq C \mathring{\varepsilon}^2 + \beta_1 F(t, u) + \beta_2 G(t, u). \tag{14.44}$$

Once we have obtained (14.43)–(14.44), we easily deduce from those estimates that

$$G(t, u) \leq C \mathring{\varepsilon}^2 + \frac{\beta_1}{1 - \beta_2} F(t, u), \tag{14.45}$$

$$F(t, u) \leq C \mathring{\varepsilon}^2 + \left\{ \alpha_1 + \frac{\alpha_2 \beta_1}{1 - \beta_2} \right\} F(t, u). \tag{14.46}$$

The desired bounds (14.41) now follow easily from (14.42) and (14.45)–(14.46).

It remains for us to derive (14.43)–(14.44). To this end, we will use the critically important estimates of Prop. 10.3 as well as the following simple estimates, which are easy to derive:

$$\int_{t'=0}^{\hat{t}} \iota_1^c(t') \frac{1}{\sqrt{T_{(Boot)} - t'}} \, dt' = \frac{1}{c} \int_{t'=0}^{\hat{t}} \frac{d}{dt'} \left\{ \iota_1^c(t') \right\} \, dt' \leq \frac{1}{c} \iota_1^c(\hat{t}), \tag{14.47}$$

$$\int_{t'=0}^{\hat{t}} \iota_2^c(t', \hat{u}) \frac{1}{\mu_\star^{9/10}(t', \hat{u})} \, dt' = \frac{1}{c} \int_{t'=0}^{\hat{t}} \frac{d}{dt'} \left\{ \iota_2^c(t', \hat{u}) \right\} \, dt' \leq \frac{1}{c} \iota_2^c(\hat{t}, \hat{u}), \tag{14.48}$$

$$\int_{t'=0}^{\hat{t}} e^{ct'} \, dt' \leq \frac{1}{c} e^{c\hat{t}}, \tag{14.49}$$

$$\int_{u'=0}^{\hat{u}} e^{cu'} \, du' \leq \frac{1}{c} e^{c\hat{u}}. \tag{14.50}$$

The smallness needed to close our estimates will come from taking c to be large and ε to be small.

We stress that from now through inequality (14.65), the constants C can be chosen to be independent of c.

We also use the fact that $\iota_1^c(\cdot), \iota_2^c(\cdot) \, e^{c\cdot}$, and $e^{c\cdot}$ are non-decreasing in their arguments, and the estimate (10.23), which implies that for $t' \leq \hat{t}$ and $u' \leq \hat{u}$, we have the approximate monotonicity inequality

$$(1 + C\varepsilon) \mu_\star(t', u') \geq \mu_\star(\hat{t}, \hat{u}). \tag{14.51}$$

In our arguments below, we do not explicitly mention these monotonicity properties every time we use them.

We now set $N = 18$, multiply both sides of inequality (14.2a) by $\iota_F^{-1}(t, u)$ and then set $(t, u) = (\hat{t}, \hat{u})$. Similarly, we multiply both sides of inequality (14.2b) by $\iota_G^{-1}(t, u)$ and then set $(t, u) = (\hat{t}, \hat{u})$. To deduce (14.43)–(14.44), the difficult step is to obtain suitable bounds for the terms generated by the integrals on RHSs (14.2a)–(14.2b). Once we have such bounds, we can then take $\sup_{(\hat{t}, \hat{u}) \in [0, t] \times [0, u]}$ of both sides

of the resulting inequalities, and by virtue of definitions (14.35)–(14.36), we will easily conclude (14.43)–(14.44).

We now show how to obtain suitable bounds for the terms generated by the "borderline" terms $\boxed{6}\int\cdots$, $\boxed{8.1}\int\cdots$, and $\boxed{2}\dfrac{1}{\mu_\star^{1/2}(t,u)}\mathbb{Q}_{[1,N]}^{1/2}(t,u)\,\|L\mu\|_{L^\infty((-)\Sigma_{t;t}^u)}\int\cdots$ on RHS (14.2a). The terms generated by the remaining "non-borderline" terms on RHS (14.2a) are easier to treat. We start with the term $\boxed{6}\,\iota_F^{-1}(\hat{t},\hat{u})\int_{t'=0}^{\hat{t}}\cdots$. Multiplying and dividing by $\mu_\star^{11.8}(t',\hat{u})$ in the integrand, taking $\sup_{t'\in[0,\hat{t}]}\mu_\star^{11.8}(t',\hat{u})\mathbb{Q}_{[1,18]}(t',\hat{u})$, pulling the sup −ed quantity out of the integral, and using the critically important integral estimate (10.34) with $B=12.8$, we find that

$$\boxed{6}\,\iota_F^{-1}(\hat{t},\hat{u})\int_{t'=0}^{\hat{t}}\frac{\|[L\mu]_-\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_{t'}^{\hat{u}})}}{\mu_\star(t',\hat{u})}\mathbb{Q}_{[1,18]}(t',\hat{u})\,dt'$$

$$\leq \boxed{6}\,\iota_F^{-1}(\hat{t},\hat{u})\sup_{t'\in[0,\hat{t}]}\left\{\mu_\star^{11.8}(t',\hat{u})\mathbb{Q}_{[1,18]}(t',\hat{u})\right\}\int_{t'=0}^{\hat{t}}\|[L\mu]_-\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_{t'}^{\hat{u}})}\,\mu_\star^{-12.8}(t',\hat{u})\,dt'$$

$$\leq \boxed{6}\,\mu_\star^{11.8}(\hat{t},\hat{u})\sup_{t'\in[0,\hat{t}]}\left\{\iota_1^{-c}(t')\iota_2^{-c}(t',\hat{u})e^{-ct'}e^{-c\hat{u}}\mu_\star^{11.8}(t',\hat{u})\mathbb{Q}_{[1,18]}(t',\hat{u})\right\}$$

$$\times\int_{t'=0}^{\hat{t}}\|[L\mu]_-\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_{t'}^{\hat{u}})}\,\mu_\star^{-12.8}(t',\hat{u})\,dt'$$

$$\leq\frac{6+C\sqrt{\varepsilon}}{11.8}F(\hat{t},\hat{u})\leq\frac{6+C\sqrt{\varepsilon}}{11.8}F(t,u). \tag{14.52}$$

To handle the integral $\boxed{8.1}\,\iota_F^{-1}(\hat{t},\hat{u})\int\cdots$, we use a similar argument, but this time taking into account that there are two time integrations. We find that

$$\boxed{8.1}\,\iota_F^{-1}(\hat{t},\hat{u})\int_{t'=0}^{\hat{t}}\frac{\|[L\mu]_-\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_{t'}^{\hat{u}})}}{\mu_\star(t',\hat{u})}\mathbb{Q}_{[1,18]}^{1/2}(t',\hat{u})\int_{s=0}^{t'}\frac{\|[L\mu]_-\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_s^{\hat{u}})}}{\mu_\star(s,\hat{u})}\mathbb{Q}_{[1,18]}^{1/2}(s,\hat{u})\,ds\,dt'$$

$$\leq\frac{8.1+C\sqrt{\varepsilon}}{5.9\times 11.8}F(t,u). \tag{14.53}$$

To handle the integral $\boxed{2}\,\iota_F^{-1}(\hat{t},\hat{u})\dfrac{1}{\mu_\star^{1/2}(t,u)}\mathbb{Q}_{[1,N]}^{1/2}(t,u)\,\|L\mu\|_{L^\infty((-)\Sigma_{t;t}^u)}\int\cdots$, we use a similar argument based on the critically important estimate (10.35). We find that

$$\boxed{2}\,\iota_F^{-1}(\hat{t},\hat{u})\frac{1}{\mu_\star^{1/2}(\hat{t},\hat{u})}\mathbb{Q}_{[1,18]}^{1/2}(\hat{t},\hat{u})\,\|L\mu\|_{L^\infty((-)\Sigma_{\hat{t};\hat{t}}^{\hat{u}})}\int_{t'=0}^{t}\frac{1}{\mu_\star^{1/2}(t',\hat{u})}\mathbb{Q}_{[1,18]}^{1/2}(t',\hat{u})\,dt'$$

$$\leq\frac{2+C\sqrt{\varepsilon}}{5.4}F(t,u). \tag{14.54}$$

The important point is that for small ε, the factors $\dfrac{6+C\sqrt{\varepsilon}}{11.8}$ on RHS (14.52), $\dfrac{8.1+C\sqrt{\varepsilon}}{5.9\times 11.8}$ on RHS (14.53), and $\dfrac{2+C\sqrt{\varepsilon}}{5.4}$ on RHS (14.54) sum to $\dfrac{6}{11.8}+$

$\dfrac{8.1}{5.9 \times 11.8} + \dfrac{2}{5.4} + C\sqrt{\varepsilon} < 1$. This sum is the main contributor to the constant α_1 on RHS (14.43).

The remaining integrals are easier to treat. We now show how to bound the term arising from the integral on the 11th line of RHS (14.2a), which involves three time integrations. The term arising from the integrals on the 9th and 10th lines of RHS (14.2a) can be handled using similar arguments, so we do not provide those details. We claim that the following sequence of inequalities holds for the term of interest, which yields the desired bound:

$$
\begin{aligned}
& C\iota_F^{-1}(\hat{t}, \hat{u}) \int_{t'=0}^{\hat{t}} \frac{1}{\mu_\star(t', \hat{u})} \mathbb{Q}_{[1,18]}^{1/2}(t', \hat{u}) \int_{s=0}^{t'} \frac{1}{\mu_\star(s, \hat{u})} \\
& \quad \times \int_{s'=0}^{s} \frac{1}{\mu_\star^{1/2}(s', \hat{u})} \mathbb{Q}_{[1,18]}^{1/2}(s', \hat{u}) \, ds' \, ds \, dt' \\
& \leq \frac{C}{c} \iota_F^{-1}(\hat{t}, \hat{u}) \iota_2^{c/2}(\hat{t}, \hat{u}) \int_{t'=0}^{\hat{t}} \frac{1}{\mu_\star(t', \hat{u})} \mathbb{Q}_{[1,18]}^{1/2}(t', \hat{u}) \\
& \quad \times \int_{s=0}^{t'} \frac{1}{\mu_\star(s, \hat{u})} \sup_{(s',u')\in[0,s]\times[0,\hat{u}]} \left\{ \iota_2^{-c/2}(s', u') \mathbb{Q}_{[1,18]}^{1/2}(s', u') \right\} \, ds \, dt' \\
& \leq \frac{C}{c} \iota_F^{-1}(\hat{t}, \hat{u}) \iota_2^{c/2}(\hat{t}, \hat{u}) \int_{t'=0}^{\hat{t}} \frac{1}{\mu_\star(t', \hat{u})} \mathbb{Q}_{[1,18]}^{1/2}(t', \hat{u}) \\
& \quad \times \sup_{(s',u')\in[0,t']\times[0,\hat{u}]} \left\{ \mu_\star(s', u') \iota_2^{-c/2}(s', u') \mathbb{Q}_{[1,18]}^{1/2}(s', u') \right\} \int_{s=0}^{t'} \frac{1}{\mu_\star^2(s, \hat{u})} \, ds \, dt' \\
& \leq \frac{C}{c} \iota_F^{-1}(\hat{t}, \hat{u}) \iota_2^{c/2}(\hat{t}, \hat{u}) \sup_{(s',u')\in[0,\hat{t}]\times[0,\hat{u}]} \left\{ \mu_\star(s', u') \iota_2^{-c/2}(s', u') \mathbb{Q}_{[1,18]}^{1/2}(s', u') \right\} \\
& \quad \times \sup_{(s',u')\in[0,\hat{t}]\times[0,\hat{u}]} \left\{ \mathbb{Q}_{[1,18]}^{1/2}(s', u') \right\} \int_{t'=0}^{\hat{t}} \frac{1}{\mu_\star(t', \hat{u})} \int_{s=0}^{t'} \frac{1}{\mu_\star^2(s, \hat{u})} \, ds \, dt' \\
& \leq \frac{C}{c} \mu_\star(\hat{t}, \hat{u}) \sup_{(s',u')\in[0,\hat{t}]\times[0,\hat{u}]} \left\{ \iota_F^{-1}(s', u') \mathbb{Q}_{[1,18]}(s', u') \right\} \\
& \quad \times \int_{t'=0}^{\hat{t}} \frac{1}{\mu_\star(t', \hat{u})} \int_{s=0}^{t'} \frac{1}{\mu_\star^2(s, \hat{u})} \, ds \, dt' \\
& \leq \frac{C}{c} F(\hat{t}, \hat{u}) \leq \frac{C}{c} F(t, u), \tag{14.55}
\end{aligned}
$$

which yields the desired smallness factor $\dfrac{1}{c}$. We now explain how to derive (14.55). To deduce the first inequality, we multiplied and divided by $\iota_2^{c/2}(t', \hat{u})$ in the integral $\int \cdots ds'$, then pulled $\sup\limits_{(s',u')\in[0,s]\times[0,\hat{u}]} \left\{ \iota_2^{-c/2}(s', u') \mathbb{Q}_{[1,18]}^{1/2}(s', u') \right\}$ out of the integral, and finally used (14.48) to gain the smallness factor $\dfrac{1}{c}$ from the remaining terms $\int_{s'=0}^{s} \dfrac{1}{\mu_\star^{1/2}(s', \hat{u})} \iota_2^{c/2}(s', \hat{u}) \, ds'$. To derive the second

inequality in (14.55), we multiplied and divided by $\mu_\star(s, \hat{u})$ in the integral $\int \cdots ds$, and used the approximate monotonicity property (14.51) to pull the factor $\sup_{(s',u')\in[0,t']\times[0,\hat{u}]} \left\{ \mu_\star(s', u') \iota_2^{-c/2}(s', u') \mathbb{Q}_{[1,18]}^{1/2}(s', u') \right\}$ out of the ds integral, which costs us a harmless multiplicative factor of $1 + C\varepsilon$. The third inequality in (14.55) follows easily. To derive the fourth inequality, we use the monotonicity of $\iota_1^c(\cdot)$, $\iota_2^c(\cdot)$ $e^{c\cdot}$, and $e^{c\cdot}$, and (14.51). To derive the fifth inequality, we use inequality (10.36) twice. The final inequality follows easily.

Similarly, we claim that we can bound the terms on the 4th through 7th lines of RHS (14.2a) as follows:

$$\iota_F^{-1}(\hat{t}, \hat{u}) C\varepsilon \int_{t'=0}^{\hat{t}} \frac{1}{\mu_\star(t', \hat{u})} \mathbb{Q}_{[1,N]}^{1/2}(t', \hat{u}) \int_{s=0}^{t'} \frac{1}{\mu_\star(s, \hat{u})} \mathbb{Q}_{[1,N]}^{1/2}(s, \hat{u}) \, ds \, dt'$$
$$\leq C\varepsilon F(\hat{t}, \hat{u}) \leq C\varepsilon F(t, u), \tag{14.56}$$

$$\iota_F^{-1}(\hat{t}, \hat{u}) C\varepsilon \int_{t'=0}^{\hat{t}} \frac{1}{\mu_\star(t', \hat{u})} \mathbb{Q}_{[1,18]}(t', \hat{u}) \, dt'$$
$$\leq C\varepsilon F(\hat{t}, \hat{u}) \leq C\varepsilon F(t, u), \tag{14.57}$$

$$\iota_F^{-1}(\hat{t}, \hat{u}) C\varepsilon \frac{1}{\mu_\star^{1/2}(\hat{t}, \hat{u})} \mathbb{Q}_{[1,18]}^{1/2}(\hat{t}, \hat{u}) \int_{t'=0}^{\hat{t}} \frac{1}{\mu_\star^{1/2}(t', \hat{u})} \mathbb{Q}_{[1,18]}^{1/2}(t', \hat{u}) \, dt'$$
$$\leq C\varepsilon F(\hat{t}, \hat{u}) \leq C\varepsilon F(t, u), \tag{14.58}$$

$$\iota_F^{-1}(\hat{t}, \hat{u}) C \mathbb{Q}_{[1,18]}^{1/2}(\hat{t}, \hat{u}) \int_{t'=0}^{\hat{t}} \frac{1}{\mu_\star^{1/2}(t', \hat{u})} \mathbb{Q}_{[1,18]}^{1/2}(t', \hat{u}) \, dt'$$
$$\leq \frac{C}{c} F(\hat{t}, \hat{u}) \leq \frac{C}{c} F(t, u). \tag{14.59}$$

To derive (14.56), we use arguments similar to the ones we used in deriving (14.53), but in place of the delicate estimate (10.34), we use the estimate (10.36), whose large constant C is compensated for by the availability of the smallness factor ε. Similarly, to derive (14.57), we use arguments similar to the ones we used in deriving (14.52), using (10.36) in place of (10.34). To derive (14.58), we use arguments similar to the ones we used above, but we now multiply and divide by $\mu_\star^{5.9}(t', \hat{u})$ in the time integral on LHS (14.58) and use (10.36). To derive (14.59), we use similar arguments based on multiplying and dividing by $\iota_2^{c/2}(t', \hat{u})$ in the time integral and using (14.48).

Similarly, we derive the bound

$$C\iota_F^{-1}(\hat{t}, \hat{u}) \int_{t'=0}^{\hat{t}} \frac{1}{\sqrt{T_{(Boot)} - t'}} \mathbb{Q}_{[1,18]}(t', \hat{u}) \, dt' \leq \frac{C}{c} F(\hat{t}, \hat{u}) \leq \frac{C}{c} F(t, u) \tag{14.60}$$

for the term on the 8th line of RHS (14.2a) by multiplying and dividing by $\iota_1^c(t')$ in the integrand and using (14.47) to gain the smallness factor $\frac{1}{c}$.

Similarly, we derive the bound

$$C(1 + \varsigma^{-1})\iota_F^{-1}(\hat{t}, \hat{u}) \int_{u'=0}^{\hat{u}} \mathbb{Q}_{[1,18]}(\hat{t}, u') \, du' \le \frac{C}{c} F(\hat{t}, \hat{u}) \le \frac{C}{c} F(t, u) \quad (14.61)$$

for the term on the 12th line of RHS (14.2a) by multiplying and dividing by $e^{cu'}$ in the integrand and using (14.50) to gain the smallness factor $\frac{1}{c}$.

It is easy to see that the terms arising from the first term on RHS (14.2a) and the terms on the next-to-last line of RHS (14.2a), namely $C(1 + \varsigma^{-1})\mathring{\epsilon}^2 \mu_\star^{-3/2}(t, u)$, $C\varepsilon\mathbb{Q}_{[1,N]}(t, u)$, $C\varsigma\mathbb{Q}_{[1,N]}(t, u)$, and $C\varsigma\mathbb{K}_{[1,N]}(t, u)$, are respectively bounded (after multiplying by ι_F^{-1} and taking the relevant sup) by $\le C(1 + \varsigma^{-1})\mathring{\epsilon}^2$, $\le C\varepsilon F(t, u)$, $\le C\varsigma F(t, u)$, and $\le C\varsigma F(t, u)$.

To bound the term arising from the last integral on RHS (14.2a), we argue as follows with the help of (14.48) and (14.51) (recall that $N = 18$):

$$C\iota_F^{-1}(\hat{t}, \hat{u}) \int_{t'=0}^{\hat{t}} \frac{1}{\mu_\star^{5/2}(t', \hat{u})} \mathbb{Q}_{[1,17]}(t', \hat{u}) \, dt'$$

$$\le C\mu_\star^{9.8}(\hat{t}, \hat{u})\iota_1^{-c}(\hat{t})\iota_2^{-c}(\hat{t}, \hat{u})e^{-c\hat{t}}e^{-c\hat{u}} \sup_{t' \in [0,\hat{t}]} \left(\frac{\mu_\star(\hat{t}, \hat{u})}{\mu_\star(t', \hat{u})} \right)^2$$

$$\times \sup_{t' \in [0,\hat{t}]} \left\{ \iota_2^{-c}(t')\mathbb{Q}_{[1,17]}(t', \hat{u}) \right\} \times \int_{t'=0}^{\hat{t}} \frac{\iota_2^c(t')}{\mu_\star^{1/2}(t', \hat{u})} \, dt'$$

$$\le C\iota_2^{-c}(\hat{t}) \sup_{t' \in [0,\hat{t}]} \left\{ \iota_G^{-1}(t', \hat{u})\mathbb{Q}_{[1,17]}(t', \hat{u}) \right\} \times \int_{t'=0}^{\hat{t}} \frac{\iota_2^c(t')}{\mu_\star^{1/2}(t', \hat{u})} \, dt'$$

$$\le \frac{C}{c} G(\hat{t}, \hat{u}) \le \frac{C}{c} G(t, u). \quad (14.62)$$

We now bound the terms $\iota_G^{-1}(\hat{t}, \hat{u}) \times \cdots$ arising from the terms on RHS (14.2b). All terms except the one arising from the integral involving the top-order factor $\mathbb{Q}_{[1,18]}^{1/2}$ (featured in the ds integral on RHS (14.2b)) can be bounded by

$$\le C\mathring{\epsilon}^2 + \frac{C}{c}(1 + \varsigma^{-1})G(t, u) + C\varsigma G(t, u) \text{ by using essentially the same arguments}$$

given above. To handle the remaining term involving the top-order factor $\mathbb{Q}_{[1,18]}^{1/2}$, we use arguments similar to the ones we used to prove (14.55) (in particular, we use inequality (10.36) twice) to bound it as follows:

$$C\iota_G^{-1}(\hat{t}, \hat{u}) \int_{t'=0}^{\hat{t}} \frac{1}{\mu_\star^{1/2}(t', \hat{u})} \mathbb{Q}_{[1,17]}^{1/2}(t', \hat{u}) \int_{s=0}^{t'} \frac{1}{\mu_\star^{1/2}(s, \hat{u})} \mathbb{Q}_{[1,18]}^{1/2}(s, \hat{u}) \, ds \, dt'$$

$$\le C\iota_G^{-1}(\hat{t}, \hat{u}) \sup_{(t',u') \in [0,\hat{t}] \times [0,\hat{u}]} \left\{ \mu_\star^{4.9}(t', \hat{u})\mathbb{Q}_{[1,17]}^{1/2}(t', u') \right\}$$

$$\times \sup_{(t',u') \in [0,\hat{t}] \times [0,\hat{u}]} \left\{ \mu_\star^{5.9}(t', \hat{u})\mathbb{Q}_{[1,18]}^{1/2}(t', u') \right\}$$

$$\times \int_{t'=0}^{\hat{t}} \frac{1}{\mu_\star^{5.4}(t',\hat{u})} \int_{s=0}^{t'} \frac{1}{\mu_\star^{6.4}(s,\hat{u})} \, ds \, dt'$$

$$\leq C F^{1/2}(\hat{t},\hat{u}) G^{1/2}(\hat{t},\hat{u}) \leq C F(t,u) + \frac{1}{2} G(t,u). \tag{14.63}$$

Inserting all of these estimates into the RHSs of $\iota_F^{-1}(\hat{t},\hat{u}) \times$ (14.2a)$(\hat{t},\hat{u})$ and $\iota_G^{-1}(\hat{t},\hat{u}) \times$ (14.2b)$(\hat{t},\hat{u})$ and taking $\sup_{(\hat{t},\hat{u}) \in [0,t] \times [0,u]}$ of both sides, we deduce that

$$F(t,u) \leq C(1+\varsigma^{-1})\mathring{\epsilon}^2 + \left\{ \frac{6}{11.8} + \frac{8.1}{5.9 \times 11.8} + \frac{2}{5.4} + C\sqrt{\varepsilon} \right\} F(t,u) \tag{14.64}$$

$$+ \frac{C}{c}(1+\varsigma^{-1})F(t,u) + \frac{C}{c}G(t,u) + C\varsigma F(t,u),$$

$$G(t,u) \leq C\mathring{\epsilon}^2 + \frac{C}{c}F(t,u) + CF(t,u) + \frac{C}{c}(1+\varsigma^{-1})G(t,u)$$

$$+ C\varsigma G(t,u) + \frac{1}{2}G(t,u). \tag{14.65}$$

We remind the reader that the constants C in (14.64)–(14.65) can be chosen to be independent of c. The desired estimates (14.43)–(14.44) now follow from first choosing ς to be sufficiently small, then choosing c to be sufficiently large, then choosing ε to be sufficiently small, and using the aforementioned fact that $\dfrac{6}{11.8} + \dfrac{8.1}{5.9 \times 11.8} + \dfrac{2}{5.4} + C\sqrt{\varepsilon} < 1$.

Estimates for $\mathbb{Q}_{[1,\leq 16]}$ **and** $\mathbb{K}_{[1,\leq 16]}$ **via a descent scheme**: We now explain how to use inequality (14.2b) to derive the estimates for $\mathbb{Q}_{[1,\leq 16]}$ and $\mathbb{K}_{[1,\leq 16]}$ by downward induction. Unlike our analysis of the strongly coupled pair $\max\{\mathbb{Q}_{[1,18]}, \mathbb{K}_{[1,18]}\}$ and $\max\{\mathbb{Q}_{[1,17]}, \mathbb{K}_{[1,17]}\}$, we can derive the desired estimates for $\max\{\mathbb{Q}_{[1,16]}, \mathbb{K}_{[1,16]}\}$ by using only inequality (14.2b) and the already derived estimates for $\max\{\mathbb{Q}_{[1,17]}, \mathbb{K}_{[1,17]}\}$. At the end of the proof, we will describe the minor changes needed to derive the desired estimates for $\max\{\mathbb{Q}_{[1,15]}, \mathbb{K}_{[1,15]}\}$, $\max\{\mathbb{Q}_{[1,14]}, \mathbb{K}_{[1,14]}\}$, $\cdots$, $\max\{\mathbb{Q}_1, \mathbb{K}_1\}$.

To begin, we define the following analogs of (14.40) and (14.36):

$$\iota_H(t',u') := \mu_\star^{-7.8}(t',u')\iota_1^\varsigma(t')\iota_2^\varsigma(t',u')e^{ct'}e^{cu'}, \tag{14.66}$$

$$H(t,u) := \sup_{(\hat{t},\hat{u}) \in [0,t] \times [0,u]} \iota_H^{-1}(\hat{t},\hat{u}) \max\left\{\mathbb{Q}_{[1,16]}(\hat{t},\hat{u}), \mathbb{K}_{[1,16]}(\hat{t},\hat{u})\right\}. \tag{14.67}$$

Note that the power of $\mu_\star^{-1}$ in the factor $\mu_\star^{-7.8}$ has been reduced by two in (14.66) compared to (14.40), which corresponds to less singular behavior of $\max\{\mathbb{Q}_{[1,16]}, \mathbb{K}_{[1,16]}\}$ near the shock. As before, to prove the desired estimate (14.1a) (now with $M = 3$), it suffices to prove

$$H(t,u) \leq C\mathring{\epsilon}^2. \tag{14.68}$$

We now set $N = 17$, multiply both sides of inequality (14.2b) by $\iota_H^{-1}(t,u)$, and then set $(t,u) = (\hat{t},\hat{u})$ (note that $N = 17$ in (14.2b) corresponds to estimating

$\max\left\{\mathbb{Q}_{[1,16]}, \mathbb{K}_{[1,16]}\right\}$). With one exception, we can bound all terms arising from the integrals on RHS (14.2b) by $\leq C\mathring{\epsilon}^2 + \dfrac{C}{c}(1 + \varsigma^{-1})H(t, u) + \varsigma H(t, u)$ (where C is independent of c) by using the same arguments that we used in deriving the estimate for $\max\left\{\mathbb{Q}_{[1,17]}, \mathbb{K}_{[1,17]}\right\}$. The exceptional term is the one arising from the integral involving the above-present-order factor $\mathbb{Q}_{[1,17]}^{1/2}$. We bound the exceptional term as follows by using inequality (10.36), the approximate monotonicity of ι_H, and the estimate $\mathbb{Q}_{[1,17]}^{1/2} \leq C_c\mathring{\epsilon}\mu_\star^{-4.9}(t, u)$ (which follows from the already proven estimate (14.41) for $G(t, u)$):

$$
\begin{aligned}
C\iota_H^{-1}(\hat{t}, \hat{u}) &\int_{t'=0}^{\hat{t}} \frac{1}{\mu_\star^{1/2}(t', \hat{u})} \mathbb{Q}_{[1,16]}^{1/2}(t', \hat{u}) \int_{s=0}^{t'} \frac{1}{\mu_\star^{1/2}(s, \hat{u})} \mathbb{Q}_{[1,17]}^{1/2}(s, \hat{u}) \, ds \, dt' \\
&\leq C_c\mathring{\epsilon}\iota_H^{-1/2}(\hat{t}, \hat{u}) \sup_{(t', u') \in [0,\hat{t}] \times [0,\hat{u}]} \left\{\iota_H^{-1/2}(t', u')\mathbb{Q}_{[1,16]}^{1/2}(t', u')\right\} \\
&\quad \times \int_{t'=0}^{\hat{t}} \frac{1}{\mu_\star^{1/2}(t', \hat{u})} \int_{s=0}^{t'} \frac{1}{\mu_\star^{5.4}(s, \hat{u})} \, ds \, dt' \\
&\leq C_c\mathring{\epsilon}\iota_H^{-1/2}(\hat{t}, \hat{u})\mu_\star^{-3.9}(\hat{t}, \hat{u}) \sup_{(t', u') \in [0,\hat{t}] \times [0,\hat{u}]} \left\{\iota_H^{-1/2}(t', u')\mathbb{Q}_{[1,16]}^{1/2}(t', u')\right\} \\
&\leq C_c\mathring{\epsilon}H^{1/2}(\hat{t}, \hat{u}) \leq C_c\mathring{\epsilon}^2 + \frac{1}{2}H(t, u).
\end{aligned}
\tag{14.69}
$$

In total, we have obtained the following analog of (14.65):

$$
H(t, u) \leq C_c\mathring{\epsilon}^2 + \frac{C}{c}(1 + \varsigma^{-1})H(t, u) + \frac{1}{2}H(t, u) + C\varsigma H(t, u), \tag{14.70}
$$

where C_c is the only constant that depends on c. The desired bound (14.68) easily follows from (14.70) by first choosing ς to be sufficiently small and then c to be sufficiently large that we can absorb all factors of H on RHS (14.70) into the LHS.

The desired bounds (14.1b) for $\max\left\{\mathbb{Q}_{[1,15]}, \mathbb{K}_{[1,15]}\right\}$, $\max\left\{\mathbb{Q}_{[1,14]}, \mathbb{K}_{[1,14]}\right\}$, $\cdots$ can be (downward) inductively derived by using an argument similar to the one we used to bound $\max\left\{\mathbb{Q}_{[1,16]}, \mathbb{K}_{[1,16]}\right\}$, which relied on the already available bounds for $\max\left\{\mathbb{Q}_{[1,17]}, \mathbb{K}_{[1,17]}\right\}$. The only difference is that we define the analog of the approximating integrating factor (14.66) to be $\mu_\star^{-p}\iota_1^c(t')\iota_2^c(t', u')e^{ct'}e^{cu'}$, where $p = 5.8$ for the $\max\left\{\mathbb{Q}_{[1,15]}, \mathbb{K}_{[1,15]}\right\}$ estimate, $p = 3.8$ for the $\max\left\{\mathbb{Q}_{[1,14]}, \mathbb{K}_{[1,14]}\right\}$ estimate, $p = 1.8$ for the $\max\left\{\mathbb{Q}_{[1,13]}, \mathbb{K}_{[1,13]}\right\}$ estimate, and $p = 0$ for the $\max\left\{\mathbb{Q}_{[1,\leq 12]}, \mathbb{K}_{[1,\leq 12]}\right\}$ estimates; these latter estimates *do not involve any singular factor* of $\mu_\star^{-1}$. There is one important new detail that is relevant for these estimates: in deriving the analog of the inequalities (14.69) for $\max\left\{\mathbb{Q}_{[1,\leq 12]}, \mathbb{K}_{[1,\leq 12]}\right\}$, we use the estimate (10.39) in place of the estimate (10.36); the estimate (10.39) is what allows us to break the $\mu_\star^{-1}$ degeneracy.

15 The Stable Shock Formation Theorem

In this section, we state and prove our main stable shock formation theorem.

15.1 The Diffeomorphic Nature of Υ and Continuation Criteria

We first provide a technical lemma concerning the change of variables map Υ and a lemma providing continuation criteria.

Lemma 15.1 (**Sufficient conditions for Υ to be a global diffeomorphism**). *Assume the data-size and bootstrap assumptions of Subsects. 7.4–7.5 and the smallness assumptions of Subsect. 7.7. Assume in addition that*

$$\inf_{(t,u)\in[0,T_{(Boot)})\times[0,U_0]} \mu_\star(t,u) > 0. \tag{15.1}$$

Then the change of variables map Υ extends to a global $C^{1,1}$ diffeomorphism from $[0, T_{(Boot)}] \times [0, U_0] \times \mathbb{T}$ onto its image.

Proof First, from Lemma 12.6, we see that Υ extends as a $C^{1,1}$ function defined on $[0, T_{(Boot)}] \times [0, U_0] \times \mathbb{T}$. Hence, to prove the lemma, it remains for us to show that Υ is a diffeomorphism from $[0, T_{(Boot)}] \times [0, U_0] \times \mathbb{T}$ onto its image. To this end, we first use (2.48), (12.8), the bootstrap assumptions (**BA**Ψ), the fact that $\underline{g}_{ij} = \delta_{ij} + \mathcal{O}(\Psi)$, (8.32a), and the assumption $\inf_{(t,u)\in[0,T_{(Boot)})\times[0,U_0]} \mu_\star(t,u) > 0$ to deduce that the Jacobian determinant of Υ is uniformly bounded from above and from below strictly away from 0. Hence, from the inverse function theorem, we deduce that Υ extends as a $C^{1,1}$ local diffeomorphism from $[0, T_{(Boot)}] \times [0, U_0] \times \mathbb{T}$ onto its image.

To show that Υ is a global diffeomorphism on the domain under consideration, it suffices to show that for $u_1, u_2 \in [0, U_0]$ with $u_1 < u_2$, the distinct curves $\ell_{T_{(Boot)},u_1}, \ell_{T_{(Boot)},u_2} \subset \Sigma_{T_{(Boot)}}^{U_0}$ do not intersect each other and that for each $u \in [0, U_0]$, $\Upsilon(T_{(Boot)}, u, \cdot)$ is an injection from $\mathbb{T}$ onto its image.

To rule out the intersection of two distinct curves, we use (7.5), (8.32a), the assumption $\inf_{(t,u)\in[0,T_{(Boot)})\times[0,U_0]} \mu_\star(t,u) > 0$, the bootstrap assumptions (**BA**Ψ), and the fact that $\underline{g}_{ij} = \delta_{ij} + \mathcal{O}(\Psi)$ to deduce that $\sum_{a=1}^2 |\partial_a u|$ is uniformly bounded from above and strictly from below away from 0. It follows that the (closed) null plane portions $\mathcal{P}_u^{T_{(Boot)}}$ corresponding to two distinct values of $u \in [0, U_0]$ cannot intersect, which yields the desired result. It remains for us to show that when $u \in [0, U_0]$, $\Upsilon(T_{(Boot)}, u, \cdot)$ is a diffeomorphism from $\mathbb{T}$ onto its image. To this end, we note that for each fixed $u \in [0, U_0]$, the rectangular component $\Upsilon^2(T_{(Boot)}, u, \cdot)$ (which can be identified with the local rectangular coordinate x^2), viewed as a $\mathbb{T}$-valued function of $\vartheta \in \mathbb{T}$, is homotopic to the degree-one map $\Upsilon^2(0, u, \cdot)$ by the homotopy $\Upsilon^2(\cdot, u, \cdot) : [0, T_{(Boot)}] \times \mathbb{T} \to \mathbb{T}$. Hence, it is a basic result of degree theory (see, for example, the Hopf Degree Theorem in [22]) that $\Upsilon^2(T_{(Boot)}, u, \cdot)$ is also a degree-one map. Next, we note that (2.53), (8.12a) with $N = 0$, the L^∞ estimates of Prop. 8.10, and Lemma 12.1 together imply that $\Theta\Upsilon^2(T_{(Boot)}, u, \vartheta) = [\upsilon^{-1}Y^2](T_{(Boot)}, u, \vartheta) = 1 + \mathcal{O}(\varepsilon)$ for

$\vartheta \in \mathbb{T}$. From this estimate and the degree-one property of $\Upsilon^2(T_{(Boot)}, u, \cdot)$, we deduce[58] that (for sufficiently small ε), $\Upsilon^2(T_{(Boot)}, u, \cdot)$ is a bijection[59] from $\mathbb{T}$ to $\mathbb{T}$. Hence, $\Upsilon(T_{(Boot)}, u, \cdot)$ is injective, which is the desired result. □

We now provide some continuation criteria, which we will use to ensure that the solution survives until the shock forms.

Lemma 15.2 (Continuation criteria). *Let* $(\mathring{\Psi}, \mathring{\Psi}_0) := (\Psi|_{\Sigma_0}, \partial_t \Psi|_{\Sigma_0}) \in H_e^{19}(\Sigma_0^1) \times H_e^{18}(\Sigma_0^1)$ *be initial data for the covariant wave equation* $\Box_{g(\Psi)}\Psi = 0$ *that are compactly supported in* Σ_0^1 *(see Remark 1.1 regarding the Sobolev spaces* $H_e^N(\Sigma_0^1)$*). Let* $T_{(Local)} > 0$ *and* $U_0 \in (0, 1]$*, and assume that the corresponding classical solution* Ψ *exists on an ("open at the top") spacetime region* $\mathcal{M}_{T_{(Local)}, U_0}$ *(see Def. 2.1) that is completely determined by the non-trivial data lying in* $\Sigma_0^{U_0}$ *and the trivial data lying to the right of the line* $\{x^1 = 0\}$ *in* Σ_0 *(see Figure 1 on pg. 8). Let* u *be the eikonal function that verifies the eikonal equation* (1.4) *with the initial data* (1.5)*. Assume that* $\mu > 0$ *on* $\mathcal{M}_{T_{(Local)}, U_0}$ *and that the change of variables map* Υ *from geometric to rectangular coordinates (see Def. 2.20) is a* C^1 *diffeomorphism from* $[0, T_{(Local)}) \times [0, U_0] \times \mathbb{T}$ *onto* $\mathcal{M}_{T_{(Local)}, U_0}$*. Let* $\mathcal{H}$ *be the set of real numbers* b *such that the following conditions hold:*

- *The rectangular components* $g_{\mu\nu}(\cdot)$, $(\mu, \nu = 0, 1, 2)$, *are smooth on a neighborhood of* b.
- $g_{00}(b) < 0$.
- *The eigenvalues of the* 2×2 *matrix* $\underline{g}_{ij}(b)$ *(see Def. 2.15),* $(i, j = 1, 2)$, *are positive.*

Assume that none of the following 4 *breakdown scenarios occur:*

(1) $\inf_{\mathcal{M}_{T_{(Local)}, U_0}} \mu = 0$.
(2) $\sup_{\mathcal{M}_{T_{(Local)}, U_0}} \mu = \infty$.
(3) *There exists a sequence* $p_n \in \mathcal{M}_{T_{(Local)}, U_0}$ *such that* $\Psi(p_n)$ *escapes every compact subset of* $\mathcal{H}$ *as* $n \to \infty$.
(4) $\sup_{\mathcal{M}_{T, U_0}} \max_{\kappa = 0,1,2,3} |\partial_\kappa \Psi| = \infty$.

In addition, assume that the following condition is verified:

(5) *The change of variables map* Υ *extends to the compact set* $[0, T_{(Local)}] \times [0, U_0] \times \mathbb{T}$ *as a (global)* C^1 *diffeomorphism onto its image.*

Then there exists a $\Delta > 0$ *such that* Ψ, u, *and all of the other geometric quantities defined throughout the article can be uniquely extended (where* Ψ *and* u *are classical solutions) to a strictly larger region of the form* $\mathcal{M}_{T_{(Local)} + \Delta, U_0}$ *into which their*

---

[58] Recall that if $f : \mathbb{T} \to \mathbb{T}$ is a C^1 surjective map without critical points, then f is degree-one if for $p, q \in \mathbb{T}$, $1 = \sum_{p \in f^{-1}(q)} \text{sign}(d_p f)$, where $d_p f$ denotes the differential of f at p and the $d_p f$ are computed relative to an atlas corresponding to the smooth orientation on $\mathbb{T}$ chosen at the beginning of the article. It is a basic fact of degree theory that the sum is independent of q. Note that in the context of the present argument, the role of $df(\cdot)$ is effectively played by $\Theta\Upsilon^2(T_{(Boot)}, u, \cdot)$.

[59] The surjective property of this map is easy to deduce.

Sobolev regularity relative to both geometric and rectangular coordinates is propagated. Moreover, if Δ is sufficiently small, then none of the four breakdown scenarios occur in the larger region, and Υ extends to $[0, T_{(Local)} + \Delta] \times [0, U_0] \times \mathbb{T}$ as a (global) C^1 diffeomorphism onto its image.

Sketch of a proof Lemma 15.2 is mostly standard. A sketch of the proof was provided in [60, Proposition 21.1.1], to which we refer the reader for more details. Here, we only mention the main ideas. Criterion (3) is connected to avoiding a breakdown in hyperbolicity of the equation. Criterion (4) is a standard criterion used to locally continue the solution relative to the rectangular coordinates. Criteria (1) and (2) and the assumption on Υ are connected to ruling out the blowup of u, degeneracy of the change of variables map, and degeneracy of the region $\mathcal{M}_{T_{(Local)}, U_0}$. In particular, criteria (1) and (2) play a role in a proving that $\sum_{a=1}^{2} |\partial_a u|$ is uniformly bounded from above and strictly from below away from 0 on $\mathcal{M}_{T_{(Local)}, U_0}$ (the proof was essentially given in the proof of Lemma 15.1). □

15.2 The Main Stable Shock Formation Theorem

We now state and prove the main result of the article.

Theorem 15.1 (Stable shock formation). *Let* $(\mathring{\Psi}, \mathring{\dot{\Psi}}_0) := (\Psi|_{\Sigma_0}, \partial_t \Psi|_{\Sigma_0}) \in H_e^{19}(\Sigma_0^1) \times H_e^{18}(\Sigma_0^1)$ *(see Remark 1.1) be initial data for the covariant wave equation* $\Box_{g(\Psi)} \Psi = 0$ *that are compactly supported in Σ_0^1 and that verify the data-size assumptions*[60] *of Subsect. 7.3. In particular, let $\mathring{\epsilon}$, $\mathring{\delta}$, and $\mathring{\delta}_*$ be the data-size parameters from* (7.3) *and* (7.4). *Assume that the rectangular metric component functions verify the structural assumptions* (2.7) *and* (2.9). *For each $U_0 \in [0, 1]$, let $T_{(Lifespan);U_0}$ be the classical lifespan of the solution in the region that is completely determined by the non-trivial data lying in $\Sigma_0^{U_0}$ and the trivial data lying to the right of the line $\{x^1 = 0\}$ in Σ_0 (see Figure 1 on pg. 8). If $\mathring{\epsilon}$ is sufficiently small relative to $\mathring{\delta}^{-1}$ and $\mathring{\delta}_*$ (in the sense explained in Subsect. 7.7), then the following conclusions hold, where all constants can be chosen to be independent of U_0.*

Dichotomy of possibilities. *One of the following mutually disjoint possibilities must occur, where $\mu_\star(t, u)$ is defined in* (10.2).

I) $T_{(Lifespan);U_0} > 2\mathring{\delta}_*^{-1}$. *In particular, the solution exists classically on the spacetime region* $\mathrm{cl}\mathcal{M}_{2\mathring{\delta}_*^{-1}, U_0}$, *where* cl *denotes closure. Furthermore,*
$$\inf\{\mu_\star(s, U_0) \mid s \in [0, 2\mathring{\delta}_*^{-1}]\} > 0.$$
II) $T_{(Lifespan);U_0} \leq 2\mathring{\delta}_*^{-1}$, *and*

$$T_{(Lifespan);U_0} = \sup\left\{t \in [0, 2\mathring{\delta}_*^{-1}) \mid \inf\{\mu_\star(s, U_0) \mid s \in [0, t)\} > 0\right\}. \quad (15.2)$$

In addition, case II) occurs when $U_0 = 1$. In this case, we have

$$T_{(Lifespan);1} = \left\{1 + \mathcal{O}(\mathring{\epsilon})\right\} \mathring{\delta}_*^{-1}. \quad (15.3)$$

---

[60] Recall that in Remark 7.6, we outlined a proof that such data exist.

What happens in Case I). *In case* **I**), *all bootstrap assumptions, the estimates of Props. 8.10 and 9.2, and the energy estimates of Prop. 14.1 hold on* $\mathrm{cl}\mathcal{M}_{2\mathring{\delta}_*^{-1}, U_0}$ *with the factors of ε on the RHS replaced by $C\mathring{\varepsilon}$. Moreover, for $0 \leq M \leq 5$, the following estimates hold for $(t, u) \in [0, 2\mathring{\delta}_*^{-1}] \times [0, U_0]$:*

$$\left\| \mathscr{P}^{[1,12]}\mu \right\|_{L^2(\Sigma_t^u)}, \ \left\| \mathscr{P}^{\leq 12} L_{(Small)}^i \right\|_{L^2(\Sigma_t^u)}, \ \left\| \mathscr{P}^{\leq 11} \mathrm{tr}_{\not g}\chi \right\|_{L^2(\Sigma_t^u)} \leq C\mathring{\varepsilon}, \tag{15.4a}$$

$$\left\| \mathscr{P}_*^{13+M}\mu \right\|_{L^2(\Sigma_t^u)}, \ \left\| \mathscr{P}^{13+M} L_{(Small)}^i \right\|_{L^2(\Sigma_t^u)}, \ \left\| \mathscr{P}^{12+M} \mathrm{tr}_{\not g}\chi \right\|_{L^2(\Sigma_t^u)} \leq C\mathring{\varepsilon}\mu_\star^{-(M+.4)}(t, u), \tag{15.4b}$$

$$\left\| L\mathscr{P}^{18}\mu \right\|_{L^2(\Sigma_t^u)}, \ \left\| L\mathscr{Z}^{18;1} L_{(Small)}^i \right\|_{L^2(\Sigma_t^u)}, \ \left\| L\mathscr{Z}^{17;1} \mathrm{tr}_{\not g}\chi \right\|_{L^2(\Sigma_t^u)} \leq C\mathring{\varepsilon}\mu_\star^{-6.4}(t, u), \tag{15.4c}$$

$$\left\| \mu Y^{18} \mathrm{tr}_{\not g}\chi \right\|_{L^2(\Sigma_t^u)} \leq C\mathring{\varepsilon}\mu_\star^{-5.9}(t, u). \tag{15.4d}$$

What happens in Case II). *In case* **II**), *all bootstrap assumptions, the estimates of Props. 8.10 and 9.2, and the energy estimates of Prop. 14.1 hold on* $\mathcal{M}_{T_{(Lifespan);U_0}, U_0}$ *with the factors of ε on the RHS replaced by $C\mathring{\varepsilon}$. Moreover, for $0 \leq M \leq 5$, the estimates* (15.4a)–(15.4d) *hold for $(t, u) \in [0, T_{(Lifespan);U_0}) \times [0, U_0]$. In addition, the scalar functions $\mathscr{Z}^{\leq 9;1}\Psi$, $\mathscr{Z}^{\leq 4;2}\Psi$, $\breve{X}\breve{X}\breve{X}\Psi$, $\mathscr{Z}^{\leq 9;1} L^i$, $\breve{X}\breve{X}L^i$, $\mathscr{P}^{\leq 9}\mu$, $\mathscr{Z}^{\leq 2;1}\mu$, and $\breve{X}\breve{X}\mu$ extend to $\Sigma_{T_{(Lifespan);U_0}}^{U_0}$ as functions of the geometric coordinates (t, u, ϑ) that are uniformly bounded in L^∞. Furthermore, the rectangular component functions $g_{\alpha\beta}(\Psi)$ verify the estimate $g_{\alpha\beta} = m_{\alpha\beta} + \mathcal{O}(\mathring{\varepsilon})$ (where $m_{\alpha\beta} = \mathrm{diag}(-1, 1, 1)$ is the standard Minkowski metric) and have the same extension properties as Ψ and its derivatives with respect to the vectorfields mentioned above.*

Moreover, let $\Sigma_{T_{(Lifespan);U_0}}^{U_0;(Blowup)}$ be the (non-empty) subset of $\Sigma_{T_{(Lifespan);U_0}}^{U_0}$ defined by

$$\Sigma_{T_{(Lifespan);U_0}}^{U_0;(Blowup)} := \left\{ (T_{(Lifespan);U_0}, u, \vartheta) \mid \mu(T_{(Lifespan);U_0}, u, \vartheta) = 0 \right\}. \tag{15.5}$$

Then for each point $(T_{(Lifespan);U_0}, u, \vartheta) \in \Sigma_{T_{(Lifespan);U_0}}^{U_0;(Blowup)}$, there exists a past neighborhood containing it such that the following lower bound holds in the neighborhood:

$$|X\Psi(t, u, \vartheta)| \geq \frac{\mathring{\delta}_*}{4|G_{L_{(Flat)}L_{(Flat)}}(\Psi = 0)|} \frac{1}{\mu(t, u, \vartheta)}. \tag{15.6}$$

In (15.6), $\dfrac{\mathring{\delta}_*}{4\left|G_{L_{(Flat)}L_{(Flat)}}(\Psi = 0)\right|}$ *is a* **positive** *data-dependent constant (see* (2.7)*), and the $\ell_{t,u}$-transversal vectorfield X is near-Euclidean-unit length: $\delta_{ab}X^a X^b =$*

$1 + \mathcal{O}(\mathring{\varepsilon})$. *In particular,* $X\Psi$ *blows up like* $1/\mu$ *at all points in* $\Sigma_{T_{(Lifespan);U_0}}^{U_0;(Blowup)}$. *Conversely, at all points in* $(T_{(Lifespan);U_0}, u, \vartheta) \in \Sigma_{T_{(Lifespan);U_0}}^{U_0} \setminus \Sigma_{T_{(Lifespan);U_0}}^{U_0;(Blowup)}$, *we have*

$$\left| X\Psi(T_{(Lifespan);U_0}, u, \vartheta) \right| < \infty. \qquad (15.7)$$

Proof Let $C_* > 1$ be a constant (we will adjust C_* throughout the proof). We define

$$T_{(Max);U_0} := \text{ The supremum of the set of times } T_{(Boot)} \in [0, 2\mathring{\delta}_*^{-1}] \text{ such that:} \qquad (15.8)$$

- Ψ, u, μ, $L_{(Small)}^i$, Υ, and all of the other quantities

  defined throughout the article exist classically on $\mathcal{M}_{T_{(Boot)},U_0}$.
- The change of variables map Υ is a (global)$C^{1,1}$ diffeomorphism from

  $[0, T_{(Boot)}) \times [0, U_0] \times \mathbb{T}$ onto its image $\mathcal{M}_{T_{(Boot)},U_0}$.
- $\inf \left\{ \mu_\star(t, U_0) \mid t \in [0, T_{(Boot)}) \right\} > 0$.
- The fundamental L^∞ bootstrap assumptions (**BA**Ψ)

  hold with $\varepsilon := C_* \mathring{\varepsilon}$ for $(t, u) \in \times[0, T_{(Boot)}) \times [0, U_0]$.
- The L^2-type energy bounds

$$\mathbb{Q}_{[1,13+M]}^{1/2}(t, u) + \mathbb{K}_{[1,13+M]}^{1/2}(t, u) \le C_* \mathring{\varepsilon} \mu_\star^{-(M+.9)}(t, u), \qquad (0 \le M \le 5), \qquad (15.9)$$

$$\mathbb{Q}_{[1,1+M]}^{1/2}(t, u) + \mathbb{K}_{[1,1+M]}^{1/2}(t, u) \le C_* \mathring{\varepsilon}, \qquad (0 \le M \le 11)$$
$$\text{hold for } (t, u) \in \times[0, T_{(Boot)}) \times [0, U_0]. \qquad (15.10)$$

It is a standard result that if $\mathring{\varepsilon}$ is sufficiently small and C_* is sufficiently large, then $T_{(Max);U_0} > 0$ (this is a standard local well-posedness result combined with the initial smallness of the L^2-controlling quantities shown in Lemma 14.5).

We now show that the energy bounds (15.9)–(15.10) and the fundamental L^∞ bootstrap assumption (**BA**Ψ) are not saturated for $(t, u) \in [0, T_{(Max);U_0}) \times [0, U_0]$. The non-saturation of the energy bounds (for C_* sufficiently large) is provided by Prop. 14.1. The non-saturation of the fundamental L^∞ bootstrap assumptions (**BA**Ψ) then follows from Cor. 13.4. Consequently, we conclude that all of the estimates proved throughout the article hold on $\mathcal{M}_{T_{(Boot)},U_0}$ with the smallness parameter ε replaced by $C\mathring{\varepsilon}$. We use this fact throughout the remainder of the proof without further remark.

Next, we show that (15.4a)–(15.4d) hold for $(t, u) \in [0, T_{(Max);U_0}) \times [0, U_0]$. To obtain (15.4a)–(15.4c), we insert the energy estimates of Prop. 14.1 into the RHS of the inequalities of Lemma 14.3 and use inequalities (10.36) and (10.39) as well as the fact that $\mathbb{Q}_{[1,M]}$ is increasing in its arguments. Similarly, to obtain inequality (15.4d), we insert the energy estimates of Prop. 14.1 into RHS (14.15) and use inequality (10.36).

We now establish the dichotomy of possibilities. We first show that if

$$\inf \left\{ \mu_\star(t, U_0) \mid t \in [0, T_{(Max);U_0}) \right\} > 0,$$

then $T_{(Max);U_0} = 2\mathring{\delta}_*^{-1}$. To proceed, we assume for the sake of contradiction that the previous bound for $\mu_\star$ holds but that $T_{(Max);U_0} < 2\mathring{\delta}_*^{-1}$. To reach a contradiction, we will use Lemmas 15.1 and 15.2 to deduce that we can classically extend the solution to a region of the form $\mathcal{M}_{T_{(Max);U_0}+\Delta,U_0}$, with $\Delta > 0$ and $T_{(Max);U_0}+\Delta < 2\mathring{\delta}_*^{-1}$, such that all of the properties defining $T_{(Max);U_0}$ hold for the larger time $T_{(Max);U_0} + \Delta$. Since we have already shown that the energy bounds (15.9)–(15.10) are not saturated and that the fundamental L^∞ bootstrap assumption (**BA**Ψ) are not saturated for $(t, u) \in [0, T_{(Max);U_0}) \times [0, U_0]$, the contradiction will follow once we show that the change of variables map Υ extends as a global $C^{1,1}$ diffeomorphism from $[0, T_{(Max);U_0}] \times [0, U_0] \times \mathbb{T}$ onto its image and that none of the four breakdown scenarios of Lemma 15.2 occur on $\mathcal{M}_{T_{(Max);U_0},U_0}$. Breakdown scenario (1) from Lemma 15.2 is ruled out by assumption. Scenario (2) is ruled out by the estimate (8.32a). Scenario (3) is ruled out by the bootstrap assumptions (**BA**Ψ) and the fact that $\underline{g}_{ij} = \delta_{ij} + \mathcal{O}(\Psi)$, with δ_{ij} the standard Kronecker delta. From Lemma 15.1, we obtain that Υ extends as a global $C^{1,1}$ diffeomorphism from $[0, T_{(Max);U_0}] \times [0, U_0] \times \mathbb{T}$ onto its image. Hence, we can rule out the scenario (4) once we show that

$$\sup_{(t,u,\vartheta)\in[0,T_{(Max);U_0}]\times[0,U_0]\times\mathbb{T}} \sum_{i_1+i_2+i_3\leq 1} \left|\left(\frac{\partial}{\partial t}\right)^{i_1}\left(\frac{\partial}{\partial u}\right)^{i_2}\left(\frac{\partial}{\partial\vartheta}\right)^{i_3}\Psi(t,u,\vartheta)\right| < \infty.$$

This desired bound is a simple consequence of the estimates (8.30a)–(8.30b) (which hold for $(t, u) \in [0, T_{(Max);U_0}] \times [0, U_0]$) and the fact that, as we showed in the proof of Lemma 12.6, we have $L = \frac{\partial}{\partial t}$, $Y = (1 + \mathcal{O}(\mathring{\epsilon}))\Theta$ (recall that $\Theta := \frac{\partial}{\partial\vartheta}$) and $\frac{\partial}{\partial u} = \check{X} + \mathcal{O}(1)Y$. We have thus reached a contradiction and established that either **I)** $T_{(Max);U_0} = 2\mathring{\delta}_*^{-1}$ or **II)** $\inf\{\mu_\star(t, U_0) \mid t \in [0, T_{(Max);U_0})\} = 0$.

We now show that case **II)** corresponds to a singularity and that the classical lifespan is characterized by (15.2). To this end, we first use (9.9), (10.12), and the identity $X = \mu X$ to deduce that inequality (15.6) holds. Furthermore, from (2.1), (2.26), and the L^∞ estimates of Prop. 8.10, we deduce that $|X| := \sqrt{g_{ab}X^a X^b} = 1 + \mathrm{f}(\gamma)\gamma = 1 + \mathcal{O}(\mathring{\epsilon})$. From this estimate and (15.6), we deduce that at points in $\Sigma_{T_{(Max);U_0},U_0}$ where μ vanishes, $|X\Psi|$ must blow up like $1/\mu$. Hence, $T_{(Max);U_0}$ is the classical lifespan. That is, we have $T_{(Max);U_0} = T_{(Lifespan);U_0}$ as well as the characterization (15.2) of the classical lifespan. The estimate (15.7) is an immediate consequence of the estimate (8.30a) and the identity $\check{X} = \mu X$.

To obtain (15.3), we use (10.15a) and (10.16b) to deduce that $\mu_\star(t, 1)$ vanishes for the first time when $t = \{1 + \mathcal{O}(\mathring{\epsilon})\}\mathring{\delta}_*^{-1}$.

We now derive the statements regarding the quantities that extend to $\Sigma_{T_{(Lifespan);U_0}}^{U_0}$ as L^∞ functions. Let q denote any of the quantities $\mathscr{Z}^{\leq 9;1}\Psi, \cdots, \check{X}\check{X}\mu$ that are stated in the theorem to extend to $\Sigma_{T_{(Lifespan);U_0}}^{U_0}$ as an L^∞ function of the geometric coordinates. The L^∞ estimates of Props. 8.10 and 9.2 imply that $\|Lq\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_t^{U_0})}$ is uniformly bounded for $0 \leq t < T_{(Lifespan);U_0}$. Recalling that $L = \frac{\partial}{\partial t}$, we conclude that q extends to $\Sigma_{T_{(Lifespan);U_0}}^{U_0}$ as an element of $L^\infty(\Sigma_{T_{(Lifespan);U_0}}^{U_0})$ as desired. The estimate $g_{\alpha\beta} = m_{\alpha\beta} + \mathcal{O}(\mathring{\epsilon})$ and the extension properties of the $\mathscr{Z}$-derivatives of the

scalar functions $g_{\alpha\beta}$ then follow from (2.1), the already proven bound $\|\Psi\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_t^{U_0})} \lesssim \mathring{\epsilon}$, and the above extension properties of the $\mathscr{Z}$-derivatives of Ψ. □

Appendix A: Extending the Results to the Equations $(g^{-1})^{\alpha\beta}(\partial\Phi)\partial_\alpha\partial_\beta\Phi = 0$

In this appendix, we sketch how to extend our shock formation results to the Cauchy problem

$$(g^{-1})^{\alpha\beta}(\partial\Phi)\partial_\alpha\partial_\beta\Phi = 0, \tag{A.1a}$$

$$(\Phi|_{\Sigma_0}, \partial_t\Phi|_{\Sigma_0}) = (\mathring{\Phi}, \mathring{\Phi}_0), \tag{A.1b}$$

where equation (A.1a) is written relative to the rectangular coordinates $\{x^\alpha\}_{\alpha=0,1,2}$, and

$$g_{\alpha\beta}(\partial\Phi) = m_{\alpha\beta} + g_{\alpha\beta}^{(Small)}(\partial\Phi), \qquad g_{\alpha\beta}^{(Small)}(0) = 0. \tag{A.1c}$$

Dividing the wave equation by $-(g^{-1})^{00}$ if necessary, we may assume as before that

$$(g^{-1})^{00} \equiv -1. \tag{A.1d}$$

A.1. Basic Setup

We start by defining Ψ_ν, ($\nu = 0, 1, 2$), and $\vec{\Psi}$ as follows:

$$\Psi_\nu := \partial_\nu\Phi, \qquad \vec{\Psi} := (\Psi_0, \Psi_1, \Psi_2). \tag{A.2}$$

The main strategy behind extending our results is to take rectangular derivatives of the equation (A.1a) to form a system of wave equations in the unknowns $\vec{\Psi}$; see Lemma A.1. The system has a special null structure that plays an important role in the analysis; see Lemma A.3. The vast majority of the proof of shock formation for the system is the same as it is in the case of the scalar equation (1.1a), but now with $\vec{\Psi}$ in the role of Ψ. We can treat the system using essentially the same methods that we used to treat the scalar equation (1.1a) because the coupling between the Ψ_ν is not very difficult to handle and because the tensorial structure of the equations matters only in a few key places. We devote the remainder of this appendix to highlighting those key places and to describing the handful of new ingredients that are needed.

We first note that the analogs of the scalar functions (2.5) for equation (A.1a) are

$$G^\lambda_{\mu\nu} = G^\lambda_{\mu\nu}(\vec{\Psi}) := \frac{\partial g^{(Small)}_{\mu\nu}(\vec{\Psi})}{\partial \Psi_\lambda}, \tag{A.3a}$$

$$G^{\mu\alpha\beta}(\vec{\Psi}) := (g^{-1})^{\alpha\alpha'}(g^{-1})^{\beta\beta'} G^\mu_{\alpha'\beta'}. \tag{A.3b}$$

For our proof to work, we assume an analog of (2.7), specifically that there exist coordinates such that $m_{\alpha\beta} = \mathrm{diag}(-1, 1, 1)$ (that is, Minkowski-rectangular coordinates) and such that with $L_{(Flat)} := \partial_t + \partial_1$, we have

$$m_{\kappa\lambda}G^\kappa_{\mu\nu}(\vec{\Psi} = 0)L^\alpha_{(Flat)}L^\beta_{(Flat)}L^\lambda_{(Flat)} \neq 0. \tag{A.4}$$

The assumption ensures that in the regime under study, the term $\omega^{(Trans-\vec{\Psi})}$ on RHS (A.15) is sufficiently strong to drive μ to 0 in finite time.

We now provide the system of covariant wave equations implied by equation (A.1a). The proof is a straightforward but tedious computation that relies on the identity $\partial_\alpha \Psi_\beta = \partial_\beta \Psi_\alpha$; we omit the details.

Lemma A.1 (**The system of covariant wave equations**). *As a consequence of equation* (A.1a), *the quantities* $\Psi_\nu := \partial_\nu \Phi$ *verify the following system of covariant wave equations (where* Ψ_ν *is viewed to be a scalar-valued function under covariant differentiation):*

$$\Box_{g(\vec{\Psi})} \Psi_\nu = \mathscr{Q}(\partial\vec{\Psi}, \partial\Psi_\nu), \quad (\nu = 0, 1, 2), \tag{A.5}$$

where $\Box_{g(\vec{\Psi})}\Psi := \frac{1}{\sqrt{|detg|}}\partial_\alpha\left(\sqrt{|detg|}(g^{-1})^{\alpha\beta}\partial_\beta\Psi\right)$ *is the covariant wave operator of g applied to* Ψ,

$$\mathscr{Q}(\partial\vec{\Psi}, \partial\Psi) := G^{\mu\alpha\beta}\left\{\partial_\beta\Psi_\alpha\partial_\mu\Psi - \partial_\mu\Psi_\alpha\partial_\beta\Psi\right\} + (g^{-1})^{\alpha\beta}\Omega^\lambda\partial_\alpha\Psi_\lambda\partial_\beta\Psi, \tag{A.6}$$

$G^{\mu\alpha\beta}$ *is defined in* (A.3b), *and* $\Omega^\nu(\vec{\Psi}) := \dfrac{1}{\sqrt{|detg|(\vec{\Psi})}}\dfrac{\partial\sqrt{|detg|(\vec{\Psi})}}{\partial\Psi_\nu}$.

$\Box$

The quadratic term $\mathscr{Q}$ on RHS (A.5) has a special null structure that is of critical importance for our proof. We describe this structure in Lemma A.3 below. We first recall the definitions of the standard null (relative to g) forms $\mathscr{Q}_{(0)}$ and $\mathscr{Q}_{(\alpha\beta)}$:

$$\mathscr{Q}_{(0)}(\partial\phi, \partial\widetilde{\phi}) := (g^{-1})^{\alpha\beta}\partial_\alpha\phi\partial_\beta\widetilde{\phi}, \tag{A.7a}$$

$$\mathscr{Q}_{(\alpha\beta)}(\partial\phi, \partial\widetilde{\phi}) := \partial_\alpha\phi\partial_\beta\widetilde{\phi} - \partial_\alpha\widetilde{\phi}\partial_\beta\phi. \tag{A.7b}$$

In the next lemma, we decompose the standard null forms relative to the non-rescaled frame (2.19b) and exhibit their good geometric properties from the point

of view of the shock formation problem. The main point is that there is no term proportional to $(X\phi)X\widetilde{\phi}$ on RHS (A.8).

Lemma A.2 (**Good properties of the standard null forms**). *If $\mathcal{Q}$ is a standard null form, then we can decompose it as follows relative to the non-rescaled frame (2.19b):*

$$
\begin{aligned}
\mathcal{Q}(\partial\phi, \partial\widetilde{\phi}) =\ & f_1(L\phi)L\widetilde{\phi} + f_2(L\phi)X\widetilde{\phi} + f_3(X\phi)L\widetilde{\phi} \\
& + (f_4 \cdot \slashed{d}\phi)L\widetilde{\phi} + (f_5 \cdot \slashed{d}\phi)X\widetilde{\phi} + (L\phi)f_6 \cdot \slashed{d}\widetilde{\phi} + (X\phi)f_7 \cdot \slashed{d}\widetilde{\phi} \\
& + f_8 \cdot \slashed{d}\phi \otimes \slashed{d}\widetilde{\phi},
\end{aligned}
\tag{A.8}
$$

where f_1, f_2 and f_3 are scalar functions, f_4, f_5, f_6, f_7 are $\ell_{t,u}$-tangent vectorfields, and f_8 is a symmetric type $\binom{2}{0}$ $\ell_{t,u}$-tangent tensorfield with the following properties: f_1, f_2 and f_3 and the rectangular components f_4^α, f_5^α, f_6^α, f_7^α, and $f_8^{\alpha\beta}$ are smooth scalar-valued functions of $\vec{\Psi}$ and the rectangular components of the vectorfields L and X.

Proof When $\mathcal{Q} = \mathcal{Q}_{(0)}$, (A.8) follows from Lemma 2.4. When $\mathcal{Q} = \mathcal{Q}_{(\alpha\beta)}$, we view $\mathcal{Q}_{(\alpha\beta)}$ to be the rectangular components of an anti-symmetric type $\binom{0}{2}$ spacetime tensor which we decompose relative to the non-rescaled frame: $\mathcal{Q}_{(\alpha\beta)} = F_{LX}(L_\alpha X_\beta - X_\alpha L_\beta) + F_{L\Theta}(L_\alpha \Theta_\beta - \Theta_\alpha L_\beta) + F_{X\Theta}(X_\alpha \Theta_\beta - \Theta_\alpha X_\beta)$, where the $F_{...}$ are scalar functions. To compute the $F_{...}$, we contract both sides of the identity against pairs of elements of the non-rescaled frame $\{L, X, \Theta\}$. For example, contracting against $L^\alpha \Theta^\beta$ and using (2.41), we find that $(L\phi)\Theta\widetilde{\phi} - (L\widetilde{\phi})\Theta\phi = -F_{X\Theta}\upsilon^2$. This leads to a decomposition of the form $\mathcal{Q}_{(\alpha\beta)} = \cdots - \upsilon^{-2}\left\{(L\phi)\Theta\widetilde{\phi} - (L\widetilde{\phi})\Theta\phi\right\}\left\{X_\alpha\Theta_\beta - \Theta_\alpha X_\beta\right\}$. Using (2.41), we can rewrite terms involving Θ as in the following example: $\upsilon^{-2}(L\phi)(\Theta\widetilde{\phi})X_\alpha\Theta_\beta = (L\phi)(\slashed{\Pi}_\beta^{\#} \cdot \slashed{d}\widetilde{\phi})X_\alpha$, where $\slashed{\Pi}_\beta^\lambda$ is defined in (2.27b). The desired decomposition (A.8) thus follows. $\qquad\square$

In the next lemma, we characterize the good structure of the quadratic term $\mathcal{Q}$ on RHS (A.5). The proof follows from observation.

Lemma A.3 (**Special null structure of the inhomogeneous terms**). *The quadratic term $\mathcal{Q}(\partial\vec{\Psi}, \partial\Psi)$ on the right-hand side of (A.5) is a linear combination of the standard null forms in $\partial\vec{\Psi}$ with coefficients depending on $\vec{\Psi}$.*

$\qquad\qquad\qquad\qquad\qquad\qquad\qquad\qquad\qquad\qquad\qquad\qquad\qquad\qquad\qquad\quad\square$

A.2. Additional Smallness Assumptions in the Present Context

To close the proof of shock formation for solutions to the system (A.5), we assume that each scalar function Ψ_ν has data verifying the same size assumptions as the data for the scalar function Ψ, as described in Subsects. 7.3 and 7.7. Similarly, to derive estimates, we make the same L^∞ bootstrap assumptions for each Ψ_ν that we did for Ψ. As we show below in (A.18) and the discussion surrounding (A.20a)–(A.20b), these assumptions impose some subtle smallness restrictions on the data (A.1b) in the sense that they imply the $\mathcal{O}(\mathring{\varepsilon})$ smallness of special combinations of

the elements of $\{\check{X}\Psi_0, \check{X}\Psi_1, \check{X}\Psi_2\}$. These smallness restrictions are consequences of our size assumptions on the Ψ_ν and their derivatives and the symmetry property $\partial_\alpha\Psi_\beta = \partial_\beta\Psi_\alpha$. As we will see in Subsect. A.3, we especially rely on the following small-data estimates:

$$\left\|L\check{X}\Phi\right\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_0^1)}, \; \left\|Y\check{X}\Phi\right\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_0^1)} \lesssim \mathring{\varepsilon}. \tag{A.9}$$

We note that the $\mathcal{O}(\mathring{\varepsilon})$ smallness of $\left\|L\check{X}\Phi\right\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_0^1)}$ is a simple consequence of the identity

$$L\check{X}\Phi = L(\mu X^a\Psi_a) = (L\mu)X^a\Psi_a + \mu(LX^a_{(Small)})\Psi_a + \mu X^a L\Psi_a \tag{A.10}$$

and the $\mathcal{O}(\mathring{\varepsilon})$ smallness of $\|\Psi_a\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_0^1)}$ and $\|L\Psi_a\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_0^1)}$.

Similar remarks apply to the term $\left\|Y\check{X}\Phi\right\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_0^1)}$ on LHS (A.9).

It is of course important that the smallness conditions (A.9) are propagated by the nonlinear flow. Specifically, in the analog of the proof of Prop. 8.10, we could derive the estimates

$$\left\|L\check{X}\Phi\right\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_t^u)}, \; \left\|Y\check{X}\Phi\right\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_t^u)} \lesssim \varepsilon \tag{A.11}$$

at the end of the proof. For example, the estimate (A.11) for $\left\|L\check{X}\Phi\right\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_t^u)}$ would follow from the identity (A.10) and L^∞ estimates for all of the terms on RHS (A.10), which would already have been obtained in the proof of the proposition.

A.3. The Main New Estimate Needed at the Top Order

We now explain how to extend Theorem 15.1 to the system (A.5). As we have suggested above, we can derive energy identities for each scalar function Ψ_ν by using essentially the same arguments that we used to treat the scalar equation (1.1a). To derive inequalities that control $\vec{\Psi}$, we replace the controlling quantity $\mathbb{Q}_N$ from Def. 13.1 with

$$\mathbb{Q}_N(t, u) := \max_{|\vec{I}|=N} \max_{\nu=0,1,2} \sup_{(t',u')\in[0,t]\times[0,u]} \left\{ \mathbb{E}[\mathscr{P}^{\vec{I}}\Psi_\nu](t', u') + \mathbb{F}[\mathscr{P}^{\vec{I}}\Psi_\nu](t', u') \right\}, \tag{A.12}$$

and similarly for the other controlling quantities of Sect. 13.

Thanks to Lemma A.3, the terms on RHS (A.5) are easy to treat without invoking any new ideas. In the remainder of this appendix, we explain the one new ingredient that we need to close the estimates. It is needed for the top-order L^2 estimates for the Ψ_ν. To motivate the discussion, we first recall a critically important aspect of our analysis of the scalar equation (1.1a). At several points in our argument for deriving top-order L^2 estimates for solutions to (1.1a), we had to use equation (2.62), the fact

that $G_{LL}, G_{LX} = f(\gamma)$ (see Lemma 2.19), and the L^∞ estimates of Prop. 8.10 to obtain

$$\left| G_{LL} \check{X} \Psi \right| \le 2|L\mu| + \mu\mathcal{O}(\varepsilon). \tag{A.13}$$

For example, (A.13) was used to derive[61] equation (1.21). Since we are treating the coupled system $\vec{\Psi}$ by separately deriving energy identities for each scalar function Ψ_ν, our energy estimates rely on the following analog of (A.13) *for each of the three* Ψ_ν:

$$\left| G_{LL}^L \check{X} \Psi_\nu \right| \le 2 |L\mu| + \mu\mathcal{O}(\varepsilon), \tag{A.14}$$

where $G_{LL}^L := G_{\alpha\beta}^\kappa L^\alpha L^\beta L_\kappa$. The estimate (A.14) is the main new ingredient that we need at the top order. As we will see, it does not follow directly from the evolution equation $L\mu = \cdots$ and instead relies on a few new tensorial observations and the estimate (A.11). Thus, we dedicate the remainder of this appendix to sketching a proof of (A.14).

We start by providing the evolution equation for μ in the present context.

Lemma A.4 (**The transport equation verified by** μ). *In the case of equation* (A.1a), *the inverse foliation density* μ *defined in* (2.14) *verifies the following transport equation:*

$$L\mu = \omega^{(Trans-\vec{\Psi})} + \mu\omega^{(Tan-\vec{\Psi})} := \omega, \tag{A.15}$$

where

$$\omega^{(Trans-\vec{\Psi})} := -\frac{1}{2} G_{LL}^L X^a \check{X} \Psi_a, \tag{A.16a}$$

$$\omega^{(Tan-\vec{\Psi})} := -\frac{1}{2} G_{LL}^L X^a L\Psi_a - \frac{1}{2} G_{LL}^X X^a L\Psi_a + \frac{1}{2} {\mathcal{G}\!\!\!/}_{LL}^{\#} \cdot X^a {\d\!\!\!/}\Psi_a - \frac{1}{2} G_{LL}^\lambda L\Psi_\lambda$$
$$- G_{LX}^\lambda L\Psi_\lambda. \tag{A.16b}$$

The scalar-valued function $G_{\mu\nu}^\lambda$ *above is defined in* (A.3a), $G_{LL}^L := G_{\alpha\beta}^\kappa L^\alpha L^\beta L_\kappa$, ${\mathcal{G}\!\!\!/}_{LL}^\lambda := G_{\alpha\beta}^\kappa L^\alpha L^\beta {\Pi\!\!\!/}_\kappa^{\,\lambda}$, *etc.*

Proof The proof is very similar to the proof of (2.62). The main difference is that we use the identity $\partial_\alpha \Psi_\beta = \partial_\beta \Psi_\alpha$ to rewrite

$$G_{LL}^\lambda \check{X} \Psi_\lambda = \mu G_{LL}^\lambda X^a \partial_\lambda \Psi_a$$
$$= -G_{LL}^L X^a \check{X}\Psi_a - \mu G_{LL}^L X^a L\Psi_a - \mu G_{LL}^X X^a L\Psi_a + \mu {\mathcal{G}\!\!\!/}_{LL}^{\#} \cdot X^a {\d\!\!\!/}\Psi_a. \tag{A.17}$$

$\square$

---

[61] Actually, in deriving (1.21), we used a version of (A.13) in which the absolute value signs are missing and "$\le$" is replaced with "$=$." However, (A.13) would have been sufficient for all of the arguments to go through.

The L^∞ estimates provided by the analogs of the estimate $|G^\#_{(Frame)}| = |f(\gamma, g^{-1}, dx^1, dx^2)| \lesssim 1$ (see Lemmas 2.19 and 8.4 and the L^∞ estimates of Prop. 8.10) and Prop. 8.10 allow us to obtain the following bound for the term (A.16a): $|\omega^{(Tan-\vec{\Psi})}| = \mathcal{O}(\varepsilon)$. Also using (A.15)–(A.16b), we see that the desired estimate (A.14) will follow once we show that

$$\left\| \check{X}\Psi_0 - X^a \check{X}\Psi_a \right\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_t^u)}, \quad \left\| \check{X}\Psi_1 + X^a \check{X}\Psi_a \right\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_t^u)}, \quad \left\| \check{X}\Psi_2 \right\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_t^u)} \lesssim \varepsilon. \tag{A.18}$$

The proof of (A.18) is not difficult. Inequality (A.18) for the second term on the LHS follows from the identity (see (2.53))

$$\check{X}\Psi_1 + X^a \check{X}\Psi_a = X^1_{(Small)}\check{X}\Psi_1 + X^2_{(Small)}\check{X}\Psi_2 \tag{A.19}$$

and the bound $\|X^i_{(Small)}\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_t^u)} \lesssim \varepsilon$ provided by the relation (2.89c), the estimate (8.33a), and the bootstrap assumptions ($\mathbf{BA\Psi}$) (the version for $\vec{\Psi}$). The main idea of the proof of the other two estimates in (A.18) is to exploit the smallness (A.11) and the following identities, which yield expressions for $\check{X}\Psi_0 - X^a \check{X}\Psi_a$ and $\check{X}\Psi_2$:

$$L\check{X}\Phi = \check{X}\Psi_0 - X^a \check{X}\Psi_a - (g^{-1})^{0a}\check{X}\Psi_a + (L\mu)X^a\Psi_a + \mu(LX^a_{(Small)})\Psi_a, \tag{A.20a}$$

$$Y\check{X}\Phi = \check{X}\Psi_2 + Y^a_{(Small)}\check{X}\Psi_a + (Y\mu)X^a\Psi_a + \mu(YX^a_{(Small)})\Psi_a. \tag{A.20b}$$

The identities (A.20a)–(A.20b) follow from the identity $\partial_\alpha \Psi_\beta = \partial_\beta \Psi_\alpha$, (2.26), Def. 2.23, and the fact that $L^0 = 1$. From (2.89c), the L^∞ estimates of the analog of Prop. 8.10 in the present context, and the estimate (A.11), we find that $\|\check{X}\Psi_0 - X^a \check{X}\Psi_a\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_t^u)}, \|\check{X}\Psi_2\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_t^u)} \lesssim \varepsilon$. Also using the already proven estimate (A.18) for the second term on the LHS, we conclude the remaining two estimates stated in (A.18).

Appendix B: Extending the Results to the Irrotational Euler Equations

In this appendix, we sketch the minor changes needed to extend the shock formation results outlined in Appendix A to the irrotational Euler equations of fluid mechanics in two spatial dimensions; this is the content of Subsect. B.1. Then, in Subsect. B.2, we show that there exist initial data for the irrotational Euler equations that verify the smallness-largeness hierarchy used in our proof of shock formation.

B.1. Massaging the Equations into the Form of Appendix A

The necessary changes are all connected to normalization. Under the assumption of irrotationality, the Euler equations reduce to a quasilinear wave equation for a

potential function[62] Φ on the spacetime manifold $\mathbb{R} \times \Sigma$. The wave equation is the Euler-Lagrange equation (in particular it can be expressed in divergence form) for a Lagrangian depending on $\partial \Phi$ that must satisfy various physical assumptions allowing for a fluid interpretation; see [13] for the details in the case of the non-relativistic Euler equations and [15] in the case of the (special) relativistic Euler equations. A representative wave equation in the special relativistic case, derivable from the Lagrangian[63] $\mathscr{L} := [-(m^{-1})^{\kappa\lambda} \partial_\kappa \Phi \partial_\lambda \Phi]^{s+1}$, is (see [55] for more details):

$$\partial_\alpha \left\{ [-(m^{-1})^{\kappa\lambda} \partial_\kappa \Phi \partial_\lambda \Phi]^s (m^{-1})^{\alpha\beta} \partial_\beta \Phi \right\} = 0, \tag{B.1}$$

where $s \in (0, \infty)$ is a constant and $m_{\alpha\beta} = \text{diag}(-1, 1, 1)$ is the standard Minkowski metric. The background solutions with perturbations that we are able to treat correspond to constant solutions with *non-zero* energy density.[64] In terms of the potential, these solutions are $\Phi = kt$, where $k > 0$ is a constant. For some fluid wave equations, the values of k that correspond to a physical fluid solution are restricted to a subset of $\mathbb{R}$; this is not the case for equation (B.1).

Note that the spacetime metric corresponding to the background solution is flat but typically not equal to $\text{diag}(-1, 1, 1)$. We can remedy this by rescaling time. That is, we can rescale the Minkowski time coordinate by $t \to \alpha t$ (where the constant $\alpha > 0$ generally depends on k and the Lagrangian) so that the metric corresponding to the quasilinear wave equation is equal to $\text{diag}(-1, 1, 1)$ for the background solution. This is equivalent to choosing rescaled rectangular coordinates such that the speed of sound (that is, the propagation speed) corresponding to the background solution is 1. Note that after this rescaling, the 00 component of the tensorfield called "m" in (B.1) is no longer -1. The rescaling also changes k to αk, but we will ignore that minor change here. Moreover, in a slight abuse of notation, we also refer to the rescaled time variable as x^0 and/or t. Having normalized the rectangular coordinates, we may now divide the wave equation by $-(g^{-1})^{00}$, which allows us to assume that (A.1d) holds. In total, we obtain a wave equation of the form (A.1a) verifying (A.1d). For the rest of this appendix, we assume that this is the case.

We now define Ψ_ν and $\vec{\Psi}$ as in (A.2), except that we change the definition of Ψ_0 to $\Psi_0 := \partial_t \Phi - k$. This is a good definition because for the kinds of perturbations of the background solutions that we consider, the (undifferentiated) Ψ_ν are small quantities. The condition (A.1c) concerning the functional dependence of the metric on the wave variables takes the following form in the present context:

$$g_{\alpha\beta}(\vec{\Psi}) = m_{\alpha\beta} + g^{(Small)}_{\alpha\beta}(\vec{\Psi}), \qquad g^{(Small)}_{\alpha\beta}(\vec{\Psi} = 0) = 0, \tag{B.2}$$

where $m_{\alpha\beta} = \text{diag}(-1, 1, 1)$ in (B.2).

---

[62] In general, the potential function Φ can only be locally defined because $\mathbb{R} \times \Sigma$ is not simply connected. However, the quasilinear wave equation for irrotational Euler flows is of the form $(g^{-1})^{\alpha\beta}(\partial \Phi) \partial_\alpha \partial_\beta \Phi = 0$. In particular, the equation depends only on the gradient of Φ, which is "globally" defined throughout the maximal development of the data.

[63] This Lagrangian corresponds to the fluid equation of state $p = \rho/(2s + 1)$, where p is the pressure and ρ is the proper energy density.

[64] When the energy density vanishes, the wave equation becomes degenerate.

To derive our main shock formation results, we again assume that (A.4) holds. For all fluid Lagrangians in the regime of physically relevant k, aside from one exceptional Lagrangian (mentioned in Footnote 14 on pg. 9), it is possible to construct Minkowski-rectangular coordinates such that (A.4) holds. One can compute that the Ψ_ν verify the system (A.5). We have thus massaged the wave equations of irrotational fluid mechanics into a form such that we can apply the shock formation proof outlined in Appendix A. We note in passing that for these wave equations, the first product $G^{\mu\alpha\beta}\{\cdots\}$ on RHS (A.6) vanishes. The vanishing is a consequence of the symmetry property $G^{\mu\alpha\beta} = G^{\beta\alpha\mu}$, which holds for Euler-Lagrange equations since $G^{\mu\alpha\beta}$ is proportional to the third partial derivative of the Lagrangian with respect to its arguments $\partial_\mu\Phi, \partial_\alpha\Phi, \partial_\beta\Phi$.

B.2. The Existence of Data Verifying the Smallness Assumptions

In Subsect. A.2, we explained that in order to prove shock formation for wave equations of the form $(g^{-1})^{\alpha\beta}(\partial\Phi)\partial_\alpha\partial_\beta\Phi = 0$ using the framework of the present paper, we have to propagate the smallness of various derivatives of Φ even though other derivatives are allowed to be large. In this subsection, we study this smallness-largeness hierarchy at the level of the initial data in the case of the irrotational (special) relativistic Euler equations. In particular, we show that there exist physically relevant initial data exhibiting the desired size estimates. The point is that the desired smallness for the appropriate higher derivatives of Φ is not immediate because some directional derivatives can be large. By Cauchy stability,[65] it suffices to exhibit plane symmetric data (explained in the next paragraph) verifying the desired smallness-largeness hierarchy. It turns out that in plane symmetry, the existence of such data is not difficult to see using Riemann invariants. In fact, the data-size assumptions of Subsect. A.2 can be realized at time 0 by perturbations of plane symmetric data in which one Riemann invariant, denoted by $\mathcal{R}_-$ below, completely vanishes, while the other one, denoted by $\mathcal{R}_+$ below, is small with sufficiently large spatial derivatives. The case of $\mathcal{R}_- \equiv 0$ corresponds to a simple outgoing (that is, right-moving) plane wave solution. In most of this subsection, we describe how to construct the Riemann invariants and how they are related to other variables; at the end, we return to the issue of constructing data verifying the desired smallness-largeness hierarchy.

In the analysis of this subsection, for simplicity, we restrict our attention to plane symmetric solutions to the relativistic Euler equations on $\mathbb{R} \times \Sigma$, where (as in the rest of the article) $\Sigma = \mathbb{R} \times \mathbb{T}$. Plane symmetric irrotational solutions are such that the fluid potential function[66] Φ is, relative to the rectangular coordinates, a function of only t and x^1. Plane symmetric solutions can of course be viewed as solutions on $\mathbb{R} \times \mathbb{R}$.

We start by recalling some basic facts about irrotational special relativistic fluid mechanics. The discussion in this paragraph is valid in all spatial dimensions. Here we make many assertions without providing proofs; readers may consult [15] for

---

[65] Here we are referring to the continuous dependence of the solution on the initial data.

[66] In irrotational relativistic fluid mechanics, all physical fluid variables are functions of $\partial\Phi$.

more details. The wave equations of irrotational fluid mechanics are Euler-Lagrange equations of the form

$$(g^{-1})^{\alpha\beta}(\partial\Phi)\partial_\alpha\partial_\beta\Phi = 0.$$

The Lagrangian $\mathscr{L}$ may be identified with the fluid pressure p and can be expressed as a function of σ:

$$p = \mathscr{L} := \mathscr{L}(\sigma), \tag{B.3}$$

where

$$\sigma := -(m^{-1})^{\alpha\beta}\partial_\alpha\Phi\partial_\beta\Phi > 0, \tag{B.4}$$

m is the Minkowski metric, and $\sqrt{\sigma}$ is the enthalpy per particle. The positivity assumption in (B.4) is a consequence of the timelike character of the fluid velocity.[67] Physically relevant Lagrangians satisfy various positivity assumptions ensuring, for example, that the pressure is positive, the energy density is positive, and that the speed of sound is real, positive, and less than the speed of light; the following conditions ensure that the Lagrangian is physically relevant:

$$\mathscr{L}(\sigma), \ \frac{d\mathscr{L}}{d\sigma}, \ \frac{d}{d\sigma}\left(\mathscr{L}/\sqrt{\sigma}\right), \ \frac{d^2\mathscr{L}}{d\sigma^2} > 0. \tag{B.5}$$

The acoustical metric g and its inverse g^{-1} can be expressed as

$$g_{\alpha\beta}(\partial\Phi) = m_{\alpha\beta} + H\partial_\alpha\Phi\partial_\beta\Phi, \tag{B.6}$$

$$(g^{-1})^{\alpha\beta}(\partial\Phi) = (m^{-1})^{\alpha\beta} - F(m^{-1})^{\alpha\kappa}(m^{-1})^{\beta\lambda}\partial_\kappa\Phi\partial_\lambda\Phi, \tag{B.7}$$

$$F = F(\sigma) := \frac{2}{G}\frac{dG}{d\sigma}, \tag{B.8}$$

$$G = G(\sigma) := 2\frac{d\mathscr{L}}{d\sigma}, \tag{B.9}$$

$$H = H(\sigma) := \frac{F}{1+\sigma F}. \tag{B.10}$$

The (generally non-constant) speed of sound is

$$c_s = c_s(\sigma) = \sqrt{1 - \sigma H} = \sqrt{\frac{1}{1+\sigma F}}. \tag{B.11}$$

The assumptions in (B.5) ensure in particular that $0 < c_s < 1$, where the speed of light is 1.

---

[67] The fluid velocity u^α is equal to $-\dfrac{(m^{-1})^{\alpha\beta}\partial_\beta\Phi}{\sqrt{\sigma}}$.

In the remainder of this appendix, we will consider plane symmetric perturbations of the constant state solution $\Phi = kt$, where $k > 0$ is a constant. As in Subsect. B.1, we denote $\Psi_0 := \partial_t \Phi - k$ and $\Psi_1 = \partial_1 \Phi$. We denote with a "bar" the value of a $\partial\Phi$-dependent variable evaluated at the constant state solution. For example, $\bar{c}_s$ is the speed of sound evaluated at the solution $\Phi = kt$. We now make the change of coordinates[68]

$$t' := \bar{c}_s t, \qquad (x')^i := x^i, \qquad i = 1, 2. \tag{B.12}$$

We refer to $(t', (x')^1, (x')^2)$ as the "rescaled coordinates" and we denote the corresponding partial derivative vectorfields by $\partial_{t'}$ and $\partial_{i'}$, $i = 1, 2$. We set

$$\Psi_{0'} := \frac{\Psi_0}{\bar{c}_s}, \qquad \Psi_{1'} = \Psi_1. \tag{B.13}$$

The rescaled coordinates are the exact analog of the rectangular coordinates used in the bulk of the paper. The quantities $\Psi_{0'}$ and $\Psi_{1'}$ are the exact analogs of the quantities $\{\Psi_\alpha\}$ appearing in Appendix A. Note that the metric denoted by m in (B.6) and (B.7) is equal to $\mathrm{diag}(-\bar{c}_s^{-2}, 1, \cdots, 1)$ in the rescaled coordinates. Note also that in the rescaled coordinates, the constant state solution is $\Phi = k\dfrac{t'}{\bar{c}_s} = k't'$, where

$$k' := \frac{k}{\bar{c}_s}. \tag{B.14}$$

We also set

$$c'_s = \frac{c_s}{\bar{c}_s}. \tag{B.15}$$

Note that $\bar{c}'_s = 1$. As is evident from the formulas (B.16), this condition implies that in the rescaled coordinates, the speed of sound of the constant state solution is precisely 1; in fact, this is the reason that we introduce the rescaled coordinates. We may also rescale g so that (A.1d) holds in the rescaled coordinates.

In plane symmetry, we can analyze solutions using the method of Riemann invariants. The method is tied to the following vectorfields:

$$L = \partial_{t'} + \left(\frac{-\frac{\Psi_{1'}}{\bar{c}_s^2(\Psi_{0'}+k')} + c'_s}{1 - \frac{\Psi_{1'}}{\Psi_{0'}+k'}c'_s} \right) \partial_{1'}, \qquad \underline{L} = \partial_{t'} - \left(\frac{\frac{\Psi_{1'}}{\bar{c}_s^2(\Psi_{0'}+k')} + c'_s}{1 + \frac{\Psi_{1'}}{\Psi_{0'}+k'}c'_s} \right) \partial_{1'}. \tag{B.16}$$

One may check that L and $\underline{L}$ are null: $g(L, L) = g(\underline{L}, \underline{L}) = 0$. Having made the changes of variables and normalizations described above, we see that the restriction of g to the $(t', (x')^1)$ plane, denoted by $\widetilde{g}$, verifies $\widetilde{g}^{-1} = -\frac{1}{2}L \otimes \underline{L} - \frac{1}{2}\underline{L} \otimes L$.

---

[68] In plane symmetry, the variable $(x')^2$ does not play a role in the analysis.

The vectorfield L is the analog of the vectorfield defined in (2.15). Moreover, the vectorfield

$$X := \frac{1}{2} \{ \underline{L} - L \} \tag{B.17}$$

is the analog of the one from Def. 2.6. We also set

$$\underline{\check{L}} := \mu \underline{L}, \qquad \check{X} := \mu X, \tag{B.18}$$

where μ is defined by (1.6), exactly as in the rest of the paper. Note that $\check{X}$ is the analog of the vectorfield defined in (2.17). Note also that

$$\underline{\check{L}} = \mu L + 2 \check{X}. \tag{B.19}$$

Making minor changes (including notational changes and normalization changes) to the analysis presented in [12], one finds that in plane symmetry, the irrotational relativistic Euler wave equation is equivalent to the following system:

$$\underline{\check{L}} \mathcal{R}_- = 0, \qquad L \mathcal{R}_+ = 0, \tag{B.20}$$

where $\mathcal{R}_-$ and $\mathcal{R}_+$ are Riemann invariants, normalized so that

$$\bar{\mathcal{R}}_- = \bar{\mathcal{R}}_+ = 0. \tag{B.21}$$

Specifically, we have

$$\mathcal{R}_- = \frac{1}{\bar{c}_s} \int \frac{1}{c_s' \sqrt{\sigma}} d\sqrt{\sigma} + \frac{1}{2} \ln \left(\frac{\bar{c}_s + \frac{\Psi_{1'}}{\Psi_{0'}+k'}}{\bar{c}_s - \frac{\Psi_{1'}}{\Psi_{0'}+k'}} \right), \tag{B.22a}$$

$$\mathcal{R}_+ = \frac{1}{\bar{c}_s} \int \frac{1}{c_s' \sqrt{\sigma}} d\sqrt{\sigma} - \frac{1}{2} \ln \left(\frac{\bar{c}_s + \frac{\Psi_{1'}}{\Psi_{0'}+k'}}{\bar{c}_s - \frac{\Psi_{1'}}{\Psi_{0'}+k'}} \right), \tag{B.22b}$$

where c_s' is viewed as a function of $\sqrt{\sigma}$ in the integrations in (B.22a)–(B.22b) and the constants of integration are chosen so that (B.21) holds. We can express $\Psi_{0'}$ and $\Psi_{1'}$ as follows:

$$\Psi_{0'} = \frac{1}{\bar{c}_s} \sqrt{\sigma} \cosh \left(\frac{1}{2} (\mathcal{R}_+ - \mathcal{R}_-) \right) - k', \tag{B.23a}$$

$$\Psi_{1'} = \sqrt{\sigma} \sinh \left(\frac{1}{2} (\mathcal{R}_+ - \mathcal{R}_-) \right), \tag{B.23b}$$

where $\sqrt{\sigma}$ can be viewed as a smooth function of $\mathcal{R}_- + \mathcal{R}_+$.

We now achieve the main goal of this subsection: explaining how to construct data so that the data-size assumptions stated in Subsect. A.2 hold for Φ. As in the rest of the paper, we assume that the plane symmetric data $(\Phi|_{t'=0}, \partial_{t'}\Phi|_{t'=0}) = (\mathring{\Phi}, \mathring{\Phi}_0)$ are supported in the unit interval $[0, 1]$ (which may be identified with Σ_0^1). Note that

the corresponding data $(\mathcal{R}_-|_{t'=0}, \mathcal{R}_+|_{t'=0}) := (\mathring{\mathcal{R}}_-, \mathring{\mathcal{R}}_+)$ for the Riemann invariants are also supported in $[0, 1]$. We start by phrasing the data-size assumptions in terms of the Riemann invariants. Later, we briefly overview how those conditions translate into the desired size assumptions for the data for Φ. For brevity, we do not provide complete details here.

To proceed, we let $\mathring{\epsilon}$ and $\mathring{\delta}$ be data-size parameters satisfying the size assumptions described in Subsect. 7.7 (in particular, we assume that $\mathring{\epsilon}$ is small relative to $\mathring{\delta}^{-1}$). We now simply take smooth data such that $\mathring{\mathcal{R}}_- \equiv 0$, such that $\|\mathring{\mathcal{R}}_+\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_0^1)} = \mathcal{O}(\mathring{\epsilon})$, and such that for[69] $M = 1, 2, 3$, $\|\partial_{1'}^M \mathring{\mathcal{R}}_+\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_0^1)}$ is a relatively larger size $\mathcal{O}(\mathring{\delta})$. The smallness of $\mathring{\mathcal{R}}_-$ and $\mathring{\mathcal{R}}_+$ means that we are treating a perturbation of the data corresponding to the constant state $\Phi = k't'$. Moreover, with the help of equation (B.20) and the commutation relation $[L, \check{X}] = 0$ (which may be seen to be valid for the irrotational relativistic Euler equations in plane symmetry), we find that the higher derivatives of $\mathcal{R}_+$ with respect to L and $\check{X}$ *completely vanish* as long as at least one L differentiation is taken. In addition, using the estimate $\mu|_{t'=0} = 1 + \mathcal{O}(\mathring{\epsilon})$, which can be proved using arguments similar to the ones used in proving the first estimate stated in (7.11a), and equations (B.16) and (B.19), we find that $\check{X}|_{t=0} = -(1 + \mathcal{O}(\mathring{\epsilon}))\partial_{1'}$. Hence, we find that for $M = 1, 2, 3$, $\|\check{X}^M \mathring{\mathcal{R}}_+\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_0^1)}$ is a relatively large size $\mathcal{O}(\mathring{\delta})$. Then using equations (B.23a) and (B.23b), we may translate the $\mathring{\epsilon} - \mathring{\delta}$ hierarchy for the L and $\check{X}$ derivatives of $\mathcal{R}_-$ and $\mathcal{R}_+$ into a similar $\mathring{\epsilon} - \mathring{\delta}$ hierarchy for the L and $\check{X}$ derivatives of Φ, which yields the desired data-size assumptions of Subsect. A.2.

We close this subsection by giving one concrete example illustrating the translation mentioned at the end of the previous paragraph. Specifically, we will show that $\|\check{X}(\Psi_{0'} + \Psi_{1'})\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_0^1)} = \mathcal{O}(\mathring{\epsilon})$. As we will see, this estimate is an easy consequence of our assumption[70] that $\check{X}\mathring{\mathcal{R}}_- = 0$. The reason that this estimate is non-trivial is that $\|\check{X}\Psi_{0'}\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_0^1)}$ and $\|\check{X}\Psi_{1'}\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_0^1)}$ can be of a relatively large size $\mathcal{O}(\mathring{\delta})$. The point of the estimate $\|\check{X}(\Psi_{0'} + \Psi_{1'})\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_0^1)} = \mathcal{O}(\mathring{\epsilon})$ is that, in view of the formula (A.20a) and the fact that $X^1 = -1 + \mathcal{O}(\mathring{\epsilon})$, it may be seen as a preliminary step (relevant for bounding the terms $\check{X}\Psi_0 - X^a \check{X}\Psi_a$ on RHS (A.20a)) in showing the desired data-size assumption $\|L\check{X}\Phi\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_0^1)} = \mathcal{O}(\mathring{\epsilon})$ stated in (A.9). To obtain the desired bound for $\check{X}(\Psi_{0'} + \Psi_{1'})$, we start by Taylor expanding RHS (B.22a) to first order around the constant state to obtain

$$\mathcal{R}_- = \frac{1}{\bar{c}_s k}\big(\sqrt{\sigma} - k\big) + \frac{\Psi_{1'}}{k} + \mathcal{O}\big(|\mathcal{R}_-, \mathcal{R}_+|^2\big) = \frac{\Psi_{0'}}{k} + \frac{\Psi_{1'}}{k} + \mathcal{O}\big(|\mathcal{R}_-, \mathcal{R}_+|^2\big). \tag{B.24}$$

Applying $\check{X}$ to both sides of (B.24) and using our smallness assumptions $\mathcal{R}_- \equiv 0$ and $\|\mathring{\mathcal{R}}_+\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_0^1)} = \mathcal{O}(\mathring{\epsilon})$, we conclude that $\|\check{X}(\Psi_{0'} + \Psi_{1'})\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_0^1)} = \mathcal{O}(\mathring{\epsilon})$ as desired.

---

[69] $M = 1, 2, 3$ corresponds to our assumption that we control up to three $\check{X}$ derivatives of Ψ in (7.3).

[70] Actually, the $\mathcal{O}(\mathring{\epsilon})$-smallness of $\check{X}\mathring{\mathcal{R}}_-$ would suffice to obtain the desired bound.

Appendix C: Notation

In Appendix C, we collect some important notation and conventions that we use throughout the paper so that the reader can refer to it as needed.

C.1. Coordinates

- (x^0, x^1, x^2) denote the rectangular spacetime coordinates.
- (x^1, x^2) denote the rectangular spatial coordinates.
- We often use the alternate notation $t = x^0$.
- (t, u, ϑ) are the geometric coordinates (where t is the rectangular time coordinate, u is the eikonal function, and ϑ is the geometric torus coordinate).

C.2. Indices

Lowercase Greek indices μ, ν, etc. correspond to components with respect to the *rectangular spacetime* coordinates x^0, x^1, x^2, and lowercase Latin indices i, j, etc. correspond to components with respect to the *rectangular spatial* coordinates x^1, x^2. That is, lowercase Greek indices vary over 0, 1, 2 and lowercase Latin indices vary over 1, 2. All lowercase Greek indices are lowered and raised with the spacetime metric g and its inverse g^{-1}, and *not with the Minkowski metric*. We use Einstein's summation convention in that repeated indices are summed over their respective ranges.

C.3. Constants

- $\mathring{\delta}$ is the parameter corresponding to the initial size of the $\mathcal{P}_u$-transversal derivatives of the solution; pg. 81.
- $\mathring{\epsilon}$ is a *relatively small* parameter corresponding to the initial size of Ψ and its derivatives involving at least one $\mathcal{P}_u$-tangential differentiation; pg. 81. We explain the kind of smallness that we impose on $\mathring{\epsilon}$ in Subsect. 7.7.
- $\mathring{\delta}_* = \frac{1}{2} \sup_{\Sigma_0^1} \left[G_{LL} \breve{X} \Psi \right]_-$ is the key quantity that controls the blowup-time; pg. 81.
- C denotes a uniform constant that is free to vary from line to line.
- The constants C are allowed to depend on the data-size parameters $\mathring{\delta}$ and $\mathring{\delta}_*^{-1}$.
- If we want to emphasize that the constant C depends on an a quantity Q, then we use notation such as "C_Q."
- We use the notation

$$f_1 \lesssim f_2$$

  to indicate that there exists a uniform constant $C > 0$ such that $f_1 \leq Cf_2$. We sometimes use the alternate notation $\mathcal{O}(f_2)$ to denote a quantity f_1 that verifies $|f_1| \lesssim |f_2|$.
- If we want to emphasize that the implicit constant C depends on an a quantity Q, then we use the alternate notation

$$f_1 \overset{Q}{\lesssim} f_2.$$

C.4. Spacetime Subsets

- $\Sigma_{t'} := \{(t, x^1, x^2) \in \mathbb{R} \times \mathbb{R} \times \mathbb{T} \mid t = t'\}$; pg. 38.
- $\mathcal{P}_u$ = the outgoing null hypersurface equal to the corresponding level set of the eikonal function; pg. 38.
- Σ_t^u = the portion of Σ_t in between $\mathcal{P}_0$ and $\mathcal{P}_u$; pg. 38.
- $\mathcal{P}_u^t$ = the portion of $\mathcal{P}_u$ in between Σ_0 and Σ_t; pg. 38.
- $\ell_{t',u'}$ = a topological one-dimensional torus equal to $\mathcal{P}_{u'}^{t'} \cap \Sigma_{t'}^{u'}$; pg. 38.
- $\mathcal{M}_{t,u}$ = the spacetime region trapped in between Σ_0^u, Σ_t^u, $\mathcal{P}_u^t$, and $\mathcal{P}_0^t$; pg. 38.

C.5. Metrics

- $g = g(\Psi)$ denotes the spacetime metric.
- Relative to rectangular coordinates, $g_{\mu\nu}(\Psi) = m_{\mu\nu} + g_{\mu\nu}^{(Small)}(\Psi)$, where $m_{\mu\nu} = \text{diag}(-1, 1, 1)$; pg. 36.
- Relative to rectangular coordinates, $G_{\mu\nu}(\Psi) = \frac{d}{d\Psi} g_{\mu\nu}(\Psi)$ and $G'_{\mu\nu}(\Psi) = \frac{d}{d\Psi} G_{\mu\nu}(\Psi)$; pg. 37.
- $\underline{g}$ denotes the first fundamental form of Σ_t, that is, $\underline{g}_{ij} = g_{ij}$; pg. 44.
- $\underline{g}^{-1}$ denotes the inverse first fundamental form of Σ_t; pg. 45.
- $g\!\!\!/$ denotes the first fundamental form of $\ell_{t,u}$; pg. 44.
- $g\!\!\!/^{-1}$ denotes the inverse first fundamental form of $\ell_{t,u}$; pg. 45.
- $\upsilon = \sqrt{g\!\!\!/(\Theta, \Theta)}$ is a metric component; pg. 47.

C.6. Musical Notation, Contractions, and Inner Products

- We denote the $g\!\!\!/-$dual of an $\ell_{t,u}$-tangent one-form ξ by $\xi^\#$. Similarly, if Y is an $\ell_{t,u}$-tangent vector, then $Y_\flat$ denotes the $g\!\!\!/-$dual of Y, which is an $\ell_{t,u}$-tangent covector. Similarly, if ξ is a symmetric type $\binom{0}{2}$ $\ell_{t,u}$-tangent tensor, then $\xi^\#$ denotes the type $\binom{1}{1}$ tensor that is $g\!\!\!/-$dual to ξ, and $\xi^{\#\#}$ denotes the type $\binom{2}{0}$ tensor that is $g\!\!\!/-$dual to ξ. We use similar notation to denote the $g\!\!\!/-$duals of general type $\binom{m}{0}$ and type $\binom{0}{n}$ $\ell_{t,u}$-tangent tensors; pg. 36.
- $g(X, Y) = g_{\alpha\beta} X^\alpha Y^\beta$ denotes the inner product of the vectors X and Y with respect to the metric g. Similarly, if X and Y are $\ell_{t,u}$-tangent, then $g\!\!\!/(X, Y) = g\!\!\!/_{ab} X^a Y^b$.
- $\cdot$ denotes the natural contraction between two tensors. For example, if ξ is a spacetime one-form and V is a spacetime vectorfield, then $\xi \cdot V := \xi_\alpha V^\alpha$. As a second example, if T is a symmetric type $\binom{2}{0}$ $\ell_{t,u}$-tangent tensorfield and ξ is an $\ell_{t,u}$-tangent one-form, then $(\text{di}\!\!\!/v\, T) \cdot \xi = (\nabla\!\!\!/_a T^{ab})\xi_b$; pg. 35.
- If ξ is a one-form and V is a vectorfield, then $\xi_V := \xi_\alpha V^\alpha$. Similarly, if W is a vectorfield, then $W_V := W_\alpha V^\alpha = g(W, V)$. We use similar notation when contracting higher-order tensorfields against vectorfields. Similarly, if $\Gamma_{\alpha\kappa\beta}$ are the rectangular Christoffel symbols (2.61), then $\Gamma_{UVW} := U^\alpha V^\kappa W^\beta \Gamma_{\alpha\kappa\beta}$; pg. 36.
- If ξ is a symmetric type $\binom{0}{2}$ spacetime tensor and V is a vector, then ξ_V is the one-form with rectangular components $(\xi_V)_\nu = \xi_{\alpha\nu} V^\alpha$; pg. 43.

C.7. Tensor Products and the Trace of Tensors

- $(\xi \otimes \omega)_{\Theta\Theta} = \xi_\Theta \omega_\Theta$ denotes the $\Theta\Theta$ component of the tensor product of the $\ell_{t,u}$-tangent one-forms ξ and ω.
- $\mathrm{tr}_g \pi = (g^{-1})^{\alpha\beta} \pi_{\alpha\beta}$ denotes the g-trace of the type $\binom{0}{2}$ spacetime tensor $\pi_{\mu\nu}$.
- $\mathrm{tr}_{\not{g}} \xi = (\not{g}^{-1})^{\alpha\beta} \xi_{\alpha\beta}$ denotes the $\not{g}$−trace of the type $\binom{0}{2}$ $\ell_{t,u}$-tangent tensor ξ.

C.8. Eikonal Function Quantities

- The eikonal function u verifies the eikonal equation $(g^{-1})^{\alpha\beta} \partial_\alpha u \partial_\beta u = 0$ and has the initial condition $u|_{t=0} = 1 - x^1$; pg. 12.
- $\mu = -\left\{(g^{-1})^{\alpha\beta} \partial_\alpha u \partial_\beta t\right\}^{-1}$ denotes the inverse foliation density; pg. 39.
- $L^\nu_{(Geo)} = -(g^{-1})^{\nu\alpha} \partial_\alpha u$ denotes the $\mathcal{P}_u$-tangent outgoing null geodesic vector-field; pg. 40.
- $L^\nu = \mu L^\nu_{(Geo)}$ denotes a rescaled outgoing null vectorfield; pg. 39.
- $L^i_{(Small)} = L^i - \delta^i_1$ is the perturbed part of L^i; pg. 50.
- $X^i_{(Small)} = X^i + \delta^i_1$ is the perturbed part of X^i; pg. 50.
- $\chi = \frac{1}{2}\mathcal{L}_L \not{g}$ is the null second fundamental form of $\mathcal{P}_u$ relative to g; pg. 45.

C.9. Additional $\ell_{t,u}$ Tensorfields Related to the Frame Connection Coefficients

- $\omega = L\mu$; pg. 52.
- $k = \frac{1}{2}\mathcal{L}_N g$ is the second fundamental form of Σ_t relative to g; pg. 45.
- $\zeta_\Theta = \not{k}_{X\Theta} = g(\mathscr{D}_\Theta L, X)$; pg. 53.
- $\zeta = \mu^{-1}\zeta^{(Trans-\Psi)} + \zeta^{(Tan-\Psi)}$ is a splitting of ζ; pg. 53.
- $\not{k} = \mu^{-1}\not{k}^{(Trans-\Psi)} + \not{k}^{(Tan-\Psi)}$ is a splitting of $\not{k}$; pg. 54.

C.10. Vectorfields

- L is $\mathcal{P}_u$-tangent, outward pointing, and verifies $g(L, L) = 0$ and $Lt = 1$.
- $L = \frac{\partial}{\partial t}$ relative to the geometric coordinates; pg. 41.
- $\check{X}$ is Σ_t-tangent, $\ell_{t,u}$-orthogonal, and verifies $g(\check{X}, \check{X}) = \mu^2$, $\check{X}u = 1$; pg. 41.
- $\check{X} = \frac{\partial}{\partial u} - \Xi$ relative to the geometric coordinates, where Ξ is $\ell_{t,u}$-tangent; pg. 41.
- $X = \mu^{-1}\check{X}$; pg. 40.
- $\Theta = \dfrac{\partial}{\partial \vartheta}$ is the geometric torus coordinate partial derivative vectorfield; pg. 40.
- $N = L + X$ is the future-directed unit normal to Σ_t; pg. 40.
- $\{L, \check{X}, \Theta\}$ denotes the rescaled frame; pg. 40.
- $\{L, X, \Theta\}$ denotes the non-rescaled frame; pg. 40.

C.11. Projection Operators and Frame Components

- $\underline{\Pi}$ denotes the type $\binom{1}{1}$ tensorfield that projects onto Σ_t; pg. 42.
- $\not{\Pi}$ denotes the type $\binom{1}{1}$ tensorfield that projects onto $\ell_{t,u}$; pg. 42.
- If ξ is a spacetime tensor, then $\not{\xi} = \not{\Pi}\xi$ is the projection of ξ onto $\ell_{t,u}$; pg. 42.
- If ξ is a symmetric type $\binom{0}{2}$ spacetime tensor, then $\not{\xi}_V = \not{\Pi}(\xi_V)$; pg. 43.

- $G_{(Frame)} = \left(G_{LL}, G_{LX}, G_{XX}, \mathcal{G}_L, \mathcal{G}_X, \mathcal{G} \right)$ is the array of components of $G_{\mu\nu}$ relative to the non-rescaled frame $\{L, X, \Theta\}$; pg. 43.
- $G'_{(Frame)} = \left(G'_{LL}, G'_{LX}, G'_{XX}, \mathcal{G}'_L, \mathcal{G}'_X, \mathcal{G}' \right)$ is the array of components of $G'_{\mu\nu}$ relative to the non-rescaled frame $\{L, X, \Theta\}$; pg. 43.

C.12. Arrays of Solution Variables and Schematic Functional Dependence

- $\gamma = \left(\Psi, L^1_{(Small)}, L^2_{(Small)} \right)$; pg. 61.
- $\underline{\gamma} = \left(\Psi, \mu - 1, L^1_{(Small)}, L^2_{(Small)} \right)$; pg. 61.
- $f(\xi_{(1)}, \xi_{(2)}, \cdots, \xi_{(m)})$ schematically denotes an expression depending smoothly on the $\ell_{t,u}$-tangent tensorfields $\xi_{(1)}, \xi_{(2)}, \cdots, \xi_{(m)}$; pg. 61.

C.13. Rescaled Frame Components of a Vector

- If $\mathcal{J}$ is a spacetime vector, then $\mu \mathcal{J} = -\mu \mathcal{J}_L L - \mathcal{J}_{\check{X}} L - \mathcal{J}_L \check{X} + \mu \mathcal{\slashed{J}}$ denotes its decomposition relative to the rescaled frame $\{L, \check{X}, \Theta\}$, where $\mathcal{J}_L = \mathcal{J}^\alpha L_\alpha$, $\mathcal{J}_{\check{X}} = \mathcal{J}^\alpha \check{X}_\alpha$, and $\mathcal{\slashed{J}} = \slashed{\Pi} \mathcal{J}$; pg. 70.

C.14. Energy-Momentum Tensorfield and Multiplier Vectorfields

- $Q_{\mu\nu}[\Psi] = \mathscr{D}_\mu \Psi \mathscr{D}_\nu \Psi - \frac{1}{2} g_{\mu\nu} (g^{-1})^{\alpha\beta} \mathscr{D}_\alpha \Psi \mathscr{D}_\beta \Psi$ denotes the energy-momentum tensorfield associated to Ψ; pg. 62.
- $T = (1 + 2\mu)L + 2\check{X}$ denotes the timelike multiplier vectorfield; pg. 63.

C.15. Commutation Vectorfields

- $Y_{(Flat)}$ denotes the Σ_t-tangent vectorfield with rectangular spatial components $Y^i_{(Flat)} = \delta^i_2$; pg. 49.
- $Y = \slashed{\Pi} Y_{(Flat)}$ denotes the $\ell_{t,u}$-tangent commutation vectorfield; pg. 49.
- $Y^i = \delta^i_2 + Y^i_{(Small)}$ is a splitting of Y into $Y_{(Flat)}$ and a perturbation; pg. 50.
- $\mathscr{Z} = \{L, \check{X}, Y\}$ denotes the full set of commutation vectorfields; pg. 49.
- $\mathscr{P} = \{L, Y\}$ are the $\mathcal{P}_u$-tangent commutation vectorfields; pg. 49.

C.16. Differential Operators and Commutator Notation

- ∂_μ denotes the rectangular coordinate partial derivative vectorfield $\dfrac{\partial}{\partial x^\mu}$.
- $\dfrac{\partial}{\partial t}, \dfrac{\partial}{\partial u}, \Theta = \dfrac{\partial}{\partial \vartheta}$ denote the geometric coordinate partial derivative vectorfields.
- $Vf = V^\alpha \partial_\alpha f$ denotes the V-directional derivative of a function f.
- df denotes the standard differential of a function f on spacetime.
- $\slashed{d} f = \slashed{\Pi} df$, where f is a function on spacetime and $\slashed{\Pi}$ denotes projection onto $\ell_{t,u}$; pg. 44. Alternatively, $\slashed{d} f$ can be viewed as the inherent differential of a function f defined on $\ell_{t,u}$.
- $\mathscr{D} = $ Levi-Civita connection of g.
- $\slashed{\nabla} = $ Levi-Civita connection of $\slashed{g}$.

 Springer

- $\nabla =$ Levi-Civita connection of the Minkowski metric m.
- $\mathscr{D}_{XY}^2 = X^\alpha Y^\beta \mathscr{D}_\alpha \mathscr{D}_\beta$ and similarly for other connections (contractions against X and Y are taken after the two covariant differentiations).
- $\overline{\nabla}^2$ denotes the second $\ell_{t,u}$ covariant derivative corresponding to $g\!\!\!/$.
- $\Delta\!\!\!/ = \mathrm{tr}_{g\!\!\!/}\overline{\nabla}^2 f$ denotes the covariant Laplacian on $\ell_{t,u}$ corresponding to $g\!\!\!/$.
- If ξ is an $\ell_{t,u}$-tangent one-form, then $\mathrm{div}\!\!\!/\, \xi$ is the scalar-valued function $\mathrm{div}\!\!\!/\, \xi := g\!\!\!/^{-1} \cdot \overline{\nabla}\xi$. Similarly, if V is an $\ell_{t,u}$-tangent vectorfield, then $\mathrm{div}\!\!\!/\, V := g\!\!\!/^{-1} \cdot \overline{\nabla}V_\flat$, where $V_\flat$ is the one-form $g\!\!\!/$−dual to V. If ξ is a symmetric type $\binom{0}{2}$ $\ell_{t,u}$-tangent tensorfield, then $\mathrm{div}\!\!\!/\, \xi$ is the $\ell_{t,u}$-tangent one-form $\mathrm{div}\!\!\!/\, \xi := g\!\!\!/^{-1} \cdot \overline{\nabla}\xi$, where the two contraction indices in $\overline{\nabla}\xi$ correspond to the operator $\overline{\nabla}$ and the first index of ξ.
- $\mathcal{L}_V \xi$ denotes the Lie derivative of ξ with respect to V; pg. 43.
- $[V, W] = \mathcal{L}_V W$ when V and W are vectorfields; pg. 43.
- More generally, if P and Q are two operators, then $[P, Q] = PQ - QP$ denotes their commutator.
- $\underline{\mathcal{L}}_V \xi = \underline{\Pi}\mathcal{L}_V \xi$ is the Σ_t-projected Lie derivative of ξ with respect to V; pg. 44.
- $\mathcal{L}\!\!\!/_V \xi = \Pi\!\!\!/\mathcal{L}_V \xi$ is the $\ell_{t,u}$-projected Lie derivative of ξ with respect to V; pg. 44.

C.17. Floor and Ceiling Functions and Repeated Differentiation

- If M is a non-negative integer, then $\lfloor M/2 \rfloor = M/2$ for M even and $\lfloor M/2 \rfloor = (M-1)/2$ for M odd, while $\lceil M/2 \rceil = M/2$ for M even and $\lceil M/2 \rceil = (M+1)/2$ for M odd.
- We label the three vectorfields in $\mathscr{Z}$ as follows: $Z_{(1)} = L$, $Z_{(2)} = Y$, $Z_{(3)} = \check{X}$. Note that $\mathscr{P} = \{Z_{(1)}, Z_{(2)}\}$.
- If $\vec{I} = (\iota_1, \iota_2, \cdots, \iota_N)$ is a multi-index of order $|\vec{I}| := N$ with $\iota_1, \iota_2, \cdots, \iota_N \in \{1, 2, 3\}$, then $\mathscr{Z}^{\vec{I}} := Z_{(\iota_1)} Z_{(\iota_2)} \cdots Z_{(\iota_N)}$ denotes the corresponding N^{th} order differential operator. We write $\mathscr{Z}^N$ rather than $\mathscr{Z}^{\vec{I}}$ when we are not concerned with the structure of $\vec{I}$.
- Similarly, $\mathcal{L}\!\!\!/_{\mathscr{Z}}^{\vec{I}} := \mathcal{L}\!\!\!/_{Z_{(\iota_1)}} \mathcal{L}\!\!\!/_{Z_{(\iota_2)}} \cdots \mathcal{L}\!\!\!/_{Z_{(\iota_N)}}$ denotes an Nth order $\ell_{t,u}$-projected Lie derivative operator (see Def. 2.13), and we write $\mathcal{L}\!\!\!/_{\mathscr{Z}}^N$ when we are not concerned with the structure of $\vec{I}$.
- If $\vec{I} = (\iota_1, \iota_2, \cdots, \iota_N)$, then $\vec{I}_1 + \vec{I}_2 = \vec{I}$ means that $\vec{I}_1 = (\iota_{k_1}, \iota_{k_2}, \cdots, \iota_{k_m})$ and $\vec{I}_2 = (\iota_{k_{m+1}}, \iota_{k_{m+2}}, \cdots, \iota_{k_N})$, where $1 \le m \le N$ and $k_1, k_2, \cdots, k_N$ is a permutation of $1, 2, \cdots, N$.
- Sums such as $\vec{I}_1 + \vec{I}_2 + \cdots + \vec{I}_M = \vec{I}$ have an analogous meaning.
- $\mathcal{P}_u$-tangent operators such as $\mathscr{P}^{\vec{I}}$ are defined analogously, except in this case we clearly have $\iota_1, \iota_2, \cdots, \iota_N \in \{1, 2\}$.

- $\mathscr{Z}^{N;M} f$ denotes an arbitrary string of N commutation vectorfields in $\mathscr{Z}$ (see (2.51)) applied to f, where the string contains *at most* M factors of the $\mathcal{P}_u$-transversal vectorfield $\breve{X}$.
- $\mathscr{P}^N f$ denotes an arbitrary string of N commutation vectorfields in $\mathscr{P}$ (see (2.52)) applied to f.
- For $N \geq 1$, $\mathscr{Z}_*^{N;M} f$ denotes an arbitrary string of N commutation vectorfields in $\mathscr{Z}$ applied to f, where the string contains *at least* one $\mathcal{P}_u$-tangent factor and *at most* M factors of $\breve{X}$. We also set $\mathscr{Z}_*^{0;0} f := f$.
- For $N \geq 1$, $\mathscr{P}_*^N f$ denotes an arbitrary string of N commutation vectorfields in $\mathscr{P}$ applied to f, where the string contains *at least one factor* of Y or *at least two factors* of L.
- For $\ell_{t,u}$-tangent tensorfields ξ, we similarly define strings of $\ell_{t,u}$-projected Lie derivatives such as $\mathcal{L}_{\mathscr{Z}}^{N;M} \xi$.
- $|\mathscr{Z}^{\leq N;M} f|$ is the sum over all terms of the form $|\mathscr{Z}^{N';M} f|$ with $N' \leq N$ and $\mathscr{Z}^{N';M} f$ as defined above. When $N = M = 1$, we sometimes write $|\mathscr{Z}^{\leq 1} f|$ instead of $|\mathscr{Z}^{\leq 1;1} f|$.
- $|\mathscr{Z}^{[1,N];M} f|$ is the sum over all terms of the form $|\mathscr{Z}^{N';M} f|$ with $1 \leq N' \leq N$ and $\mathscr{Z}^{N';M} f$ as defined above.
- Sums such as $|\mathscr{P}_*^{[1,N]} f|$, $|\mathcal{L}_{\mathscr{Z}}^{\leq N;M} \xi|$, etc., are defined analogously. We write $|\mathscr{P}_* f|$ instead of $|\mathscr{P}_*^{[1,1]} f|$. We also use the notation $|\breve{X}^{[1,N]} f| = |\breve{X} f| + |\breve{X}\breve{X} f| + \cdots + \overbrace{|\breve{X}\breve{X} \cdots \breve{X}}^{N \text{ copies}} f|$.

C.18. Length, Area, and Volume Forms

- $d\lambda_{\not{g}} = d\lambda_{\not{g}(t,u,\vartheta)} = \upsilon(t, u, \vartheta) d\vartheta$ denotes the length form on $\ell_{t,u}$ induced by g; pg. 63.
- $d\underline{\varpi} = d\underline{\varpi}(t, u', \vartheta) = d\lambda_{\not{g}}(t, u', \vartheta) du'$ denotes an area form on Σ_t; $\mu d\underline{\varpi}$ is the area form on Σ_t induced by g; pg. 63.
- $d\overline{\varpi} = d\overline{\varpi}(t', u, \vartheta) = d\lambda_{\not{g}}(t', u, \vartheta) dt'$ denotes an area form on $\mathcal{P}_u$; pg. 63.
- $d\varpi = d\varpi(t', u', \vartheta) = d\lambda_{\not{g}}(t', u', \vartheta) du' dt'$ denotes a volume form on $\mathcal{M}_{t,u}$; $\mu d\varpi$ is the volume form on $\mathcal{M}_{t,u}$ induced by g; pg. 63.

C.19. Norms

- $|\xi|^2 = \not{g}_{\mu_1 \tilde{\mu}_1} \cdots \not{g}_{\mu_m \tilde{\mu}_m} (\not{g}^{-1})^{\nu_1 \tilde{\nu}_1} \cdots (\not{g}^{-1})^{\nu_n \tilde{\nu}_n} \xi_{\nu_1 \cdots \nu_n}^{\mu_1 \cdots \mu_m} \xi_{\tilde{\nu}_1 \cdots \tilde{\nu}_n}^{\tilde{\mu}_1 \cdots \tilde{\mu}_m}$ denotes the square of the norm of the type $\binom{m}{n}$ $\ell_{t,u}$ tensor ξ; pg. 79.
- $\|\xi\|_{L^\infty(\ell_{t,u})} = \text{ess sup}_{\vartheta \in \mathbb{T}} |\xi|(t, u, \vartheta)$; pg. 79.
- $\|\xi\|_{L^\infty(\Sigma_t^u)} = \text{ess sup}_{(u',\vartheta) \in [0,u] \times \mathbb{T}} |\xi|(t, u', \vartheta)$; pg. 79.
- $\|\xi\|_{L^\infty(\mathcal{P}_u^t)} = \text{ess sup}_{(t',\vartheta) \in [0,t] \times \mathbb{T}} |\xi|(t', u, \vartheta)$; pg. 79.
- $\|f\|_{H_e^N(\Sigma_0)}^2 = \sum_{|\vec{I}| \leq N} \int_{\Sigma_0} (\partial_{\vec{I}} f)^2 d^2 x$, where $\partial_{\vec{I}}$ is a multi-indexed differential operator representing repeated differentiation with respect to the spatial coordinate partial derivatives and $d^2 x$ is the area form corresponding to the standard Euclidean metric e on Σ_0; pg. 7.

- $\|\xi\|^2_{L^2(\ell_{t,u})} = \int_{\vartheta \in \mathbb{T}} |\xi|^2(t, u, \vartheta) d\lambda_{g\!\!\!/} = \int_{\ell_{t,u}} |\xi|^2 d\lambda_{g\!\!\!/}$; pg. 79.
- $\|\xi\|^2_{L^2(\Sigma^u_t)} = \int^u_{u'=0} \int_{\vartheta \in \mathbb{T}} |\xi|^2(t, u', \vartheta) d\lambda_{g\!\!\!/} du' = \int_{\Sigma^u_t} |\xi|^2 d\varpi$; pg. 79.
- $\|\xi\|^2_{L^2(\mathcal{P}^t_u)} = \int^t_{t'=0} \int_{\vartheta \in \mathbb{T}} |\xi|^2(t', u, \vartheta) d\lambda_{g\!\!\!/} dt' = \int_{\mathcal{P}^t_u} |\xi|^2 d\overline{\varpi}$; pg. 79.
- We use similar notation for the norms $\|\cdot\|_{L^2(\Omega)}$ and $\|\cdot\|_{L^\infty(\Omega)}$ of functions defined on subsets Ω of $\ell_{t,u}$, Σ^u_t, or $\mathcal{P}^t_u$.

C.20. L^2-Controlling Quantities

- $\mathbb{E}[\Psi](t, u)$ denotes the energy of Ψ along Σ^u_t corresponding the multiplier T; pg. 64.
- $\mathbb{F}[\Psi](t, u)$ denotes the null flux of Ψ along $\mathcal{P}^t_u$ corresponding the multiplier T; pg. 64.
- $\mathbb{Q}_N(t, u) = \max_{|\vec{I}|=N} \sup_{(t',u') \in [0,t] \times [0,u]} \left\{ \mathbb{E}[\mathscr{P}^{\vec{I}} \Psi](t', u') + \mathbb{F}[\mathscr{P}^{\vec{I}} \Psi](t', u') \right\}$; pg. 141.
- $\mathbb{Q}_{[1,N]}(t, u) = \max_{1 \le M \le N} \mathbb{Q}_M(t, u)$; pg. 141.
- $\mathbb{K}[\Psi](t, u) = \frac{1}{2} \int_{\mathcal{M}_{t,u}} [L\mu]_- |d\!\!\!/\Psi|^2 d\varpi$ denotes the coercive spacetime integral associated to Ψ; pg. 141.
- $\mathbb{K}_N(t, u) = \max_{|\vec{I}|=N} \mathbb{K}[\mathscr{P}^{\vec{I}} \Psi](t, u)$; pg. 141.
- $\mathbb{K}_{[1,N]}(t, u) = \max_{1 \le M \le N} \mathbb{K}_M(t, u)$; pg. 141.

C.21. Modified Quantities

- ${}^{(\mathscr{P}^N)}\mathscr{X} = \mu \mathscr{P}^N \mathrm{tr}_{g\!\!\!/} \chi + \mathscr{P}^N \mathfrak{X}$ is the fully modified version of $\mathscr{P}^N \mathrm{tr}_{g\!\!\!/} \chi$; pg. 77.
- ${}^{(\mathscr{P}^N)}\widetilde{\mathscr{X}} = \mathscr{P}^N \mathrm{tr}_{g\!\!\!/} \chi + {}^{(\mathscr{P}^N)}\widetilde{\mathfrak{X}}$ is the partially modified version of $\mathscr{P}^N \mathrm{tr}_{g\!\!\!/} \chi$; pg. 77.

C.22. Curvature Tensors

- $\mathscr{R}_{\mu\nu\alpha\beta}$ is the Riemann curvature tensor of g; pg. 75.
- $\mathrm{Ric}_{\alpha\beta} = (g^{-1})^{\kappa\lambda} \mathscr{R}_{\alpha\kappa\beta\lambda}$ is the Ricci curvature tensor of g; pg. 75.

C.23. Omission of the Independent Variables in Some Expressions

- Many of our pointwise estimates are stated in the form

$$|f_1| \lesssim h(t, u)|f_2|$$

for some function h. Unless we otherwise indicate, it is understood that both f_1 and f_2 are evaluated at the point with geometric coordinates (t, u, ϑ).
- Unless we otherwise indicate, in integrals $\int_{\ell_{t,u}} f \, d\lambda_{g\!\!\!/}$, the integrand f and the length form $d\lambda_{g\!\!\!/}$ are viewed as functions of (t, u, ϑ) and ϑ is the integration variable.

- Unless we otherwise indicate, in integrals $\int_{\Sigma_t^u} f \, d\underline{\varpi}$, the integrand f and the area form $d\underline{\varpi}$ are viewed as functions of (t, u', ϑ) and (u', ϑ) are the integration variables.
- Unless we otherwise indicate, in integrals $\int_{\mathcal{P}_u^t} f \, d\overline{\varpi}$, the integrand f and the area form $d\overline{\varpi}$ are viewed as functions of (t', u, ϑ) and (t', ϑ) are the integration variables.
- Unless we otherwise indicate, in integrals $\int_{\mathcal{M}_{t,u}} f \, d\varpi$, the integrand f and the volume form $d\varpi$ are viewed as functions of (t', u', ϑ) and (t', u', ϑ) are the integration variables.

References

1. Alinhac, S.: Blowup of small data solutions for a quasilinear wave equation in two space dimensions. Ann. Math. **149**(1), 97–127 (1999)
2. Alinhac, S.: The null condition for quasilinear wave equations in two space dimensions I. Invent. Math. **145**(3), 597–618 (2001)
3. An, X., Luk, J.: Trapped surfaces in vacuum arising dynamically from mild incoming radiation. ArXiv e-prints; to appear in Advances in Theoretical and Mathematical Physics (September 2014). arXiv:1409.6270 (2014)
4. Andréasson, H., Ringström, H.: Proof of the cosmic no-hair conjecture in the $\mathbb{T}^3$-Gowdy symmetric Einstein–Vlasov setting. J. Eur. Math. Soc. **18**(7), 1565–1650 (2016)
5. Bloom, F.: Mathematical Problems of Classical Nonlinear Electromagnetic Theory. Pitman Monographs and Surveys in Pure and Applied Mathematics, vol. 63. Longman Scientific & Technical, Harlow; copublished in the United States with John Wiley & Sons, Inc., New York (1993)
6. Chemin, J.-Y., Gallagher, I., Paicu, M.: Global regularity for some classes of large solutions to the Navier–Stokes equations. Ann. Math. **173**(2), 983–1012 (2011)
7. Chemin, J.-Y., Gallagher, I.: Large, global solutions to the Navier–Stokes equations, slowly varying in one direction. Trans. Am. Math. Soc. **362**(6), 2859–2873 (2010)
8. Chemin, J.-Y., Paicu, M., Zhang, P.: Global large solutions to 3-D inhomogeneous Navier–Stokes system with one slow variable. J. Differ. Equ. **256**(1), 223–252 (2014)
9. Chemin, J.-Y., Zhang, P.: Remarks on the global solutions of 3-D Navier–Stokes system with one slow variable. Commun. Partial Differ. Equ. **40**(5), 878–896 (2015)
10. Chen, G., Young, R., Zhang, Q.: Shock formation in the compressible Euler equations and related systems. J. Hyperbolic Differ. Equ. **10**(1), 149–172 (2013)
11. Christodoulou, D., Klainerman, S.: The Global Nonlinear Stability of the Minkowski Space. Princeton Mathematical Series, vol. 41. Princeton University Press, Princeton (1993)
12. Christodoulou, D., Lisibach, A.: Shock development in spherical symmetry. Ann. PDE **2**(1), 1–246 (2016)
13. Christodoulou, D., Miao, S.: Compressible Flow and Euler's Equations. Surveys of Modern Mathematics, vol. 9. Higher Education Press, Beijing; International Press, Somerville (2014)
14. Christodoulou, D., Perez, D.R.: On the formation of shocks of electromagnetic plane waves in nonlinear crystals. J. Math. Phys. **57**(8), 081506, 56 (2016)
15. Christodoulou, D.: The Formation of Shocks in 3-Dimensional Fluids. EMS Monographs in Mathematics. European Mathematical Society (EMS), Zürich (2007)
16. Christodoulou, D.: The Formation of Black Holes in General Relativity. EMS Monographs in Mathematics. European Mathematical Society (EMS), Zürich (2009)
17. Ding, B., Witt, I., Yin, H.: Blowup of smooth solutions for general 2-D quasilinear wave equations with small initial data. ArXiv e-prints (July 2013). arXiv:1307.1978 (2013)
18. Ding, B., Witt, I., Yin, H.: Blowup of classical solutions for a class of 3-D quasilinear wave equations with small initial data. Differ. Integr. Equ. **28**(9–10), 941–970 (2015)
19. Ding, B., Witt, I., Yin, H.: On the lifespan and the blowup mechanism of smooth solutions to a class of 2-D nonlinear wave equations with small initial data. Q. Appl. Math. **73**(4), 773–796 (2015)

20. Glassey, R.T., Schaeffer, J.: On symmetric solutions of the relativistic Vlasov–Poisson system. Commun. Math. Phys. **101**(4), 459–473 (1985)
21. Glassey, R.T.: On the blowing up of solutions to the Cauchy problem for nonlinear Schrödinger equations. J. Math. Phys. **18**(9), 1794–1797 (1977)
22. Guillemin, V., Pollack, A.: Differential Topology. AMS Chelsea Publishing, Providence (2010). Reprint of the 1974 original
23. Holzegel, G., Klainerman, S., Speck, J., Wong, W.W.-Y.: Small-data shock formation in solutions to 3d quasilinear wave equations: an overview. J. Hyperbolic Differ. Equ. **13**(01), 1–105 (2016)
24. Jeffrey, A., Korobeinikov, V.P.: Formation and decay of electromagnetic shock waves. Zeitschrift für angewandte Mathematik und Physik ZAMP **20**(4), 440–447 (1969)
25. Jeffrey, A., Teymur, M.: Formation of shock waves in hyperelastic solids. Acta Mech. **20**, 133–149 (1974)
26. Jeffrey, A.: The formation of magnetoacoustic shocks. J. Math. Anal. Appl. **11**, 139–150 (1965)
27. John, F., Klainerman, S.: Almost global existence to nonlinear wave equations in three space dimensions. Commun. Pure Appl. Math. **37**(4), 443–455 (1984)
28. John, F.: Formation of singularities in one-dimensional nonlinear wave propagation. Commun. Pure Appl. Math. **27**, 377–405 (1974)
29. John, F.: Blow-up for quasilinear wave equations in three space dimensions. Commun. Pure Appl. Math. **34**(1), 29–51 (1981)
30. John, F.: Formation of Singularities in Elastic Waves. Trends and Applications of Pure Mathematics to Mechanics (Palaiseau, 1983), pp. 194–210. Springer, Berlin (1984)
31. John, F.: Existence for large times of strict solutions of nonlinear wave equations in three space dimensions for small initial data. Commun. Pure Appl. Math. **40**(1), 79–109 (1987)
32. Karageorgis, P., Strauss, W.A.: Instability of steady states for nonlinear wave and heat equations. J. Differ. Equ. **241**(1), 184–205 (2007)
33. Klainerman, S., Luk, J., Rodnianski, I.: A fully anisotropic mechanism for formation of trapped surfaces in vacuum. Invent. Math. **198**(1), 1–26 (2014)
34. Klainerman, S., Majda, A.: Formation of singularities for wave equations including the nonlinear vibrating string. Commun. Pure Appl. Math. **33**(3), 241–263 (1980)
35. Klainerman, S., Rodnianski, I., Szeftel, J.: The bounded L^2 curvature conjecture. Invent. Math. **202**(1), 91–216 (2015)
36. Klainerman, S., Rodnianski, I.: Improved local well-posedness for quasilinear wave equations in dimension three. Duke Math. J. **117**(1), 1–124 (2003)
37. Klainerman, S., Rodnianski, I.: On emerging scarred surfaces for the Einstein vacuum equations. Discret. Contin. Dyn. Syst. **28**(3), 1007–1031 (2010)
38. Klainerman, S., Rodnianski, I.: On the formation of trapped surfaces. Acta Math. **208**(2), 211–333 (2012)
39. Klainerman, S.: On "almost global" solutions to quasilinear wave equations in three space dimensions. Commun. Pure Appl. Math. **36**(3), 325–344 (1983)
40. Klainerman, S.: Long time behaviour of solutions to nonlinear wave equations, In: Proceedings of the International Congress of Mathematicians, Vol. 1, 2 (Warsaw, 1983), pp. 1209–1215. PWN, Warsaw (1984)
41. Klainerman, S.: Uniform decay estimates and the Lorentz invariance of the classical wave equation. Commun. Pure Appl. Math. **38**(3), 321–332 (1985)
42. Lax, P.D.: Development of singularities of solutions of nonlinear hyperbolic partial differential equations. J. Math. Phys. **5**, 611–613 (1964)
43. Lax, P.D.: Hyperbolic systems of conservation laws and the mathematical theory of shock waves. Conference Board of the Mathematical Sciences Regional Conference Series in Applied Mathematics, No. 11. Society for Industrial and Applied Mathematics, Philadelphia, PA (1973)
44. Leray, J.: Étude de diverses équations intgrales non linéaires et de quelques problèmes que pose l'Hydrodynamique. Journal de Mathmatiques Pures et Appliques **12**, 1–82 (1933). (fre)
45. Lindblad, H.: A remark on global existence for small initial data of the minimal surface equation in Minkowskian space time. Proc. Am. Math. Soc. **132**(4), 1095–1102 (2004). (electronic)
46. Ping Liu, T.: Development of singularities in the nonlinear waves for quasilinear hyperbolic partial differential equations. J. Differ. Equ. **33**(1), 92–111 (1979)
47. Luk, J., Rodnianski, I.: Nonlinear interaction of impulsive gravitational waves for the vacuum Einstein equations. ArXiv e-prints (January 2013). arXiv:1301.1072 (2013)

48. Luk, J., Rodnianski, I.: Local propagation of impulsive gravitational waves. Commun. Pure Appl. Math. **68**(4), 511–624 (2015)
49. Luk, J.: Weak null singularities in general relativity. ArXiv e-prints (November 2013). available at arXiv:1311.4970 (2013)
50. Martel, Y., Merle, F., Raphaël, P., Szeftel, J.: Near soliton dynamics and singularity formation for L^2 critical problems. Russ. Math. Surv. **69**(2), 261 (2014)
51. Miao, S., Pei, L., Yu, P.: On classical global solutions of nonlinear wave equations with large data. ArXiv e-prints (July 2014). arXiv:1407.4492 (2014)
52. Miao, S., Yu, P.: On the formation of shocks for quasilinear wave equations. ArXiv e-prints (December 2014). arXiv:1412.3058 (2014)
53. Raphaël, P.: On the singularity formation for the nonlinear Schrödinger equation. In: Evolution equations, Clay Mathematics Proceedings, vol. 17, pp. 269–323. American Mathematical Society, Providence, RI (2013)
54. Riemann, B.: Über die Fortpflanzung ebener Luftwellen von endlicher Schwingungsweite. Abhandlungen der Kniglichen Gesellschaft der Wissenschaften in Gttingen **8**, 43–66 (1860)
55. Rodnianski, I., Speck, J.: The nonlinear future stability of the FLRW family of solutions to the irrotational Euler–Einstein system with a positive cosmological constant. J. Eur. Math. Soc. **15**(6), 2369–2462 (2013)
56. Sbierski, J.: On the existence of a maximal Cauchy development for the Einstein equations: a dezornification. Ann. Henri Poincaré **17**(2), 301–329 (2016)
57. Sideris, T.C.: Formation of singularities in three-dimensional compressible fluids. Commun. Math. Phys. **101**(4), 475–485 (1985)
58. Smith, H.F., Tataru, D.: Sharp local well-posedness results for the nonlinear wave equation. Ann. Math. **162**(1), 291–366 (2005)
59. Smulevici, J.: On the area of the symmetry orbits of cosmological spacetimes with toroidal or hyperbolic symmetry. Anal. PDE **4**(2), 191–245 (2011)
60. Speck, J.: Small-data shock formation in solutions to $3d$ quasilinear wave equations. ArXiv e-prints, Version 2 (to appear). http://arxiv.org/abs/1407.6320 (2014)
61. Wang, J., Yu, P.: Long time solutions for wave maps with large data. J. Hyperbolic Differ. Equ. **10**(2), 371–414 (2013)
62. Wang, J., Yu, P.: A large data regime for nonlinear wave equations. J. Eur. Math. Soc. **18**(3), 575–622 (2016)
63. Wang, Q.: A geometric approach for sharp local well-posedness of quasilinear wave equations. ArXiv e-prints (August 2014). arXiv:1408.3780 (2014)
64. Wong, W.W.-Y.: A comment on the construction of the maximal globally hyperbolic Cauchy development. J. Math. Phys. **54**(11), 113511, 8 (2013)
65. Yang, S.: Global solutions of nonlinear wave equations with large data. Selecta Math. **21**(4), 1405–1427 (2015)